BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 08946 822 5

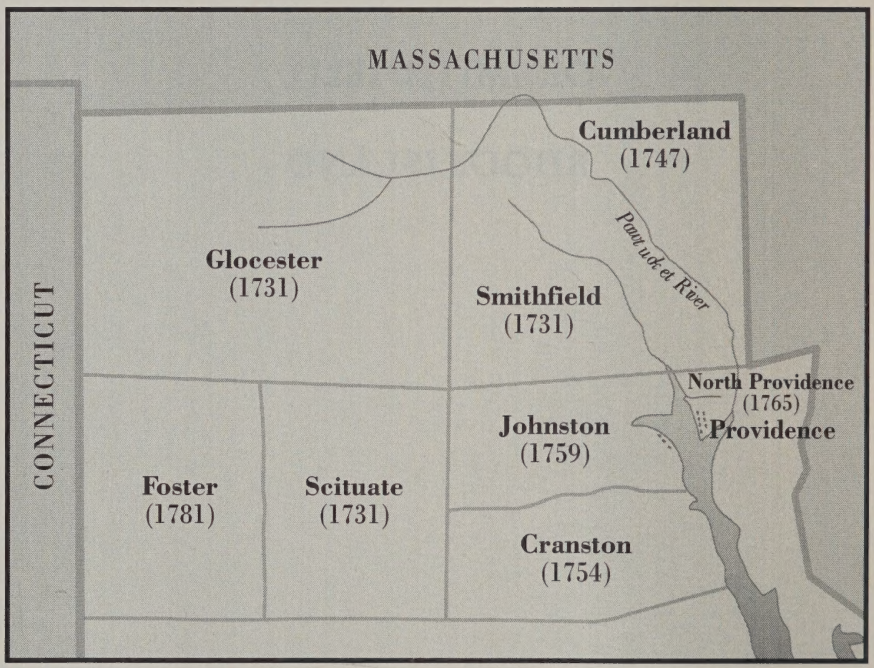
The Arnold Family of Smithfield, Rhode Island

Richard H. Benson

THE ARNOLD FAMILY

OF SMITHFIELD,

RHODE ISLAND



PROVIDENCE COUNTY – 1781

THE ARNOLD FAMILY OF SMITHFIELD, RHODE ISLAND

RICHARD H. BENSON

NEWBURY STREET PRESS
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS
2009

Copyright © 2009 by the New England Historic Genealogical Society

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the copyright holder, except for the inclusion of brief quotations in a review.

ISBN-13: 978-0-88082-221-3

Library of Congress Control Number: 2008941283

Published by Newbury Street Press
imprint of New England Historic Genealogical Society
Boston, Massachusetts
www.NewEnglandAncestors.org

CONTENTS

Illustrations	vii
Preface	ix
Thomas Arnold the Immigrant	1
The Second Generation	11
The Third Generation	37
The Fourth Generation	73
The Fifth Generation	215
Bibliography	587
Index	599
About the Author	637

ILLUSTRATIONS

Providence County, Rhode Island 1781	Frontispiece
English Homes of the Arnolds	3
Providence in 1655	9
King Philip's War – A Raid on the Settlers	21
The Eleazer Arnold House, 1687	33
Quaker Meetinghouse, 1704	34
Destruction of the Schooner *Gaspee*	379
Sabin's Inn, Home of Welcome Arnold	383
The Author	637

PREFACE

There were two Arnold families in colonial Rhode Island. William Arnold came to Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1635 and settled at Providence, Rhode Island, on 20 April 1636. His son was Benedict Arnold who was governor of Rhode Island in 1663.[1] A great-grandson was the traitor of the American Revolution, General Benedict Arnold.

Thomas Arnold, whose family is the topic of this book, had settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, by 1636; by 2 6th month [August] 1655[2] he was a resident of Providence.

As an early settler of Watertown, Thomas prospered from multiple grants of land. He had four young sons when men aspired to accumulate property for each son. He became a member of the church and a freeman when fewer than half of the male residents of Watertown were freemen. He was elected constable.

However, Thomas started to get in trouble as early as 1651, when he questioned the established church and the practice of baptizing infants. By 1653 he was fined for not attending church. In 1655 he received a more severe fine for the same offence. He had to sell some of his property to pay the fine. That summer he and his young family moved to Providence, Rhode Island, where his views were more acceptable. He accumulated substantial land in Rhode Island, which his sons were able to inherit.

---

[1] John Osborne Austin, *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island . . .* (Albany, 1887; repr. Baltimore, 1969), 242.

[2] Many early settlers of Rhode Island became members of the Society of Friends. The Friends considered the days of the week and the names of months to be based on pagan names and avoided using them. Instead they numbered the months. In the early years the first month was considered March. Thus the sixth month was August. In this book the dates are cited as noted in the original records, followed by modern equivalents in square brackets.

William and Thomas Arnold were from different parts of England, but many early genealogies concluded that they were half-brothers from Cheslbourne, Dorset, England, sons of an earlier Thomas Arnold. One genealogist traces this confusion back to a 1796 obituary and an 1819 chart.[3] In 1860, James Savage called them brothers.[4] In a manuscript prepared in 1870, and published in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* in 1879, William and Thomas were identified as half-brothers and sons of Thomas Arnold of Cheslbourne. William's father, Thomas, married a second wife and had a son Thomas, baptized 18 April 1599, presumed in the article to be Thomas of Watertown and Providence.[5] In 1876, E. Richardson included 33 pages on the Thomas Arnold family in his *History of Woonsocket.* He called Thomas a son of William, the other Rhode Island settler.[6] In 1887, John Osborne Austin gave the same ancestry for William and Thomas in his *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island.*[7] The erroneous information continues in a popular book published in 1923 which completely confuses the stories of the two Arnolds, calling them brothers.[8] The myth that the two Arnolds were brothers continues to be proliferated on a number of Internet sites.

All of this should have been clarified when Henry Waters, who had been hired by the New England Historic Genealogical Society, found the 1644 will of Richard Arnold of London, goldsmith. Richard evidently had no children, so he left sums to a large number of cousins. One of his cousins was "Thomas Arnold who is now supposed to be in New England or some other part

---

[3] Edson Salisbury Jones, "The Parentage of William and Thomas Arnold of Providence, R.I.," *Register* 69 (1915): 64.

[4] James Savage, *Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England . . .* (Boston, 1860–1862), 1:67.

[5] "Somerby's Genealogy of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.

[6] E. Richardson, *History of Woonsocket* (Woonsocket, R.I., 1876), 187.

[7] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 240, 242.

[8] Frank R. Holmes, *Directory of the Ancestral Heads of New England Families . . .* (New York, 1923), vii.

beyond the seas." Thomas Arnold was then in Watertown, the only Thomas Arnold recorded in New England.[9]

Richard gave two cousins, Richard Arnold of Killingworth [Kenilworth], Warwickshire, son of Richard Arnold, "one of my father's brothers, deceased" and Richard Arnold of Kelshall [Kelsale], Suffolk, son of William Arnold ("another of my father's brothers, deceased"), legacies with instructions that they pay sums to their brothers and sisters "except Thomas Arnold who is now supposed to be in New England or some other part beyond the seas."[10] It is not clear from the will if Thomas was the son of Richard Arnold of Warwickshire or William Arnold of Suffolk.

Wills have been found that presumably pertain to Richard and William; both had sons named Thomas.

Six miles southeast of Kenilworth, Warwickshire, where Richard son of Richard lived, is the parish of Offchurch. The will of Richard Arnold of Offchurch, husbandman, was written 2 July 1604 and probated 13 August 1604.[11] He mentioned his mother, Margaret Arnold, who may have been the mother of all the Arnold siblings mentioned. He left £20 plus sheep to his eldest daughter Elizabeth at age 18 or date of marriage. He left the same to eldest son, Thomas, he and the other sons all being under age 21. The same was left to second son, John, third son, Richard, and youngest daughter, Mary. Richard must have had a lot of sheep! His wife, Alice, was named executor. Overseers were brothers Thomas Pratt of Hunningham and Edward Wright of Offchurch. [Presumably they were brothers-in-law: Wright was the husband of Joane Wright named in the will of Richard the goldsmith].

---

[9] Henry Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England," *Register* 48 (1894): 374.

[10] Original will of 1644 at Prerogative Court of Canturbury, Rivers 7, FHL microfilm #92156.

[11] Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1604, 76 Hart, FHL microfilm #92020.

Richard Arnold, Goldsmith, and His Cousins

Son of _____ Arnold and _____ Short, born Gillingham, Kent:
Richard Arnold of London, Goldsmith

Children of Richard and Alice Arnold of Offchurch, Warwickshire:
Thomas Arnold
Elizabeth Arnold
John Arnold
Richard Arnold
Mary Arnold

Children of William and Katherine Arnold of Hollesley, Suffolk:
Thomas Arnold
Richard Arnold, Kelsale, Suffolk
Katherine Cleere

Children of Margaret Arnold and _____ Walton of Radford, Warwickshire:
William Walton
Elizabeth Walton
Mary Walton
Susan Walton
Hannah Walton

Children of Joane Arnold and Edward Wright of Offchurch, Warwickshire:
Benedict Wright
Katheryn Wright
Ann Wright

Daughter of Elizabeth Arnold and _____:
Alice Wood of Ipswich, Suffolk

Children of Alice Arnold and _____:
Residing at Isle of Thanet, Kent

Thirteen miles from Kelsale, Suffolk, where Richard son of William lived, is the parish of Hollesley. William Arnold of Hollesley, in his will of 22 November 1616, proved 24 February 1616/7, named his sons Richard and Thomas Arnold, who were then under age.[12]

Richard the goldsmith also mentioned Margaret Walton of Radford, Warwickshire, "my father's sister," children of Joane Wright, "my father's sister," and children of Alice, "another of my father's sisters," whose children lived in or about the Isle of Thannett [Thanet, in the northeast of Kent] and Alice Wood of Ipswich, Suffolk, daughter of Elizabeth, "another of my father's sisters. He left money to the poor of Gillingham, Kent, where I was born." These two brothers and four sisters of Richard's father lived in three different counties. These are shown in the accompanying chart.

The author of a 1915 article concluded that Thomas was either the son of Richard Arnold of Offchurch, Warwickshire, who wrote his will in 1604, or of the William Arnold who wrote his will at Hollesley, Suffolk, in 1616. The article also concluded that the other Rhode Island settler, William Arnold, was probably the son of Nicholas Arnold of Ilchester, Somerset, who wrote his will 18 January 1622. The article discredited the Somerby pedigree that claimed the two Arnolds were descended from a Welsh prince of the twelfth century.[13]

The author of the 1915 article expressed a preference for William of Suffolk as the father since Thomas married Phebe Parkhurst of Suffolk and that marriage may have taken place in England. However, we now know that Phebe had an earlier marriage in England on 23 March 1635/6 and Thomas received a grant of land in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 25 July 1636, just a few weeks

---

[12] Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1616, 12 Weldon; Edson Salisbury Jones, "The Parentage of William and Thomas Arnold of Providence, R.I.," *Register* 69 (1915): 69.

[13] Jones, "Parentage of William and Thomas Arnold of Providence, R.I.," 64.

later. This would not seem to leave enough time for Phebe's first husband to die and for her to remarry and the two of them sail to Massachusetts!

The eminent genealogist G. Andrews Moriarty supported the Suffolk ancestry for Thomas Arnold in a 1944 article.[14] He mentioned the possibility of a marriage in Suffolk, and he pointed out that Watertown was almost entirely an East Anglian settlement, made up of persons from Essex and Suffolk.

The possibility that Thomas was the son of Richard Arnold of Offchurch, Warwickshire, cannot be dismissed, particularly since three of the seven aunts and uncles of Richard the goldsmith were from Warwickshire. According to veteran genealogist Jerome Anderson, the fact that two of the sisters were living in Warwickshire gives support to the theory that the family was originally from that county.[15]

Another long-held contention is that Thomas Arnold had two sons and one daughter by his first wife in England: Thomas Arnold, born 3 May 1625; Nicholas Arnold, baptized 16 January 1625; and Susanna Arnold.[16] The births of sons Thomas and Nicholas were listed in an old document of the family of William Arnold, the immigrant, as sons of "my brother Thomas."[17] There is no evidence that Thomas ever came to New England or was the Thomas Arnold of Watertown.

A number of people have compiled information on the Thomas Arnold family of Smithfield. The earliest extensive compilation was prepared by a well-known Rhode Island merchant and historian, Welcome Arnold Greene (1795–1870). Greene is known as the primary author of *The Providence Plantations for Two Hundred*

---

[14] G. Andrew Moriarty, "Additions and Corrections to Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," *TAG* 20 (1944): 120.

[15] November 2006 consultation with Anderson.

[16] "Somerby's Genealogy of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 435.

[17] Edwin Hubbard, "Early Records of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 428.

and Fifty Years . . . (Providence, 1886), published after his death. His grandson, Howard Greene, organized his notes on the Arnold family and had them typed in 1914 in a volume of 225 pages. Welcome Arnold Greene started his work as early as 1842 according to the text but must have continued for several years, as he refers to Bond's Watertown genealogy, which was published in 1860. The Greene manuscript is a rich source for information on the fourth and fifth generations of the family and their children, as many were still alive when it was compiled. Ms. Jeanette Gent of Portland, Oregon, called our attention to it, having seen a copy at the Knight Memorial Library in Providence. A copy is also at the Wisconsin Historical Society. (Howard Greene lived in Wisconsin.) The book is not in the Library of Congress or the Family History Library in Salt Lake City.

We have already mentioned E. Richardson, who included 33 pages on the Arnold family in his *History of Woonsocket* in 1876. Richardson lived in the Smithfield area, and much of his information (excepting his conclusions regarding the parentage of Thomas), is good, if undocumented.[18] The 1887 *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island* has considerable information on the first three generations.[19] In 1910, William Waterman Chapin compiled a typescript, "Genealogy of the Family of Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield, R. I.," about a fourth-generation descendant and his family. He also compiled a typescript, "Genealogy of the Descendants of Dr. Jonathan Arnold of Providence, R.I. and St. Johnsbury, Vt.," about a fifth-generation descendant. He made extensive use of primary sources and correspondence from the manuscript collection of the Rhode Island Historical Society, where his typescripts can be found.[20]

Research on all Rhode Island families was greatly enhanced by the publication of James N. Arnold's 21-volume *Vital Record of Rhode Island* from 1891 to 1912. Arnold collected records of births,

---

[18] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 187.

[19] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.

[20] Also at FHL microfilm #22323, Item 7.

deaths, and marriages from town records, church records, and newspapers. In spite of his reliance on so many sources, a large number of births, deaths. and marriages are not covered in his volumes. They were identified by deeds, probate records, family Bibles, and early compiled genealogies. Some genealogists have noted errors or omissions in Arnold's compilations. A number of Arnold references have been checked against original sources, but doing so for all of the several hundred citations was not considered feasible.

More recently, in the last thirty years, Charles Arnold has collected information on this family and posted on a website sponsored by *Rootsweb.com.* He continues well beyond the five-generation scope of this book but limits himself primarily to information on births, marriages, and deaths. In recent years he has included information on sources. He warns his readers, however, that his data includes many assumptions and should be verified.[21]

The Thomas Arnold family was large and included a number of descendants who lived interesting and distinguished lives. For Joseph Arnold captained privateer vessels in the 1740s during King George's War with France; Jonathan Arnold (born 1741) was a physician who directed an army hospital in Providence during the American Revolution and later became a member of the Continental Congress; Peleg Arnold (born 1751) also served in the Continental Congress, became chief justice of the Rhode Island Supreme Court, and was Assistant Governor; Oliver Arnold (born 1736) became attorney general of Rhode Island; Welcome Arnold (born 1745) became a wealthy Providence merchant and trader and owned vessels that sailed around the world, including privateers during the American Revolution, and later he became Speaker of the Rhode Island General Assembly.

---

[21] "ARNOLD - Thomas of Providence RI (1599-1674) - Some of His ARNOLD Descendants," *http://worldconnect.rootsweb.com/cgibin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=tharnoldri&id*

There are a number of tragic stories in the family as well. Richard Arnold and his brother Woodward Arnold both left their families in the 1730s. Brothers Moses and David Arnold both took their own lives in the 1780s. Mary Arnold married Joseph Newall and her sister Sarah married John Turpin. Both husbands were declared insane by the courts. Arnold descendants David Comstock and his brother Silas were disowned by the Society of Friends in 1789 for unchristian and unbecoming behavior. The next year, David ended a dispute with a neighbor by killing him with an ax. He was hanged in Providence for the crime. Seth Arnold, a pious Quaker, was convicted by the Rhode Island Supreme Court of passing counterfeit twenty-shilling notes in 1741. Seth seems to have regained his position in the community.

Thanks are due to the many people I have corresponded with during this project. They have pointed me to many obscure sources. The present and former professional staff of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, Gary Boyd Roberts, Jerry Anderson, Christopher C. Child, and David Dearborn, with their great memories for names, have pointed me to many sources. Also helpful were the staffs at the Family History Library in Salt Lake City, the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, and the Rhode Island Historical Society.

Penelope Stratton and the staff of Newbury Street Press coordinated the publication with their usual expertise. Scott C. Steward, Chris Child, Michael J. Leclerc, and Rebecca Tapley provided invaluable proofreading and editorial assistance. Maps were expertly drawn by David Herring of Boston and indexing was done by Steve Csipke.

Richard H. Benson
Naples, Florida
2009

THOMAS ARNOLD THE IMMIGRANT

THOMAS[1] ARNOLD was a son of either William and Katherine Arnold of Hollesley, Suffolk, or Richard and Alice Arnold of Offchurch, Warwickshire, as indicated in the preface. The 1644 will of his cousin, Richard Arnold of London, goldsmith, left legacies to the children of William and Richard, "except Thomas Arnold who is now supposed to be in New England or some other part beyond the seas." The will does not clarify which uncle was Thomas's father.[1] Both uncles left wills naming a son Thomas.

Thomas first married in England probably about 1628, the year preceding his daughter Susanna's birth (calculated from her tombstone inscription). No records of this marriage, or of Susanna's baptism, have been found.[2]

He married second **PHEBE (PARKHURST) CANE**, presumably at Watertown, Massachusetts, by early 1640 (based on birth of son Ichabod on 1 March 1640/1), Phebe was baptized in the Church of St. Mary by the Quay, Ipswich, Suffolk, England, 29 November 1612, daughter of George and Phebe (Leete) Parkhurst.[3] Phebe's siblings were baptized in different parishes of Ipswich from 1614

---

[1] Henry Waters, "Genealogical Gleanings in England," *Register* 48 (1894): 374.

[2] A Susanna Arnold, daughter of Thomas and Susan (Smyton) Arnold, was baptized at Lowestoft, Suffolk, in 1629. However, Thomas and Susan continued to have children there in 1638 and 1641, long after Thomas was in Massachusetts (Lowestoft parish register abstracts, British FHL microfilm, #97130).

[3] Some genealogists have suggested Thomas and Phebe were married in England. This is not likely, however, because Phebe first married 23 March 1635/6 and Thomas was in Watertown before 25 July 1636. Whereas we do not have a record of the marriage, in a deed of 30 1st month [March] 1655 Thomas and Phebe referred to land bought of "our father George Parkhurst." Middlesex County Deeds, 1:216.

to 1629.[4] Ipswich was a large town and an important port for ships leaving for New England during the Great Migration.

Phebe first married Daniel Cane 23 March 1635 at Woolverstone, Suffolk, about five miles south of Ipswich.[5] Her uncle, the Reverend Timothy Dalton, husband of her mother's sister, Ruth (Leete) Dalton, was rector of Woolverstone from 1615 to 1636. Suspended by Matthew Wren, Bishop of Norwich, for his religious beliefs in April 1636,[6] he came to New England, possibly with the Parkhursts. He was made a freeman on 26 7th month [September] 1637.[7] He eventually settled in Hampton, New Hampshire.

No children of Phebe and Daniel, or burial or probate records for Daniel, have been found. It is not known if Daniel died in England or came with the Parkhursts to New England. Some genealogists have suggested that Thomas was the Thomas Arnold, age 30, who sailed to Virginia in the *Plain Joan* on 15 May 1635.[8] Several authorities have doubted this assertion, however, as there is no evidence other than matching names.[9]

---

[4] Peter G. Parkhurst, *George Parkhurst Increasings* (Los Altos Hills, Calif., 1995), 7, and 2004 draft of new edition provided by the author.

[5] Woolverstone Parish Registers, FHL (Family History Library) microfilm #919639.

[6] John Venn and J. A. Venn, *Alumni Catabrigienses,* 10 vols. (Cambridge, England, 1922–1954), Part I, 2:6.

[7] *Records of the Court of Assistants of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay* (Boston, 1901–1928), 2:69.

[8] John Camden Hotten, *The Original Lists of Persons of Quality . . .* (London, 1874), 144.

[9] Robert Charles Anderson has stated, "As I'm sure you know, in my Great Migration work I never accept the claims that so-an-so on one of the 1635 passenger lists for Virginia or the Caribbean was really on his way to New England where he showed up a year or two later. These are almost always common names with no supporting evidence for the identity." Eugene Cole Zubrinsky, "The Immigration and Early Whereabouts in America of Thomas Stanton of Connecticut," *TAG* 81 (2006): 265.

English Homes of the Arnolds

Nevertheless, it is known that Thomas settled at Watertown, Massachusetts, where land was laid out to him as a part of a major distribution of lands on 25 July 1636. He became a freeman 18 May 1640.[10] (To become a freeman, it was necessary to be a church member.) In 1647, there were only 62 freemen in Watertown out of

[10] "List of Freemen," *Register* 3 (1849): 187.

approximately 150 adult males.[11] On 26 8th month [October] 1643 Thomas took the oath as constable of Watertown.[12]

Watertown – on the north side of the Charles River, about five miles inland from Boston, west of Cambridge – had been settled in 1630, the same year as Boston. At the time, the banks of the river were marshy and liable to flooding. In the spring the Charles teemed with fish and in the summer with mosquitoes. The original Watertown settlement was in the eastern part of the town, up from the river, in what is now Cambridge. By the time Thomas arrived, it had moved about a mile west to the area known as the Meetinghouse Common. At that time there were about 120 families in Watertown.[13]

Because Watertown was not a port city, it did not grow rapidly like Boston and Salem. It remained a farming community and had only about 160 families in the mid-1650s, when Thomas and his family moved to Rhode Island.[14]

Watertown comprised a large area of land, including what are now the separate towns of Waltham, Belmont, and Weston and parts of Lexington, Concord, Lincoln, Cambridge, and Wayland. The proprietors of many New England towns retained considerable land in common and granted parcels to new settlers. Watertown, however, distributed most of its land to 150 or so early settlers; Thomas participated in a number of the distributions. An early inventory of lands, possibly compiled in late 1643 or early 1644, showed him owning the following:[15]

> 1. An Homestall of One Acre bounded the South & East with the highway & the North with John Knolls.

---

[11] Roger Thompson, *Divided We Stand, Watertown, Massachusetts 1630–1680* (Amherst, Mass., 2001), 68.
[12] *Records of the Court of Assistants of Mass. Bay,* 2:134.
[13] Thompson, *Divided We Stand,* , 7, 8, 56.
[14] Thompson, *Divided We Stand,* 75.
[15] *Watertown Records* (Watertown, Mass., 1894–1899), 1 (Land Grants and Petitions): 62.

2. Twelve Acres of upland more or les bounded the East with Thomas Wincoll the West with George Phillips the South with Edward How & the North with the highway.

3. Ten Acres & halfe of upland beyond the further Paine & the 33 Lott. [This is crossed out and noted in the margin, "This sold to Nicholas Thele."]

4. Thirty Acres of Upland being a great Divident in the 3 Division & the 1 Lott.

5. A Farme of Ninety seven Acres of upland in the 6 Division.

6. Six Acres of Meddow more or les bounded the West with the highway the South & East with Edward Garfield & the North with his owne ground.

7. Eight Acres of upland more or les bounded the East with Richard Amler the West & North with the highway the South with Miles Ives Edward Garfield the North with his owne ground.

8. Seven Acres of upland more or les bounded the East with the highway the West with Samuel Garfield & the North with the highway to Beverbrook meddow.

Phebe's father, George Parkhurst, and her stepmother moved from Watertown to Boston about 1645. The shortest way to reach Boston was to cross the Charles River and travel through Muddy River (Brookline) and Roxbury. In 1633, Richard Brown was licensed to keep a ferry to cross the river. A footbridge was built in 1641, and a "horse bridge" was completed in 1648.[16] Perhaps it was on trips to visit the Parkhursts that Thomas and Phebe's daughter, Susanna, met John Farnum of Boston. She married him in 1654.

John Farnum was probably the son of a Baptist activist who was later convicted of heresy and banished from the colony. There was a small group of Baptists in Watertown; Thomas eventually became one of them. The Baptists objected to infant baptism,

---

[16] *Watertown Records*, 1:93.

which was administered only to the children of church members. At the time, infant baptism was a topic of much discussion and controversy in Massachusetts and elsewhere. In fact, the first President of Harvard College, Henry Dunster, was forced to resign because he questioned the practice.

In October 1651, Thomas was charged in Middlesex County Court with saying, "The churches in Watertown are no churches and no fit matter for churches . . . [and] children have no more right to baptism . . . than the heathens."[17] On 5 2nd month [April] 1653 the court fined Thomas Arnold and John Warren for "absenting themselves from the publique ordinance," that is, not attending church services.[18] On 4 2nd month [April] 1654 Thomas Arnold and John Warren were fined five pounds for missing church for twenty days. Thomas "could render no lawful reason why he so absented himself."[19] A year later, the court record of 3 2nd month [April] 1655 read as follows:[20]

> Thomas Arnold of Watertown being presented to the Court by the grand jury for absenting himself from the publique ordinance of xt on the Lord's Day. Mr. Jno Whitney & Henry Bright attested upon oath that Thomas Arnold had to their best knowledge absented himself from the publique ordinance of Christ on the Lord's Day for a full year last past. Thomas Arnold pleaded that he had been absent severall dayes by warding and cow keeping etc. which he could not make appears. The Court abated him for 12 Sabbath Days and fined him only for forty dayes absence . . . according to the order of the Genr Cort, five shillings per day, the whole amounts to ten pounds.

A parcel of his land was confiscated to pay the fine. On the same day he sold his brother-in-law George Parkhurst thirty acres of land, which he had bought in 1648 "of our father George Parkhurst

---

[17] Thompson, *Divided We Stand,* 71.

[18] David Pulsifer, *Records of the County of Middlesex, County Court Records 1649–1663,* 1851 manuscript transcription, 36, FHL microfilm #892250.

[19] Pulsifer, *Records of the County of Middlesex,* 52.

[20] Pulsifer, *Records of the County of Middlesex,* 72.

and his wife Susanna." Thomas's father-in-law, George Parkhurst, witnessed the deed.[21]

Almost immediately, Thomas and Phebe packed up their possessions and their young family of four boys – ages about 12, 11, 7, and 4 – and one daughter, about 10 years old, and moved to Providence. On 2 6th month [August] 1655, in a deed witnessed by Roger Williams, Thomas Arnold "of Providence" purchased a parcel of meadow and six acres of upland from William Burrows. The price was an annual payment, for the duration of Burrows's lifetime, of 13 shillings in labor of plowing or carting; 13 shillings in English corn, wheat, or rye; and 13 shillings in swine's flesh "at killing time" before winter.[22] Burrows was elderly and evidently unable to support himself. In 1660, the town voted to take him into its care, and to take his property and improve it for his benefit.[23]

Providence had been settled nineteen years earlier, in 1636, by Roger Williams, who had been banished from Massachusetts for his religious beliefs. Settlers in Rhode Island enjoyed religious freedom. In 1639, a Baptist church was formed. Quakers found sanctuary in Rhode Island in 1656, and the first Jewish synagogue in the New World was erected in Newport in 1658. In Providence, Thomas was able to avoid persecution for his opposition to infant baptism. He became a freeman there on 18 May 1658.[24]

In the 1650s, Providence was a small farming and fishing village on the eastern shore of the Providence River and the Great Salt Cove. Only a few dozen families lived there, mostly on five-acre home lots laid out on one north–south street, Town Street.[25] Houses were constructed at the front of the lots, with gardens and burial plots set in the rear. The town also encompassed about 380

---

[21] Middlesex County Deeds, 1:216.
[22] *Providence Town Records*, 15:70.
[23] *Providence Town Records*, 2:140.
[24] John Russell Bartlett, *Records of the Colony of Rhode Island* (Providence, 1856–1865), 1:387.
[25] There were only 42 freemen in Providence in 1655. Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 1:299.

square miles west of the Blackstone River; it is there that Thomas acquired land, in what would become the town of Smithfield.

Land in Providence was rocky and required work to make it suitable for agriculture. Thomas got into trouble on 27 July 1659 for rolling some rocks from his land onto the highway:

> Forasmuch as theire hath benn a Complynt made this day unto the Town by the Surveyours Concerning spoyling the Highway lieing before Thomas Arnold his House Lott by Tho: Arnold Roling stones into the Highway, the Saide Thomas Arnold hath seven days Tyme Limetted him to Remove all those Stones and mend what hee hath marred.[26]

Thomas made trips back to Watertown to dispose of parcels of land over a period of years. He sold land in Watertown in 1657, and on 17 October 1661 and 20 October 1662 he and Phebe sold two parcels of land including their house, barn and sixteen acres of land in Watertown. His son-in-law, John Farnum, witnessed one of the 1662 deeds. He also sold land in 1664 and 1669.[27]

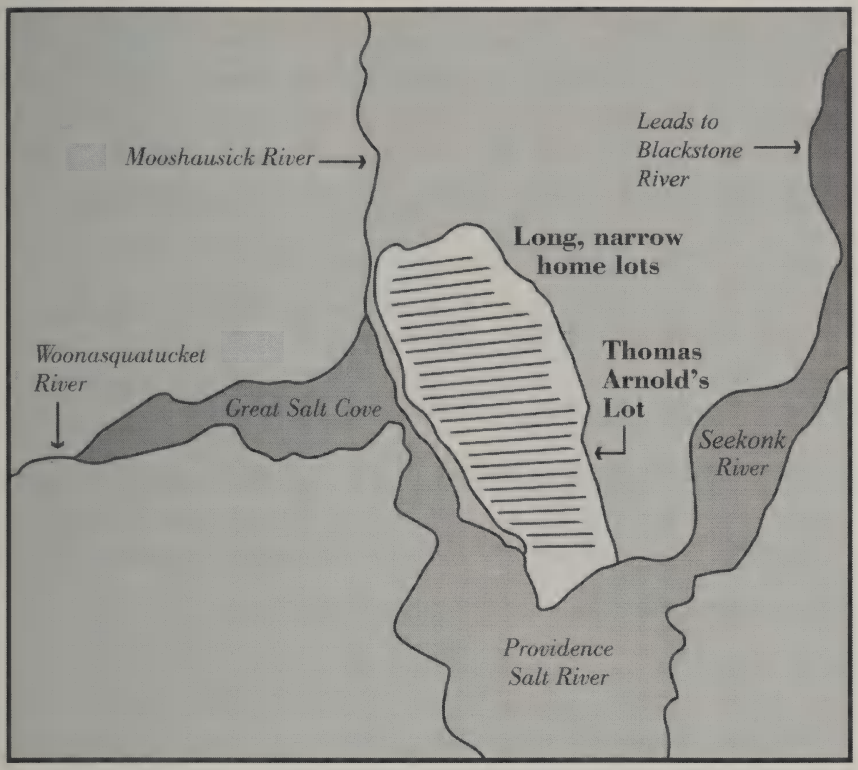
In February 1665 Thomas received a grant of land in a division of lands in Providence. He was deputy for Providence to the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1666, 1670, 1671, and 1672.[28] He was on the Providence Town Council in 1672.[29]

Providence remained a very small community. On 3 June 1671, only 93 persons were taxed in Providence including Thomas Arnold Sr., Thomas Arnold Jr., and Richard Arnold.[30]

Thomas died in September 1674, as indicated in his probate records. He did not leave a written will. However, on 29 June 1685, his widow Phebe, sons Richard, Thomas, John, and Eleazer,

---

[26] *Providence Town Records,* 2:116.
[27] Middlesex County Deeds, 2:28, 173, 259, 277, 3:110, 444.
[28] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 2:180, 336, 373, 411.
[29] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island* 240.
[30] *Providence Town Records,* 15:135.



Providence in 1655

and his daughter Elizabeth Comstock signed an agreement that included his verbal instructions regarding the disposition of his estate. Phebe received two parcels of land that were to revert to her sons Thomas and John upon her death, all household goods, two cows, and nine swine. Various parcels of land were left to the other children, including a parcel lying on the east side of Moshassuck River that was Thomas's house lot. Included was land in the town of Providence, land as far west as the "Seven Mile Line" [the present eastern boundary of Glocester, Rhode Island], yet to be divided, and land near "the place called World's End." Thomas and John received the "cart tackling and tools" of the deceased.[31]

---

[31] *Providence Town Records,* 4:115.

Phebe was still alive in the 1680s. In a tax list of 29 October 1684, there were 109 taxpayers in Providence, including "John Arnold and ye widow his mother," Richard Arnold, Eleazer Arnold, and Thomas Arnold.[32] On 1 September 1687 Phebe was on a tax list as "widow Arnold," next to her son John Arnold. She probably died in the next year, as she was not on a list of 10 August 1688.[33]

Daughter of Thomas Arnold and his first wife:

2 i. **Susanna Arnold**, born about September 1629.[34]

Children of Thomas and Phebe (Parkhurst) Arnold:[35]

ii. **Ichabod Arnold**, born 1 March 1640/1; died young.[36]

3 iii. **Richard Arnold,** born 22 March 1642/3.[37]

4 iv. **Thomas Arnold,** born perhaps about 1644.

5 v. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born perhaps about 1645.

6 vi. **John Arnold**, born 19 February 1647/8.[38]

7 vii. **Eleazer Arnold**, born 17 June 1651.[39]

---

[32] *Providence Town Records,* 17:45, 46.
[33] *Providence Town Records,* 17:100, 122.
[34] She was identified as a daughter of Thomas in her 1654 marriage record. She was probably the daughter of Thomas and an earlier wife and was born in England. Her month and year of birth are calculated from the age at death shown on her tombstone.
[35] Thomas and Elizabeth are not mentioned in the Watertown Records but are named in the probate agreement described above.
[36] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 8.
[37] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 9.
[38] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 13.
[39] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 15.

THE SECOND GENERATION

2. **SUSANNA[2] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[1])* was born about September 1629, a daughter of Thomas and _____ Arnold.[1]

She married **JOHN FARNUM** at Boston, Massachusetts, 7 April 1654.[2] He was probably a son of John and Elizabeth (_____) Farnum of Dorchester and later Boston.[3] Figuring from the age at death on his tombstone inscription, he was born about 2 February 1631.

John's father was probably the Baptist who was convicted of heresy in 1665 and banished from the Colony. He did not leave Massachusetts and was imprisoned. On 7 November 1668, he was released:

> Upon the promise he hath made to attend duly upon the publick ordinances of God, in the soleme assemblies allowed by the laws of this jurisdiction, every Lords day twice, except the providence of God some way disable or hinder him, provided always that the said Farman doe refreine himself from disorderly meetings set up contrary to law; and if the said Farnam be proved guilty of that offence, the former sentenc of banishment & imprisionment shall remaine in force against him.[4]

---

[1] Identified as a daughter of Thomas in her 1654 marriage record, she was born probably in England, a daughter of Thomas and an earlier wife. Her month and year of birth are calculated from the age at death shown on her tombstone.

[2] *Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages and Deaths 1630–1699,* Ninth Report of the Record Commissioners (Boston, 1908), 48.

[3] John's birth is not recorded in the Dorchester or Boston records. Several sources, including Antoinette Farham Stepanek, *Farnham/Farnum Families in America* (Bowie, Md., 1993), state that the young Susanna Arnold married the middle-aged John Farnum, the joiner (woodworker), of Dorchester and Boston. However, Suffolk County Deeds, 7:311, show that "John Farnum Sen. (joiner)" was still married to his wife Elizabeth when she signed a deed 21 January 1671. Also Suffolk Deeds, 13:197 and 17:288, list another unrecorded son, Joseph Farnum, who mentioned his father, John Farnum, joiner, and his brother John Farnum.

[4] *Records of the Court of Assistants of Colony of Mass. Bay,* 3:174–178.

It is not known if John and Susanna also attended the Baptist Church. Susanna's father was in trouble for not attending the established church and moved to Rhode Island because of his religious problems.

Until his father's death in 1686,[5] John was known as John Farnum Jr. or "the miller." After that he became John Farnum Sr. to distinguish him from his son John. On 15 March 1674/5, he was named surveyor highways in Muddy River (present-day Brookline).[6] He was taxed in Boston in 1674, 1687, 1688, 1691, and 1695.[7]

John was the John Farnum Sr. who was buried in Boston 23 January 1702.[8] According to his tombstone on Copp's Hill in Boston, he died 20 January 1701/2, aged 69 years, 11 months, and 18 days.[9] On 11 March 1701[/2], Susanna Farnum, widow, was granted letters of administration for the estate of John Farnum Sr., late of Boston, miller.[10] Bond was posted by Susanna, David Copp Sr., cordwainer (shoemaker), and James Hill, cooper, all of Boston.[11] A list of debts of the estate included the cost of the gravestone, the coffin, the funeral, and black gloves.[12] The inventory of his estate, presented 13 August 1702, included the house he dwelt in, the house Jonathan lived in, the house that David lived in with a wharf and warehouse, amounts due to the estate, cash, 23 ounces of silverplate, pewter, brass, a gold ring, a clock, a watch, furniture, a large coat with silver buttons, tools, a Bible, and several sermon books.[13]

---

[5] Robert J. Dunkle and Ann S. Lainhart, *Inscriptions and Records of the Old Cemeteries of Boston* (Boston, 2000), 226.

[6] *Boston Records, 1660–1701,* Seventh Report of the Boston Record Commissioners (Boston, 1881), 91.

[7] *Boston Tax Lists,* First Report of the Boston Record Commissioners (Boston, 1876; 2nd ed., 1881), 23, 85, 136, 149, 162.

[8] Robert J. Dunkle and Ann S. Lainhart, *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799* (Boston, 1999), 1:323.

[9] Dunkle and Lainhart, *Inscriptions and Records,* 227.

[10] Suffolk County Probate, 14:444.

[11] Suffolk County Probate, 6 (new series): 80.

[12] Suffolk County Probate, 6 (new series): 82.

[13] Suffolk County Probate, 15:59.

On her husband's tombstone on Copp's Hill in Boston also appears the inscription for Susannah: "Susannah Farnum, wife of John Farnum, died 26 April 1717, aged 87 years and 7 months."[14]

Children of John and Susanna (Arnold) Farnum:[15]

i. **John Farnum**, born 20 May 1655.

ii. **Jonathan Farnum**, born 3 November 1659.

iii. **David Farnum**, born 30 October 1662.

iv. **Elizabeth Farnum**, born 11 November 1667.

v. **Thomas Farnum**, born 17 September 1670.

---

[14] Dunkle and Lainhart, *Inscriptions and Records*, 227.

[15] *Boston Births, Baptism, Marriages and Deaths*, 50, 69, 84, 104, 114.

3. **RICHARD[2] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[1])* was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, 22 March 1642/3, a son of Thomas and Phebe (Parkhurst) Arnold.[16]

Richard married **MARY ANGELL.** Mary was born at Providence about 1645, a daughter of Thomas and Alice (Ashton) Angell.[17] They were married shortly before or after 24 October 1666, when he and Mary were fined 40 shillings for fornication.[18] Although intimacy by an engaged couple was accepted by many New Englanders, on 20 May 1648, the Rhode Island General Assembly passed a law that any person convicted of fornication "shall be publiquely whiped in the Towne where the fact was done, with fifteene stripes for the first offence or pay forty shillings."[19] Sometimes couples were convicted of fornication if a child's birth was deemed to occur too soon after the marriage.

In November 1687, Richard published banns in Providence to marry **SARAH SMITH.** She was probably the widow of John Smith, the miller, and died in 1712.[20] John Smith, the miller, had died before 2 June 1682, when his widow Sarah and son John posted bond to be executors of his estate.[21]

Richard was just 12 years old when his parents moved from Watertown to Providence. He was their eldest son. Evidently he held title to land when he was just 16. On 10 September 1659, Richard Prey of Providence sold his dwelling house and lot to John Smith, the mason, of Warwick, Rhode Island. The deed described the lot as bordered southward "by land belonging to Richard Arnold."[22] Richard owned his own house six years later, about a

---

[16] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 9.

[17] Mary Arnold was named in the will dated 23 May 1685 of Thomas Angell, "Abstracts of Providence Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 153; H. Minot Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals* (Baltimore, 1983), 1:63.

[18] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:64.

[19] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 1:355.

[20] *Providence Town Records,* 8:175; *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 240.

[21] *Providence Town Records,* 17:2.

[22] *Providence Town Records,* 1:106.

year before he was married. On 4 June 1666, the town council ordered that "Richard Arnold shall be paid for the hire of his house, which was pressed about a year ago for the King's service."[23]

On 24 February 1674/5, Roger Williams wrote that he purchased a right to land west of the Seven Mile Line from Thomas Arnold in 1666, and that he had sold that right to Richard Arnold, son of Thomas. Richard sold it on 27 July 1706.[24]

Richard built the first of many sawmills to be operated by the Arnold family in partnership with John Scott on the Moshassuck River in 1673. He had a sawmill in what became Smithfield and is now Woonsocket, Rhode Island, in 1680. In 1700, he built one in Providence on the Woonasquatucket River, five miles above the saltwater harbor.[25]

In the second half of 1675, King Philip's War with the Native Americans broke out in southern Massachusetts, not far from Providence. Most residents of Providence moved to Portsmouth or Newport on the island of Rhode Island for safety. Only 27 men stayed in Providence, including Richard's bachelor brother, Thomas.[26] On 29 March 1676, the Native Americans came to Providence. Roger Williams, long their friend, tried to talk to them, but they torched the town, burning seventy houses and thirty barns.[27]

Richard and his family returned to Providence after the war. In 1682, he testified about the drowning of a Native American squaw:[28]

> Richard Arnold [aged] about 40 yeares testifieth and saith I being on the third of April go[e]ing from my home porposeing to goe to

---

[23] *Providence Town Records,* 3:84.
[24] *Providence Town Records,* 20:121.
[25] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:63.
[26] *Providence Town Records,* 8:12.
[27] Russell Bourne, *The Red King's Rebellion* (New York, 1990), 185.
[28] *Providence Town Records,* 15:239.

> Seaconk met my Indian man Sam who came then from my seller att the new fields. I asked him whether the conow ware there that I might goe over the river. he told me it was by the seller when he came away; but when I came to the seller, there was 3 squaws and they told me an Indian had carried the canow over the river and was gone, but the squaw called marget, sam's sister, told me there was a bark canow that I might goe over in. I went and saw it and came into the sellar againe and told her I never went in such a canow and I did not like it, thinking I must go up to the falls to goe over. But shee told me that two men came over in that canow last night and presently went out of the seller and I went out quikly after here and saw her putting the canow into the water and I saw it leaked and said if shee went in that over the river shee had best take a dish to throw out the water if much came in; but shee took none; but put ofe the bark canow speeking to the other two squaws which I understood not; and went to goe over he river; and I saw when shee was aboue halfe over the river the canow swome deep and shee paddeled toward the other side but before shee came neere the shore shee left the canow and went to swimming; and then I hollowed thinking there might be somebody one the other side might help her with the other canow; but no body came and I kept hallowing till shee sank under water and rose no more that I saw.

At some point, Richard sold 7 acres of land at the neck at the Newfields to Sam Indian, also known as Newfields Sam and 11 acres to Tom Indian, also known as Newfields Tom. After Richard's death, these deeds were confirmed by his sons Richard, John, and Thomas on 14 May 1711.[29] Sam Indian appears in the land records again on 27 January 1726, when he purchased 23 acres of land on the east side of the Seven Mile Line from Joseph, Jeremiah, and John Arnold of Providence.[30]

On 27 July 1682, Richard petitioned the Town of Providence to grant him 50 acres of land he was entitled to as a purchaser of the

---

[29] Providence Deeds, 6:65, 66. Original at Rhode Island Manuscripts, Mss 9004, vol. I, folder 13, at the Rhode Island Historical Society.

[30] Providence Deeds, 10A:118.

town, asking land adjoining his meadow at the Cedar Swamp near "Wainesocatt Hill."[31]

Richard was a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly for thirteen terms from 1671 to 1708. He served as an assistant (member of the upper house) for nine terms from 1681 to 1699.[32] In 1695, he and two others were chosen to run the northern line of the Colony.[33] He served on the Providence Town Council 1700–01 and was speaker of the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1707–8.

On 22 December 1686, Edmund Andros wrote to the Rhode Island authorities that he had been made governor of all of New England, and he appointed Richard and six others to the Council for the government.[34] Andros proved unpopular and, after the death of King James II, the citizens of Boston imprisoned him and sent him back to England.

On 28 January 1691/2, 6 acres of land in Absolute Swamp were laid out to Richard Arnold in lieu of 6 other acres.[35] On 30 May 1693, 13 acres of land near Absolute Swamp out of a 60-acre parcel laid out to Thomas Arnold were reported sold to Richard Arnold.[36] On 12 March 1696/7, 30 acres of land on the west side of Nonplus Hill were laid out to Richard. On the same date an additional 38 acres were laid out to him.[37]

On 24 April 1697, during King William's War, the Council of War for the Town of Providence noted that "there hath Bin a late incurtion & invation made upon some of our English plantations by the Cruel and Barborous Indian Enemies." Richard Arnold and several others were nominated to take ten men "and with them to Rainge beyond the outmost of our plantations Each of you two

---

[31] *Providence Town Records*, 17:7.
[32] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:29, 97, 99, 108, 122, 151, 168, 185, 332, 333.
[33] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:302.
[34] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:219.
[35] *Providence Town Records*, 20:383.
[36] *Providence Town Records*, 20:384.
[37] *Providence Town Records*, 20:385.

Daies at a time . . . to search after the Enemies and Upon Discouery of anie of them you are according to the best of your skill to indevour to Resest Expluse Kill and Distroy them."[38] After this appointment he was frequently referred to in the records as "Captain" Richard Arnold.

On 14 April 1707, Richard and his brother-in-law, Samuel Comstock, were given a grant of land south and west of the Pawtucket River, land on which they some years before they had built their sawmill and several families had settled.[39] The next month, on 19 May 1707, the town was fearful of intrusions (possibly from Massachusetts) on the northern part of the township and accordingly granted 1,000 acres of land "north of the River that runs by the northern end of Wansokutt Hill" to Richard Arnold, Samuel Comstock, William Hopkins, Jonathan Sprague, and Joseph Whipple.[40]

Richard died at Providence 2 April 1710. His will, dated 8 June 1708, was proved 10 May 1710. Sarah was left two lots in town, including a house, and orchard and a meadow; the will specified that the property would go to Richard's sons upon her decease. Sarah also received two cows, a third of the household, and all estate that was hers before their marriage. The sons received various land and sawmills, including the land on which they dwelled. Thomas received the service of a slave named Toby until Toby turned 25 years old, at which time he was to be freed and given two suits of apparel and a good narrow axe, broad hoe, and sickle. The inventory of Richard's estate included nine cattle, a horse, carpenter's tools, and cash. On 12 May 1710, Sarah gave up all right in the house, two lots, and the orchard in return for payments of £8 pounds a year for life from her sons.[41]

Richard and his brother-in-law Samuel Comstock owned much of their land in common. It was finally divided by the heirs on 26

---

[38] *Providence Town Records*, 17:163.
[39] *Providence Town Records*, 17:224, 20:189.
[40] *Providence Town Records*, 17:228.
[41] *Providence Town Records*, 7:1.

March 1731. The Arnold family became proprietors of the part of present-day Woonsocket west of the river and part of present-day North Smithfield.[42]

Children of Richard and Mary (Angell) Arnold, presumably all born at Providence:

8 i. **Richard[3] Arnold**, born probably shortly before or after 24 October 1666, when his parents were fined for fornication.[43]

9 ii. **Mary Arnold**, born 9 September 1668.[44]

10 iii. **John Arnold**, born 1 November 1670.[45]

11 iv. **Thomas Arnold**, born 4 March 1675/6.[46]

v. **Job Arnold**, possible son. No further information.[47]

---

[42] Richard M. Bayles, ed., *History of Providence County* (New York, 1891), 2:268.

[43] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:64.

[44] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:64.

[45] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Deaths, 143.

[46] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 209.

[47] Listed as a son with no further information by Welcome Arnold Greene in "Notes on Genealogy of the Arnold Family," 6.

4. **THOMAS[2] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[1])* was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, probably about 1644, a son of Thomas and Phebe (Parkhurst) Arnold.[48]

We have no record that Thomas married.

As Thomas Arnold Jr., he witnessed deeds on 8 February 1662, 19 November 1662, 22 December 1662, and 16 December 1663, when he was presumably 18 or 19 years old.[49] He was constable of Providence in 1665, 1672, and 1680.[50] He took the oath of allegiance to the king on 19 June 1665.[51] He was on tax lists in Providence starting in 1671[52] and was a freeman of Providence in 1672.[53]

When his father died in September 1674, Thomas inherited the following:[54]

> That house Lott lieing in the towne on ye East side of Moshausick [Moshassuck] River which was bought of Stephen Northrup; also two Lotts bought of Stephen Northrup lieing on ye North side of the upper End of ye lane called Dexters lane. Also the Meaddow lieing at the West River which formerly belonged to William Burrowes. Also that ffifty acres of land (more or less) layd out in ye Right of Stephen Northrup in the second devission Neere Caucaunjawatchuck. Also that Right of Comoning in ye Right of Stephen Northrup with what lands yet are devideable upon it, so farr west as ye Seven mile line ... also seven neat Cattell, one Maare & a Coult & Twenty & five sheep.

In the second half of 1675, King Philip's War with the Native Americans broke out in southern Massachusetts, not far from Providence. Most residents of Providence moved to Portsmouth

---

[48] Named as a son of Thomas in the 29 June 1685 agreement of heirs, *Providence Town Records*, 4:115.
[49] *Providence Town Records*, 1:61, 68, 72, 78.
[50] *Providence Town Records*, 3:63, 223; 8:74.
[51] *Providence Town Records*, 3:64.
[52] *Providence Town Records*, 15:135.
[53] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.
[54] *Providence Town Records*, 4:115.

King Philip's War – A Raid on the Settlers

or Newport on the island of Aquidneck for safety; only twenty-seven men stayed in Providence. Unmarried Thomas was the only one of his siblings to stay.[55] On 29 March 1676, the Native Americans came to Providence. Roger Williams, long their friend, tried to talk to them, but they torched the town, burning seventy houses and thirty barns.[56] As one of the twenty-seven men "who staid and went not away," he was entitled to a share of the Native American captives, whose services were sold for a term of years.[57]

---

[55] *Providence Town Records*, 8:12.

[56] Bourne, *Red King's Rebellion*, 185.

[57] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.

On 14 July 1677, Thomas sold two parcels of land to Shadrach Manton, one he had purchased from Thomas Wilkinson and one he had inherited from his father, on the south side of the West River.[58]

Thomas served on the Providence Town Council in 1676, 1680, and 1683–85. He was a deputy to the Rhode Island legislature in 1678, 1681–84, and 1691.[59]

He sold 30 acres of land to his brother-in-law, Samuel Comstock, 2¼ miles north of the saltwater harbor of Providence on 29 June 1685.[60] Six acres of land were laid out to him on 9 November 1686.[61] On 15 March 1686/7, he sold Joseph Whipple two 5-acre house lots in Providence on the eastern end of the row of house lots against the "upper field." He sold Whipple 7 more acres on 27 March 1691.[62]

In 1688, he was taxed on 2 acres of orchard, 5 acres of meadow, 3 acres under tillage, 22 acres of English pasture, 75 acres of vacant lands, 14 sheep, and a swine. He noted, "It is to be under stood that I give an account of what lands I have in my hands of my mother's."[63]

On 9 January 1692/3, Thomas sold his mansion house in Providence with a 5-acre house lot that originally belonged to Stephen Northrup between Town Street and the Moshausuck River and 3 acres of meadow land on the west side of Moshausuck River and rights to common land.[64]

On 16 May 1720, when Thomas was about 74 years old, Deputy Governor Joseph Jenks was asked by the Providence Town Council to take security of Cornett Josiah Thayer of Mendon for the maintenance of Mr. Thomas Arnold and to take the security

---

[58] *Providence Town Records*, 5:159.
[59] *Providence Town Records*, 6:29, 209, 125, 138; 8:12, 2, 111, 129, 132, 141, 142, 151, 179.
[60] *Providence Town Records*, 14:126.
[61] *Providence Town Records*, 14:187.
[62] *Providence Town Records*, 14:231, 233.
[63] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.
[64] *Providence Town Records*, 14:248.

upon the land that was the farm of Mr. Thomas Arnold at Woonsocket.[65]

It is not known what the relationship was between Thomas and Josiah Thayer of Mendon. However, on 12 September 1721, Thomas Arnold of Providence sold the whole of his estate in Providence with his dwelling house and lands for love and goodwill to his "nephew," Charles Sherlock.[66] Sherlock, who was from Providence, had married Josiah Thayer's daughter, Rebecca, at Mendon 25 February 1719.[67] Sherlock was not a "nephew" in the current usage of the word.

---

[65] *Providence Town Records,* 12:14.

[66] *Providence Deeds,* 4:260.

[67] *Mendon Vital Records,* 379. See also Bezaleel Thayer, *Memorial of the Thayer Name . . .* (Otsego, N.Y., 1874), 485, 512.

5. **ELIZABETH[2] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[1])* was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, about 1645, a daughter of Thomas and Phebe (Parkhurst) Arnold.[68]

She married **SAMUEL COMSTOCK** at Providence, Rhode Island, 22 November 1678.[69] He was born in 1654, a son of Samuel and Ann (_____) Comstock.[70]

Samuel's father died in 1660, when Samuel was about 6 years old. Three years later, his brother Daniel signed himself up as an apprentice.[71]

Samuel was 20 years old when King Philip's War with the Native Americans began. It is likely he was part of the militia that fought the Native Americans, but his name is not found on surviving rolls. Providence was virtually abandoned, and on 29 March 1676, Native Americans torched the town, burning seventy houses and thirty barns.[72]

By 1678, the year he was married, Samuel owned property in Providence, as he was granted three-quarters acre of land on the west side of the land "where he now dwelleth on."[73] On 27 October 1678, about four weeks before his wedding, he petitioned the town to grant him additional land in his father's right.[74] That same month he was sentenced to pay a fine of 40 shillings by the General Court of Trials. That fine was reversed by the Assembly on his petition on 16 March 1680.[75]

Samuel continued to acquire land. On 28 January 1681/2, 30 acres of land were laid out to him in the right of his brother-in-law,

---

[68] Named a daughter of Thomas in the 29 June 1685 agreement of heirs; *Providence Town Records,* 4:115.
[69] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[70] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:63.
[71] *Providence Town Records*, 15:93.
[72] Bourne, *Red King's Rebellion,* 185.
[73] *Providence Town Records*, 14:102.
[74] *Providence Town Records*, 8:36.
[75] *Rhode Island Colonial Records*, 3:82.

Thomas Arnold.[76] On 21 May 1685, he purchased 25 acres of land.[77] He purchased 30 acres of land 2½ miles northwest of the saltwater harbor of Providence from Thomas Arnold on 29 June 1685.[78] On 10 June 1695, he sold 60 acres of land.[79]

He was deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1699, 1702, 1707, 1708, and 1711.[80] In 1702, he was appointed to a committee to audit the General Treasurer's accounts and other Colony debts.[81] In April 1708, he was appointed to a committee to fix the rates of grain and other specie brought to the treasury.[82]

Samuel sold certain rights to land on the west side of the Seven Mile Line (the present eastern boundary of Glocester, Rhode Island) to Benjamin Smith on 16 November 1706, including 150 acres already laid out.[83]

On 14 April 1707, Samuel and his brother-in-law, Richard Arnold, were given a grant of land south and west of the Pawtucket River on which they some years before built their sawmill and settled several families.[84] The next month, on 19 May 1707, the Town was fearful of intrusions from Massachusetts on the northern part of the township and accordingly granted 1,000 acres of land "north of the River that runs by the northern end of Wansokutt Hill" to Richard Arnold, Samuel Comstock, William Hopkins, Jonathan Sprague, and Joseph Whipple.[85] Probably this was this same land on the present state line between Massachusetts and Rhode Island over which Samuel had a long controversy with the town of

---

[76] *Providence Town Records*, 14:101.
[77] *Providence Town Records*, 14:122.
[78] *Providence Town Records*, 14:126.
[79] *Providence Town Records*, 14:240.
[80] *Providence Town Records*, 11:67, 115, 129, 158.
[81] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 280.
[82] C. B. Comstock, *Some Descendants of Samuel Comstock of Providence R.I.* (New York, 1905), 5; also Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:33.
[83] *Providence Town Records*, 20:139.
[84] *Providence Town Records*, 17:224.
[85] *Providence Town Records*, 7:228.

Mendon. On 21 November 1698, the selectmen of Mendon gave Samuel Comstock "free liberty to cut so much timber as will be necessary for their use viz: to build the saw mill and dam at the Falls upon the Great River."[86]

Samuel wrote his will 21 December 1726 and died 27 May 1727. The will was proved 18 September 1727. In it, he mentioned his wife Elizabeth; his sons Samuel Comstock, Hazadiah Comstock, Thomas Comstock, Daniel Comstock, John Comstock, Ichabod Comstock, and Job Comstock; and his daughter Elizabeth Sayles. He left Elizabeth a slave woman called Ellie. His inventory included books, an old sword, a mare, a yoke of oxen, six cows, two steers, three heifers, twelve calves, eighteen sheep, five swine, cider, butter, cheese, beef, pork, rye, corn, beans, four pewter platters, two silver spoons, two feather beds, and linen.[87]

Elizabeth died 20 October 1747.[88] Her will, dated 10 April 1745, was proved 8 December 1747. She mentioned sons John, Job, Hazadiah, Thomas, Daniel, and Ichabod; daughter Elizabeth Sayles; grandson David Comstock; and granddaughters Sarah Aldrich and Anne Steer.[89]

Samuel and his brother-in-law Richard Arnold owned much of their land in common. It was finally divided by their heirs 26 March 1731.[90]

---

[86] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 6.
[87] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 102. Also *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 280.
[88] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 280.
[89] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 72.
[90] Bayles, *History of Providence County*, 2:268.

Children of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Comstock, born at Providence:[91]

i. **Samuel Comstock**, born 16 April 1679.

ii. **Hazadiah Comstock**, born 16 April 1682.

iii. **Thomas Comstock**, born 7 November 1684.

iv. **Daniel Comstock**, born 19 July 1686.

v. **Elizabeth Comstock**, born 18 December 1690.

vi. **John Comstock**, born 26 March 1693.

vii. **Ichabod Comstock**, born 9 June 1696.

viii. **Job Comstock**, born 4 April 1699.

---

[91] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 218. Also named in Samuel's will.

6. **JOHN[2] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[1])* was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, 19 February 1647/8, a son of Thomas and Phebe (Parkhurst) Arnold.[92]

He married **HANNAH** _____.[93] Possibly he did not marry until after the death of his mother, who was no longer on the tax rolls by 1688. John and Hannah's only surviving son may have been born as late as 1700, when John was in his fifties.

John pledged allegiance to King Charles II of England on the last Monday in May 1671.[94] In February 1670, he was granted 16 acres of land at the place called World's End in Providence in the right of Thomas Arnold Sr. On 19 November 1685, 25 acres of land were laid out to him "on ye right of Benjamin Smith." Another 4½ acres of land were laid out to him on 4 June 1703.[95] He was called John Arnold of "Wansokut" [Woonsocket] in Providence when the earmark for his cattle was recorded 30 November 1709.[96]

When his father died in September 1674, John inherited the following:

> One house lot bought of Benjamin Smith in the row of house lots, two lots in the Upper Field, 6 acres on the west side of Moshausick [Moshassuck] River, 17½ acres on the hill between Swan Pond and Observation Meadow, a share of meadow bought of Stephen Northrup and right of common land in the right of Benjamin Smith reaching as far west as the Seven Mile Line [present eastern boundary of Glocester, Rhode Island].

He also received "all ye cart tackling & all other manner of tooles" to be divided with his brother Thomas. In addition, his father's house lot was to come to him upon his mother's death.[97]

---

[92] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 13. Named as a son of Thomas in the 29 June 1685 agreement of heirs, *Providence Town Records,* 4:115.

[93] Named in John's probate records.

[94] *Providence Town Records,* 3:200.

[95] *Providence Town Records,* 3:205, 14:87, 4:127.

[96] *Providence Town Records,* 5:282.

[97] *Providence Town Records,* 4:115.

In the second half of 1675, King Philip's War with the Native Americans broke out in southern Massachusetts, not far from Providence. Most residents of Providence moved to Portsmouth or Newport on the island of Aquidneck for safety. John probably temporarily moved there with his mother. Only twenty-seven men stayed in Providence, including John's brother, Thomas.[98] On 29 March 1676, the Native Americans came to Providence. Roger Williams, long considered their friend, tried to talk to them. However they torched the town, burning seventy houses and thirty barns.[99]

John was taxed at Providence on 1 July 1679, 16 July 1680, and 29 January 1680/1 as "John Arnold and his mother."[100] He was again taxed on 1 September 1687 for an estate that included four cows, a two-year-old horse, a swine, and 80 acres of land of which 18 acres was within fences, some of it orchard from which he harvested 30 bushels of fruit.[101]

John lived at the north end of Providence on the east side of the road leading to Pawtucket. He owned a tannery, which was still operating as such in 1842, and his land extended west across the Moshassuck River.[102]

He was appointed constable on 4 June 1683. Although he was appointed sergeant on 1 June 1702, town records indicate that "John Arnold alledges his continual weakenes where by he is made uncapable to officiate in the office," whereby the town made a choice of another person.[103] He was elected a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly on 27 April 1716.[104]

---

[98] *Providence Town Records*, 8:12.
[99] Bourne, *Red King's Rebellion*, 185.
[100] *Providence Town Records*, 15:190, 208, 224.
[101] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.
[102] Greene, "Arnold Family," 7.
[103] *Providence Town Records*, 8:131, 11:68.
[104] *Providence Town Records*, 13:4.

John died 5 January 1722/3, as indicated in his probate records. The administration of his estate was granted to his widow, Hannah, and his son Jonathan on 4 February 1722/3. The inventory, valued at £428, included two feather beds, two chests, pots, kettles, pewter, books, dishes, beef, pork and butter, "coopers tools and four cowbells all old and much worn," a cow, two heifers, a calf, a sow, oats, barley, and several pieces of land.[105]

Child of John and Hannah (_____) Arnold:[106]

12 i. **Jonathan Arnold**, born possibly about 1700.[107]

---

[105] *Providence Town Records*, 16:225.

[106] Named in his father's probate records.

[107] He was married in 1724. His wife may have been born about 1706.

7. **ELEAZER**[2] **ARNOLD** *(Thomas*[1]*)* was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, 17 June 1651, a son of Thomas and Phebe (Parkhurst) Arnold.[108]

He married **ELEANOR SMITH** probably at Providence, Rhode Island, about 1671, a daughter of John "the Mason" and Elizabeth (_____) Smith.[109]

Eleazer pledged allegiance to King Charles II on the last Monday in May 1671.[110]

When his father died in September 1674, Eleazer inherited:

> Fiffty acres of land layd out in the second devission in the right of ye aforesaid deceased Thomas Arnold lieing neere ye place called Worlds End; also fifteene acres laid out in the second division in the right of Benjamin Smith leiing neere ye place called the Worlds End; also the share of meadow in the right of Benjamin Smith in the second devision; also one share of meadow in the second devision in the right of Stephen Northrup; also that right of common which belonged to the aforesaid deceased Thomas Arnold so far westward as the Seven Mile Line. [111]

In the second half of 1675, King Philip's War with the Native Americans broke out in southern Massachusetts, not far from Providence. Most residents of Providence moved to Portsmouth or Newport on the island of Aquidneck for safety. Only twenty-seven men stayed in Providence, including Eleazer's bachelor brother, Thomas.[112] On 29 March 1676, the Native Americans came to Providence. Roger Williams, long considered their friend,

---

[108] *Watertown Records,* 1 (Records of Births, Deaths and Marriages): 15, where he was called Ebenezer. Named as a son of Thomas in the 29 June 1685 agreement of heirs (*Providence Town Records,* 4:115).

[109] *Providence Town Records,* 20:77, identify Eleazer as a son-in-law of Elizabeth, widow of John Smith.

[110] *Providence Town Records,* 3:200.

[111] *Providence Town Records,* 4:115.

[112] *Providence Town Records,* 8:12.

tried to talk to them, but they torched the town, burning seventy houses and thirty barns.[113]

Eleazer and his family returned to Providence after the war. He was named a freeman there on 3 May 1681.[114] He was a member of the Providence Town Council from 1684 to 1686 and a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1686, 1700, 1701, 1703, 1706, 1707, 1711, and 1715.[115] He was a justice of the peace in Providence from May 1705 through 1714.[116]

In 1687 or 1693, Eleazer built a house in the part of Providence that became Smithfield in 1731. This house, which is still standing, is called the Eleazer Arnold House or the Stone Chimney House. It was donated to the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities, now known as Historic New England, in 1919 by Preserved Whipple Arnold. It is on what was the old North Road or the Great Road, the only traveled road at the time between Providence and Mendon, Massachusetts, in what is now Sayles-ville, in the town of Lincoln (just north of Providence and west of the Blackstone River). The two-story house has an integral lean-to and four rooms on each floor, a large exposed fieldstone end wall, and a pilastered chimney.[117] In 1710, Eleazer was licensed to keep a house of entertainment at his dwelling, "for the entertainment of strangers, travilers and other persons, both horse and foot."[118]

On 7 January 1705/6, Eleazer Arnold, Justice, and Thomas Hopkins, Lieutenant, sons-in-law of Elizabeth Smith, widow of John Smith, signed documents obliging themselves jointly and severally to take Elizabeth into their custody and look after her.[119]

---

[113] Bourne, *Red King's Rebellion*, 185.
[114] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:98.
[115] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:428, 4:199.
[116] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:39, 69, 90; Joseph Jencks Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island* (Providence, 1900, 1901), 1:16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 22.
[117] Historic New England website, *http://www.historicnewengland.org*.
[118] *Providence Town Records*, 7:12.
[119] *Providence Town Records*, 20:77.

The Eleazer Arnold House, 1687

Photograph by David Bohl. Courtesy of Historic New England.

About 1704, a one-room Quaker meetinghouse was built on land owned by Eleazer.[120] In 1708, Eleazer give half an acre of land near his house on the west side of the highway from Mendon to Providence in trust to Thomas Smith, Joseph Smith Jr., Samuel Wilkinson Jr., Samuel Comstock Jr., Thomas Arnold Jr., Eleazer Arnold Jr., and Joseph Arnold; the meetinghouse stood on this land.[121] The meetinghouse was expanded to its current size in the 1740s and remains the oldest Quaker meetinghouse in New England in continuous use.[122]

---

[120] *www.woonsocket.org.*

[121] *Providence Town Records*, 20:284.

[122] *www.woonsocket.org.*

Quaker Meetinghouse, 1704

Courtesy of Historic New England

On 19 June 1710, Eleazer was appointed guardian of Hannah Wilkinson, daughter of Josiah Wilkinson, at her request.[123]

Eleazer Arnold of Providence wrote his will 25 August 1722, and he died four days later, on 29 August. In his will, proved 14 January 1722/3, he mentioned his sons Joseph, John, Jeremiah, and Eleazer, deceased, leaving a widow, Sarah. The will also mentioned daughters Phebe Smith, Elizabeth Smith, Eleanor Arnold ("who may have needs by reason of her weakness"), Mary Thomas, and Abigail Man; grandsons Eleazer Arnold and David Arnold, sons of son Eleazer, deceased; granddaughter Deborah Smith; and brother John Arnold.[124] He left his dwelling house and all homestead lands lying on the north side of Moshassuck River to his son Jeremiah.[125]

---

[123] *Providence Town Records*, 7:10.

[124] *Providence Town Records*, 16:213.

[125] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:65.

The inventory of Eleazer's estate, valued at £441, included two guns, silver money, a horse, two colts, nineteen head of cattle, nineteen sheep, eleven swine, barley and rye, an hourglass, and "an old box the Indian used to lie on."[126]

On 6 April 1732, the three surviving sons of Eleazer and Eleanor (Joseph, John, and Jeremiah) sold 10- and 22-acre parcels of land in Smithfield, presumably inherited from their father.[127]

Children of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold, presumably born at Providence:[128]

13 i. **Phebe[3] Arnold**, born 5 November 1672.[129]

14 ii. **Eleazer Arnold** born about 1674.[130]

15 iii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 1678.

16 iv. **John Arnold.**

17 v. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born about 1684; married 1704.

vi. **Eleanor Arnold**, died unmarried after 1722.

18 vii. **Mary Arnold**, born probably about 1697; married 1717.

19 viii. **Jeremiah Arnold**, born probably 1700.[131]

20 ix. **Abigail Arnold**, born probably about 1700; married 1720.

x. **Deborah Arnold**, not mentioned in father's will of 1722.

---

[126] *Providence Town Records*, 16:217.

[127] Smithfield Deeds, 1:391, 392.

[128] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:65. Greene's "Arnold Family" has the same list except it does not include Deborah.

[129] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Deaths, 156.

[130] His parents were married in 1671 and his sister in 1672, making 1674 a likely date for the next child. He was age 21 by 1701, when he became a freeman.

[131] Year of birth from Greene, "Arnold Family," 16. This is probably more reliable than Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:65, which claims Jeremiah was born in 1680.

THE THIRD GENERATION

8. **RICHARD[3] ARNOLD** *(Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably soon before or after 24 October 1666 when his parents, Richard and Mary (Angell) Arnold, were fined for fornication.[1]

He married first **MARY WOODWARD** about 1699 (based on the birth date of their first child). She was a daughter of Joseph and Mary (Pray) Woodward. In his will, dated 16 September 1724, Joseph Woodward of Providence mentioned his grandson Woodward Arnold, son of Richard and Mary.[2]

Richard married second **DINAH THORNTON** at Providence 14 November 1715.[3] She was a daughter of John and Dinah (Steere) Thornton.[4]

On the last Monday in May 1688, Richard Arnold Jr., who was then a teenager, took the oath of allegiance to the King of England.[5]

Richard's father died 2 April 1710. On 26 March 1711, Richard and his brothers John Arnold Jr. and Thomas Arnold Jr. sold their brother-in-law Thomas Steere half of certain land on both sides of the Woonasquatucket River, near a corn mill and sawmill formerly belonging to their father, Richard Arnold, deceased. On 14 May 1711, he and his brothers John and Thomas sold the other

---

[1] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:64.
[2] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 99.
[3] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[4] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 241.
[5] *Providence Town Records,* 4:55.

half of the land to Elisha Smith, including a dwelling house "where Smith now dwells," and half the mills.[6]

While Richard and his brothers worked together to sell their father's land, they were not so close in matters of religion. John became a member of the Society of Friends (Quakers) and was fined for not participating in military training in 1706.[7] Thomas refused to go on a military expedition to Canada in 1711.[8] Richard recorded his thoughts in a booklet about his religious beliefs starting in 1725, writing:

> I do not hold gintly with friends called quakers, or any other sosiety: for I had a door opened in heaven and was aquainted with the powers of the world to come, before I did know what a quaker was.[9]

Many early New Englanders aspired to leave land to their sons. It was a good thing that Richard inherited and accumulated quite a bit of property, since he had six sons. On 8 December 1729, he deeded 60 acres of land to his son Thomas.[10] For "fatherly love and affection, he deeded land to sons Woodward, Thomas, Joseph, and Richard in 1731;[11] to Thomas in 1733;[12] to Edmund in 1736;[13] and to Josiah in 1736/7 and 1737.[14]

No will is recorded for Richard in the Smithfield probate records. However, he wrote one on 6 September 1735, about ten years before his death. He mentioned all of his children except Naomi, who presumably died young. Son Richard left his family in 1733. No bequest was listed for him, but "Richard's wife Ruth" was to receive £40, an amount similar to the legacies of other children.

---

[6] *Providence Town Records*, 21:82.
[7] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[8] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[9] Richard Arnold will and book of writings 1725–1735, Duke University Special Collections Library, OCLC 73282792.
[10] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[11] Smithfield Deeds, 1:15, 42, 43, 52.
[12] Smithfield Deeds, 1:93.
[13] Smithfield Deeds, 1:243.
[14] Smithfield Deeds, 1:316, 336.

Son Woodward, who left his family about 1737, was listed in the will. Eldest son Joseph was to receive the homestead farm.[15] However, Richard deeded "the homestead farm where I now dwell, containing 60 acres" to Joseph on 8 March 1744, approximately two years before his death.[16]

Richard died 5 January 1745[/6?]. On 15 January 1746, administration of his estate was granted to his son Thomas. The inventory of his estate was dated 1 September 1746. The report of Thomas as administrator of the estate listed two trips to Glocester, Rhode Island, to collect some things belonging to Richard at the home of his son Josiah Arnold.[17]

Children of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold, presumably born at Providence:[18]

21 i. **Joseph[4] Arnold**, born 20 April 1700.

22 ii. **Richard Arnold**, born 10 April 1702.

23 iii. **Thomas[4] Arnold**, born 19 February 1705.

24 iv. **Woodward Arnold**, born 8 October 1707.

25 v. **Mary Arnold**, born 30 June 1712.

26 vi. **Edmund Arnold**, born 1 December 1714.

Children of Richard and Dinah (Thornton) Arnold, presumably born at Providence:[19]

27 vii. **Josiah Arnold**, born 8 October 1716.

---

[15] Richard Arnold will and book of writings.
[16] Smithfield Deeds, 2:332.
[17] Smithfield Probate, 1:413, 414.
[18] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241. Dates noted in Austin's own copy in the rare book room of the New England Historic Genealogical Society.
[19] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.

viii. **Naomi Arnold**, born 8 November 1717. Not listed in father's will of 1735.

28 ix. **Dinah Arnold**, born 4 September 1719.

x. **Hannah Arnold**, born 20 August 1721. Did not marry.[20]

[20] Greene, "Arnold Family," 24.

9. **MARY**[3] **ARNOLD** *(Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born 9 September 1668, a daughter of Richard and Mary (Angell) Arnold.[21]

She married **THOMAS STEERE** about 1697 (based on the probable date of birth of their first child). He was born in September 1674, a son of John and Hannah (Wickenden) Steere. John Steere deeded 40 acres of land to Thomas 7 November 1696, possibly as a wedding present.[22]

Thomas was a freeman in 1701.[23] He purchased 30 acres of land from his father-in-law, Richard Arnold Sr., on 10 December 1702.[24] On 1 October 1707, Thomas Steere of Providence sold his brother Samuel 40 acres of land in Providence.[25] In his will dated 8 June 1708, Mary's father gave Thomas Steere certain land and "half the mills at Naspatuckett."[26] On 26 March 1711, he purchased land on both sides of the Woonasquatucket River from his wife's brothers, Richard, John, and Thomas Arnold.[27]

Thomas was a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1715.[28] He was on the Smithfield, Rhode Island, town council when it was formed in 1731 through 1734.

Mary died 20 January 1725, after which Thomas married his second wife, Mehitable Plummer, widow of Samuel Plummer and daughter of Richard and Mary (_____) Evans.[29]

Thomas died at Smithfield 27 August 1735, as indicated in his probate records. His will was dated 22 August 1735 and was proved 15 September 1735. His wife Mehitable received "all the estate that was her former husband's when I married her" and

---

[21] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:64.
[22] James Pierce Root, *Steere Genealogy* (Cambridge, Mass., 1890), 60.
[23] Root, *Steere Genealogy*, 60.
[24] *Providence Town Records*, 5:27.
[25] *Providence Town Records*, 20:187.
[26] *Providence Town Records*, 7:4.
[27] *Providence Town Records*, 21:82.
[28] *Providence Town Records*, 11:176.
[29] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 191.

"she at liberty to dwell in my house with her family till they are of age and during her widowhood." The will also mentions sons Thomas Steere and Richard Steere; and daughters Phebe Mathewson and Mary Mowrey, who received land in partnership with Captain Joseph Mowrey. Children of Phebe Mathewson were mentioned as well.[30]

Children of Thomas and Mary (Arnold) Steere, presumably born at Providence:[31]

i. **Phebe Steere** n, born probably about 1697.

ii. **Elisha Steere**, born about 1699 (not named in his father's 1735 will, since he died in 1731).

iii. **Mary Steere**, born 1702.

iv. **Thomas Steere.**

v. **Richard Steere**, born 3 June 1707.

---

[30] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 2 (1986): 175.

[31] Root, *Steere Genealogy*, 60.

10. **JOHN**[3] **ARNOLD** *(Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 1 November 1670, a son of Richard and Mary (Angell) Arnold.[32]

He married first **MARY MOWRY** before 1695. She was born about 1675 a daughter of Nathaniel and Johannah (Inmann) Mowry.[33] She died at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 27 January 1742, age 67.[34]

John married second **HANNAH HAYWOOD** at Smithfield, 31 October 1742, the day before his 72nd birthday.[35]

John moved to his father's lands in what is now Woonsocket, Rhode Island, when he was married. In his father's will of 1708, he was left "all the land within his fence and where he now dwelleth, with my interest and part of ye sawmill at ye Falls, as also . . . of meadow . . . more, being within fence on ye east side of ye Little River, with the piece of meadow called the Island, joining on ye west side of Little River . . . and all the rest of lands adjoining, belonging to me at Woonsocket, with my farme granted by ye town, lieing on ye west side of ye branch of Pawtucket River I give to my said two sons, Richard and John Arnold, to be equally divided between them." John's original house, a rude cabin with a stone chimney and steps to the attic on the outside, was demolished. In 1712 he erected a new dwelling house that was still standing when the history of Woonsocket was written in 1876.[36]

---

[32] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Deaths, 143.

[33] On 5 May 1718, John Arnold signed a receipt for a legacy given his wife Mary from the estate of her father, Nathaniel Mowry. *Providence Town Records,* 16:80.

[34] Gravestone at Woonsocket Cemetery, "Woonsocket . . .," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 175.

[35] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11. Called Hannah Howard at Smithfield Council Book, vol. 1, FHL microfilm #959528.

[36] E. Richardson, *History of Woonsocket* (Woonsocket, R.I.), 41, 42.

John was a Quaker. Whereas the Providence-area Quakers built a meetinghouse about 1704, they were part of the Greenwich Monthly Meeting of the Society of Friends that met about twelve miles south of Providence. John was first mentioned in the records of the Greenwich Monthly Meeting on 8 12th month [February] 1705/6, when he was appointed to attend the quarterly meeting.[37] He was fined 12 shillings' worth of pewter on 21 May 1706 for not participating in military training. On 9 December 1719, he was appointed to build a Quaker meetinghouse in Woonsocket. It was to be twenty feet square with a height left to him. By 1731, when the township of Smithfield was formed, many Quakers were living there, and John was elected to the Town Council.[38]

Like his father, John owned and operated mills. In 1712, he built a corn and fulling mill "on the Island near Woonsocket Falls." His will mentioned an interest in a sawmill at the falls in Cumberland, Rhode Island. On 29 April 1718, he was paid for boards used to build the coffin of his father-in-law, Nathaniel Mowry.[39]

John also was partial owner of a sawmill on the Blackstone River in Mendon, Massachusetts, just over the colony line from Smithfield, on which "John Arnold and ye rest of ye owners of ye said mill" were taxed on 27 September 1704.[40] As a proprietor in Mendon, John and his sons William and Daniel had land laid out to them in divisions of common land on 19 March 1718, 11 October 1722, 29 May 1729, 25 May 1736, and 10 February 1745/6. One of the parcels was described as next to the Bellingham line, which

---

[37] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.

[38] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.

[39] *Providence Town Records*, 16:87.

[40] John G. Metcalf, *Annals of Mendon, from 1659 to 1800* (Providence, 1880), 146.

was on the eastern boundary of Mendon, just north of Rhode Island.[41] On 10 January 1743, John sold "my son Seth Arnold of Smithfield" a one-quarter interest in a sawmill in Mendon at Woonsocket Falls.[42]

John was also an early investor in what is now Glocester, Rhode Island. On 27 May 1729, John Arnold of Providence (this was before Smithfield was formed) sold 15 acres of land "in Providence" on the west side of the Seven Mile Line (present-day Glocester). On 24 August 1733 John Arnold of Smithfield "for love and fatherly affection" deeded 100 acres of land in Glocester to his son Israel Arnold.[43] He was probably the John Arnold of Smithfield who sold land in Glocester on 31 July 1750.[44]

John died at Smithfield 27 October 1756.[45] He wrote his will 5 May 1753 as John Arnold of Smithfield, miller, "being now an ancient man"; the will was proved 1 November 1756. He left his widow Hannah half his homestead and dwelling house for life and £700. He named eight children: William, Daniel, Anthony, Seth, and Israel Arnold; and Mary Lapham, Abigail Bartlett, and Susan Malavery. He also named grandsons Moses, Noah, and David Arnold; and Arnold Pain and Nicholas Lapham. Son Seth received "my part of the sawmill at the falls in Cumberland." The inventory of John's estate included "a gun called a French gun," his Bible, wearing apparel, silver money, books,

---

[41] *Proprietors' Records of the Town of Mendon, Massachusetts* (Boston, 1899), 462, 463, 508, 513, 514, 597, 928; the 1722 land division is in a John Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 13.

[42] Worcester County Deeds, 18:113.

[43] Glocester Deeds, 1:106.

[44] Glocester Deeds, 3:271.

[45] Smithfield Probate, 2:216, and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.

silver plate, porringer, cup and nine spoons, paper money, seven beds, two leather chairs, two churns, woolen wheel, foot wheel, clock, warming pan, pewter, various farm animals, and "three pair of nippers to draw teeth." The inventory was valued at £9,453.[46]

On 5 April 1757, the following children of John Arnold sold their rights to 53 acres of land laid out to him in Glocester on 19 May 1743 on the west side of the Seven Mile Line: William Arnold, Esq., Daniel Arnold, and Seth Arnold, all of Smithfield; and Israel Arnold, Esq., and Abner Bartlett, blacksmith, and Abigail his wife, all of Glocester.[47] On 10 May 1757, Hannah Arnold of Smithfield, widow, sold land that was left to her in her husband's will.[48]

Children of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, presumably born at Providence:[49]

29 i. **William[4] Arnold**, born 9 December 1695

30 ii. **John Arnold**, born 27 July 1697.

31 iii. **Daniel Arnold**, born 1 May 1699.

32 iv. **Mercy Arnold**, born 22 December 1701.

33 v. **Anthony Arnold**, born 12 March 1704.

---

[46] Sanborn, *Register* 146 (1992): 345; also Smithfield Probate, 2:213–219.

[47] Glocester Deeds, 6:298.

[48] Smithfield Deeds, 4:215.

[49] The first six births are at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Narrangansett Friends Births and Deaths, 143; also *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241, and Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 189. Israel and Abigail are named in Glocester Deeds, 6:298.

34 vi. **Seth Arnold**, born 6 September 1706.

35 vii. **Israel Arnold**, born say 1708; married in 1730/1.

36 viii. **Anna Arnold,** born about 1711; married in 1731.

37 ix. **Abigail Arnold**, born about 1714; married in 1734.

38 x. **Susanna Arnold**, born about 1716; married in 1736.

11. **THOMAS[3] ARNOLD** *(Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 4 March 1675/6, a son of Richard and Mary (Angell) Arnold.[50]

He married **ELIZABETH BURLINGAME** at Providence 5 December 1706.[51] Both were of Providence when they appeared at the Monthly Meeting of the Greenwich Society of Friends (later called the Narragansett Friends) to declare their intentions of marriage on 21 8th month [October] 1706.[52] She was born 9 11th month [January] 1683, daughter of Roger and Mary (_____) Burlingame.[53] In his will of 23 November 1715, Roger Burlingame named his son-in-law Thomas Arnold.[54]

After their father died in 1710, Thomas and his brothers Richard and John sold various parcels of land that had belonged to their father.[55]

Thomas was first mentioned in the records of the Greenwich Monthly Meeting of the Society of Friends on 19 9th month [November] 1705, when he was appointed to attend the quarterly meeting.[56] He refused to go on an expedition against Canada in 1711 because he was a Quaker. [57]

The Friends' records show that on 19 4th month [June] 1724 a decision was made to build a meetinghouse in Providence. On 4 9th month [November] 1724, Thomas and Edward Smith were appointed to approve of the frame for the new building before paying the carpenter.[58]

---

[50] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209; 7: Narragansett Friends Births, 143. Some of the information in this sketch is from Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.
[51] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[52] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.
[53] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Births, 143.
[54] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 159.
[55] *Providence Town Records,* 21:82.
[56] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.
[57] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 241.
[58] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 77.

Thomas represented Providence as a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly from 1711 to 1723.[59]

Thomas died 3 February 1726/7 as indicated in his probate records. He wrote his will 29 January 1726/7, naming his wife Elizabeth and six children; it was proved 6 March 1726/7. He left Elizabeth half the homestead for life, "providing shee bring up our children and learn them to Reade and write if capable and if any of them not be capable of taking care for themselves to doo for them as thee think most proper for theire Good." The other half of the homestead went to his eldest child, Job, who was to receive his mother's half on her death. The inventory of Thomas's personal estate was valued at £845; it included twenty-six neat cattle, three horses, two colts, forty-two sheep, ten goats, six swine, guns, gold, and silver.[60]

On 29 December 1729, the five surviving children of Thomas (Job, Jonathan, Thomas, Mary, and Sarah, all of Providence [before Smithfield was formed]), sold land in Providence , on the east side of the Seven Mile Line that had been laid out to their father on 29 November 1723. The purchaser was Isaac Benson (ancestor of the author) of Providence.[61]

Elizabeth then married William Spencer at the Smithfield Society of Friends 11 April 1734.[62] He died in 1748.[63] Elizabeth died 6 May 1752.[64] Elizabeth Spencer of Smithfield, widow, "now an ancient person," wrote her will 22 November 1749; it was proved 22 May 1752. She mentioned her sons Job, Jonathan, and Thomas Arnold; daughters Mary Newell and Sarah Turpin; son Job's daughters Lydia, Sarah, and Kezia; son Jonathan's daughters Mercy, and

---

[59] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.

[60] "Abstracts of Providence Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 100. Also *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241, and Franklin Stuart Coyle, *Welcome Arnold (1745–1798)* (Ann Arbor, Mich., 1980), 4.

[61] Smithfield Deeds, 1:382.

[62] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.

[63] Abstracts of North Kingston Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 105.

[64] Smithfield Probate, 2:80.

Elizabeth; deceased son Thomas's daughters Amy, Huldah, Phebe, and Alice; daughter Mary Newell's daughters Sibel and Elizabeth; and granddaughter Elizabeth Turpin, under age 18. She left her great Bible to son Job and to son Jonathan a book called *Barclay's Apology*. [65] This book was first published in England in 1678 and was widely circulated to defend Quaker doctrines.

Children of Thomas and Elizabeth (Burlingame) Arnold, born in Providence:[66]

39 i. **Job[4] Arnold**, born 6 November 1707.

40 ii. **Jonathan Arnold**, born 18 November 1709.

41 iii. **Mary Arnold**, born 28 October 1710.

42 iv. **Thomas Arnold**, born 4 November 1713.

v. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born 2 April 1717; died 6 January 1727/8.

43 vi. **Sarah Arnold**, born 10 April 1722.

---

[65] Smithfield Probate, 2:78; "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 330.

[66] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*. 2: Providence Births, 209; 7: Narragansett Friends Births, 143.

12. **JONATHAN[3] ARNOLD** *(John[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of John and Hannah Arnold.[67] He may have been born about 1700, figuring from his marriage date of 1724.

He married **ELIZABETH MATHEWS (MATHEWSON)** at Providence, Rhode Island, 27 August 1724.[68] Possibly she was the Elizabeth Mathewson born at Providence 21 December 1706, a daughter of John and Deliverance (Malavery) Mathewson.[69]

Before he was married, on 4 February 1722/3, Jonathan and his mother were named administrators of his father's estate.[70] On 15 April 1723, Jonathan sold a parcel of land in Providence.[71]

Jonathan was of Providence on 20 January 1727/8 when he sold a lot on Town Street of Providence with his dwelling house.[72]

Jonathan was admitted as a freeman in Providence on the fourth Tuesday of May 1730.[73] On 13 March 1730/1, he and others laid out a highway in Providence.[74]

Perhaps he was the Jonathan Arnold who was one of the incorporators of the Benevolent Congregational Society in Providence in October 1770.[75]

Jonathan and Elizabeth lived at Providence, Smithfield, and Johnston, Rhode Island.[76] He was head of a household at Johnston

---

[67] Named in father's probate records, *RIGR* 12 (1989): 162.
[68] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[69] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births, 233. There was also an Elizabeth, daughter of James Mathewson, born at Providence 31 January 1699, but she was not named in her father's will.
[70] *Providence Town Records*, 12:66, 16:228.
[71] Providence Deeds, 5:350.
[72] Providence Deeds, 8:16.
[73] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:435.
[74] *Providence Town Records*, 9:58.
[75] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 7:20.

in 1774 with three males over age 16 and one female over age 16. Jonathan Arnold Jr. was listed in a separate household.[77] The military census taken on 15 April 1777 shows Jonathan Arnold, age 60+ and Jonathan Arnold Jr., age 16–50, at Johnston.[78] Jonathan probably died before 19 September 1778, when his son Jonathan was no longer referred to as Jonathan Jr. in a deed.[79]

Children of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathewson) Arnold:[80]

44 i. **John[4] Arnold.**

ii. **Eleazer Arnold.**[81] He was probably the Eleazer Arnold listed next to his father in Johnston in the 1777 military census, age 16–50, able to serve.[82] No further record.

45 iii. **David Arnold.**

46 iv. **William Arnold.**

47 v. **James Arnold.**

48 vi. **Alice Arnold,** born about 1742; married about 1762.

49 vii. **Jonathan Arnold**, said to have been born 1743.

50 viii. **Thomas Arnold**, born about 1749; died 1799 in 50th year.

---

[76] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432. This source suggests Jonathan died at Johnston around 1770, but as shown above, he was listed in census reports for 1774 and 1777.

[77] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 227.

[78] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 52.

[79] Johnston Deeds, 2:611.

[80] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.

[81] Written in Austin's own copy of *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241, now in the rare book room of the New England Historic Genealogical Society.

[82] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 52.

13. **PHEBE[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born 5 November 1672, daughter of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[83]

She married **THOMAS SMITH** about 1696.[84] He was born 19 February 1670/1,[85] son of Edward and Anphillis (Angell) Smith.[86]

Thomas and Phebe were members of the Society of Friends. On 21 May 1706, Thomas had a hand saw and bell taken from him to pay a fine for not training with the militia, as he was a Quaker.[87] He was mentioned in the records of the Greenwich Society of Friends on 17 12th month [February] 1706/7.[88] On 2 October 1708, Thomas and his brother-in-law, Eleazer Arnold Jr., and Joseph Arnold were among seven men who purchased from his father-in-law one-half acre of land on the west side of the highway leading from Mendon to Providence, on which stood a meetinghouse used by the Quakers of Providence.[89]

On 3 February 1727, Thomas sold his son Thomas Smith, blacksmith, the house and seventy acres "where I now live," providing that Thomas, the father, could possess it for life.[90]

Thomas Smith of Smithfield wrote his will 1 September 1741; he died 2 September of the same year. The will was proved 7 December 1741. He mentioned his wife Phebe Smith; his sons Thomas Smith of Smithfield, John Smith of Smithfield, and Daniel Smith; three daughters, Phebe Smith, wife of Jonathan Smith of Dartmouth, Mary Hawkins, wife of John Hawkins of Smithfield, and Ruth Thornton, wife of Ebenezer Thornton of Smithfield; and

---

[83] Birth date at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Death, 156.

[84] Based on birth of first child in 1697.

[85] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Deaths, 156.

[86] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 379.

[87] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 379.

[88] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.

[89] *Providence Town Records,* 20:284.

[90] *Providence Town Records,* 20:284.

granddaughter Phebe Appleby, under age 18.[91] The inventory of his estate, valued at £158, included books, two spinning wheels, a gun, pewter, flax, a horse, two cows, six sheep, a hog, and three fowls.[92]

Children of Thomas and Phebe (Arnold) Smith, presumably born at Providence:[93]

i. **Thomas Smith**, born 5 December 1697.

ii. **John Smith**, born 7 October 1700.

iii. **Phebe Smith**, born 28 March 1703.

iv. **Mary Smith**, born 22 April 1705.

v. **Hannah Smith**, born 10 April 1707.

vi. **Daniel Smith**, born 29 June 1709.

vii. **Ruth Smith**, born 13 June 1712.

---

[91] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 71.

[92] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 379.

[93] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Deaths, 156.

14. **ELEAZER[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born about 1674 (parents married in 1671, sister born in 1672), a son of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[94]

He married **SARAH HAWKINS,** a daughter of William and Lydia (Ballou) (Gardiner) Hawkins, who were married in 1678.[95] Sarah's brother William married Eleazer's sister Elizabeth.

Eleazer Arnold Jr. was made a freeman of Providence 6 May 1701.[96]

Eleazer was a member of the Society of Friends and was mentioned in the records of the Greenwich Monthly Meeting on 21 11th month [January] 1705/6.[97] On 2 October 1708, Eleazer, his brother-in-law Thomas Smith and his brother Joseph Arnold were among seven men who purchased from Eleazer's father one-half acre of land on the west side of the highway leading from Mendon to Providence, on which stood a meetinghouse used by the Quakers of Providence.[98]

Eleazer died 18 December 1712.[99] Administration of his estate was granted to his widow Sarah on 13 May 1713. The inventory of his estate, taken 6 February 1712/3, included clothing, beds, two spinning wheels, two guns, farm equipment, two horses, four swine, a yoke of oxen, eight cows, a cart and wheels, ten goats, seven barrels of cider, corn, and beans.[100]

On 5 11th month [January] 1712/3 the Greenwich Monthly Meeting of the Society of Friends directed that a record be made of

---

[94] Named as a son in his father's will.
[95] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 243, 318.
[96] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:429.
[97] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.
[98] *Providence Town Records*, 20:284.
[99] *Providence Town Records*, 7:150. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Narragansett Friends Births and Deaths, 143, mistakenly says he died 18 10th month [December] 1710.
[100] *Providence Town Records*, 7:150.

the family of Eleazer Arnold, "he being deceased."[101] No such record has been found.

On 5 November 1731, Sarah Arnold, mother of David Arnold, signed a deed surrendering any right she may have had to David's homestead farm that was sold on that date.[102]

Sarah married second, after 1731, as his first wife, Maturin Ballou. She died before 1759. In his will dated 3 April 1760, Maturin specified that the property brought to his household by his first wife, Sarah, should revert to her two daughters, Susannah, wife of Samuel Ballou, and the widow Patience Brown.[103]

Children of Eleazer and Sarah (Hawkins) Arnold:[104]

51 i. **Eleazer[4] Arnold.**

52 ii. **David Arnold.**

53 iii. **Susanna Arnold**, born perhaps about 1702; married in 1722.

iv. **Lydia Arnold**, probably died before 1760, as she was not mentioned in her stepfather's will.

54 v. **Patience Arnold**, born perhaps about 1708; married about 1728.

---

[101] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.

[102] Smithfield Deeds, 1:27.

[103] William Bradford Browne, "Chad Brown and His Descendants," *Register* 80 (1926): 183.

[104] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 319. It should be noted that Greene's *Arnold* names the children as Eleazer, David, Abigail who married John Mann, and Deborah who married a Smith. The will of Maturin Ballou cited above seems to favor the above list of children. The Abigail Arnold who married John Mann was a sister of Eleazer, and daughter of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold. That Eleazer named her as Abigail Mann in his 1722 will. The Deborah Arnold who married a Smith, according to Greene, has not been identified.

15. **JOSEPH[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born in 1678, son of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[105]

Joseph probably had a first wife who was the mother of his son Eleazer. He was 38 years old when he married **MERCY "MARY" STAFFORD** 20 4th month [June] 1716, at the Narragansett Society of Friends.[106] They had declared intentions at the Monthly Meeting on 2 2nd month [April] 1716.[107] She was born 21 September 1694, daughter of Amos and Mary (Burlingame) Stafford of Warwick, Rhode Island.[108]

Joseph was a member of the Society of Friends. He is mentioned in the records of the Greenwich Monthly Meeting (later known as the Narragansett Friends) on 21 8th month [October] 1706.[109] On 2 October 1708, Joseph, his brother-in-law Thomas Smith, and his brother Eleazer Arnold Jr. were among the seven men who purchased from Joseph's father one half-acre of land on the west side of the highway leading from Mendon to Providence, on which stood a meetinghouse used by the Quakers of Providence.[110]

Presumably as a wedding gift, on 4 June 1716 Joseph's father deeded him, "for love, goodwill and affection," 60 acres of land "on which Joseph's house standeth."[111]

Joseph was a justice of the peace in 1730, a member of the town council in 1733, and town clerk of Smithfield, Rhode Island, in 1743–45.[112]

On 26 May 1741, Joseph deeded land in Smithfield to his son Benjamin. He sold 6 acres of land in Smithfield to his son Amos

---

[105] Named as a son in Eleazer's will. Year of birth from H. Minot Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:65.

[106] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Marriages, 131.

[107] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332 (also called the Narragansett Friends).

[108] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Record,* 1: Warwick Births and Deaths, 203.

[109] Greenwich Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1332.

[110] *Providence Town Records,* 20:284.

[111] Providence Deeds, 2:537.

[112] Steere, *History of Smithfield,* 199.

"adjoining my land on both sides of the Moshassuck River on 20 July 1744. On 27 March 1746 he deeded half an acre of land "containing the meeting house of the people called Quakers in Smithfield, near the dwelling house where he now dwelleth." On the day he wrote his will, 13 May 1746, he deeded 28 acres of land to his son Caleb.[113]

Joseph died at Smithfield 4 November 1746.[114] His will, dated 13 May 1746, was proved 17 November 1746. He mentioned his wife Mercy; his sons, Benjamin, Caleb, Joshua, Nathan, Stuckeley, Samuel (the last four under age 21), Amos, and Joseph; and daughters Deborah and Mercy. Benjamin received 25 acres of land in Smithfield. Caleb received 10 acres plus rights to certain undivided land. The four young sons received his homestead except for 2 acres left to Amos. The executors were to improve his rights and interest in the sawmill and lime kiln.[115]

In June 1747, Mercy Arnold, widow, and her son Benjamin successfully brought suit to collect sums from Job Comstock in the Providence County Court of Common Pleas.[116]

The death of "Marcy Arnold, widow of Joseph Arnold" at Smithfield, aged 86 years, was noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 18 December 1779.[117]

Son of Joseph Arnold and probably an earlier wife, probably born at Providence:

i. **Eleazer[4] Arnold**, According to his probate records, Eleazer Arnold late of Smithfield enlisted in His Majesty's service and went to Cape Breton, Nova Scotia, where he died 26 October 1745. His personal

---

[113] Smithfield Deeds, 2:23, 280, 446, 432.

[114] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89; also Smithfield Probate, 1:338.

[115] Smithfield Probate, 1:330. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 72.

[116] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 2:478.

[117] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette, 130.

estate – which included apparel, boards and timber, tools, and books – was left to his brother Amos Arnold.[118]

Children of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold, presumably born in that part of Providence that became Smithfield:[119]

55 ii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 30 April 1717.

56 iii. **Benjamin Arnold**, born 16 March 1719.

57 iv. **Amos Arnold**, born 29 March 1721.

v. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born 10 April 1723; died 26 October 1745.[120] Not mentioned in father's 1746 will.[121]

58 vi. **Caleb Arnold**, born 26 May 1725.

59 vii. **Deborah Arnold**, born 15 May 1727.

60 viii. **Joshua Arnold**, born 14 July 1729.

61 ix. **Nathan Arnold**, born about 1731.[122]

62 x. **Mercy Arnold**, born 22 April 1734.[123]

63 xi. **Stuckeley Arnold**, born 22 September 1735.[124]

64 xii. **Samuel Arnold**, born Smithfield, 12 5th month [July] 1736.[125]

---

[118] Smithfield Probate, 1:308. Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345. Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:118, says his brother Amos went to Cape Breton to bring his body back to Rhode Island.

[119] Joseph through Joshua from Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 209, 210. Others listed in their father's will.

[120] Greene, "Arnold Family," 31.

[121] She was not the Elizabeth who married David Bucklin in 1759 as indicated in Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:119. Other sources indicate that the Elizabeth Arnold who married David Bucklin was a daughter of Jeremiah and Freelove Arnold and that Elizabeth was still alive well into the 1760s.

[122] Named in father's will. Birth date from Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:118.

[123] Named in father's will. Date of birth from *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:118.

[124] Named in father's will. Date of birth from *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:118.

[125] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends, 245.

16. **JOHN[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[126]

John married **SARAH _____ (PHILIPS?)** by 1733 (based on birth of eldest son, Enoch, about 1734). Perhaps she was a widow of a Philips and the Zephaniah Philips mentioned below was her son by that earlier marriage. Zephaniah was born 1730 or after (under age 21 in 1751).

As John Arnold Jr., he sold parcels of land in Smithfield on 7 December 1739, 1 October 1740, and 14 March 1745/6.[127]

John died at Smithfield, Rhode Island 22 February 1752.[128] His will, dated 1 October 1751 and proved 31 March 1752, named his wife Sarah as. He left one third of the "homestead farm where I now dwell" to his son Enoch. The other two thirds were left to his three other sons, Comfort, Zebedee, and Christopher, who were under age 21. The farm, in Smithfield, contained 200 acres of land. John directed that the rest of his land be sold to pay debts and "the upbringing of my young children." Daughter Mary received £200 and "son-in-law" (perhaps this means stepson in modern terminology) Zephaniah Philips £80, to be paid when he reached the age of 21. His nephew Benjamin Arnold was to have the care and oversight of the land during the infancy of John's sons.[129]

In June 1764, John and Sarah's eldest son, Enoch, brought suit against three of his younger brothers to resolve an issue in the partition of their father's 200 acres of land in Smithfield. Enoch claimed he should inherit half. His brothers Comfort, Zebedee, and Christopher were all under age 21. Comfort and Zebedee, who were over age 14, chose their first cousin, Jeremiah Arnold Jr. of

---

[126] Named as a son in Eleazer's will.

[127] Smithfield Deeds, 1:566, 586, 2:370.

[128] Smithfield Probate, 2:72. Also Sanborn, *Register* 146 (1992): 348.

[129] Smithfield Probate, 2:72. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 329.

Smithfield, as their guardian in the matter, and the court appointed him as guardian of Christopher, who was under age 14.[130]

Children of John and Sarah Arnold:[131]

65 i. **Enoch[4] Arnold**, born about 1734; died 22 March 1815, in his 81st year.

66 ii. **Comfort Arnold**, born about 1743 (based on age at death on tombstone).

67 iii. **Zebedee Arnold**, born after 1743 (under age 21 in 1764).

68 iv. **Mary Arnold**, born about 1747; married 1767.

69 v. **Christopher Arnold**, probably born about 1751 (based on age at death), and probably before 1 October 1751, when his father wrote his will.

---

[130] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 5:57.

[131] Based on will and handwritten in author's own copy of *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island* in the rare book room of the New England Historic Genealogical Society.

17. **ELIZABETH[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born about 1684 (married in 1704), a daughter of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[132]

She married first **WILLIAM HAWKINS JR.** at Providence, Rhode Island, 14 December 1704.[133] He was born probably about 1679, son of William and Lydia (Ballou) (Gardiner) Hawkins, who were married in 1678.[134] Elizabeth's brother Eleazer married William's sister Sarah. William was named in the will of his father, William "Hawkings" of Providence; dated 17 March 1721/2, the will mentions son William, deceased, and grandsons Elijah and Joseph, sons of William, deceased.[135]

As indicated in his probate records, William Jr. died 8 October 1712, when he was about 33 years old, leaving four small children and a pregnant wife. On 9 December 1712, the administration of his estate was granted to Elizabeth. His inventory included four cows, two steers, a mare, two colts, 200 pounds of tobacco, a cider mill, a gun, two spinning wheels, six barrels of cider, soap, a warming pan, and books.[136]

Elizabeth Hawkins, widow, married second **ISRAEL SMITH** at Providence 3 June 1718.[137] Israel was born at Providence 13 January 1689/90, a son of Joseph (a weaver) and Lydia (____) Smith.[138]

As indicated in Elizabeth's will, Israel was a cooper (barrel maker).

On 13 July 1720, the Providence Town Council granted a tavern license to Israel Smith. It was renewed 10 March 1721/2.[139] On 13

---

[132] Named as Elizabeth Smith in her father's will of 1722.

[133] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7. Also *Providence Town Records,* 5:331.

[134] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 318.

[135] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 164.

[136] *Providence Town Records,* 7:142, 10:127.

[137] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 171.

[138] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 245. Also *Providence Town Records,* 5:279.

[139] *Providence Town Records,* 12:16, 32.

December 1720, Israel reported that he had found a stray mare in Providence.[140]

Israel died intestate 20 January 1726/7, and Elizabeth was again left with a family of several small children.[141] In his will of 26 October 1742, Joseph Smith of Providence named his son Israel Smith, deceased, leaving widow Elizabeth and grandson Stephen, son of Israel.[142]

Elizabeth Smith of Glocester, Rhode Island, died 11 July 1758. Her will, dated 1 July 1758, was proved 17 July 1758. She named her son Stephen Smith and grandson William Hawkins as executors. She left to her son Stephen Smith all the cooper's tools that belonged to her husband; to daughters Ruth Hopkins and Deborah Wal, a feather bed; to daughter Elizabeth Mann a chest of drawers; and to daughter Naomi Angell a table and £5. Son Elijah's children were left nothing, "he having had his part." Granddaughter Elizabeth Hawkins received silver sleeve buttons and granddaughter Martha Smith received sleeve buttons.[143]

Children of William Jr. and Elizabeth (Arnold) Hawkins, born at Providence:[144]

i. **Elijah Hawkins**, born 12 September 1705.

ii. **Uriah Hawkins**, born 30 July 1707; died 20 February 1708.

iii. **Joseph Hawkins**, born 29 March 1709.

iv. **Ruth Hawkins**, born 14 March 1710/11.

v. **Deborah Hawkins**, born 15 May 1713.

---

[140] *Providence Town Records*, 9:154.

[141] Charles William Farnham, "John Smith the Miller of Providence, Rhode Island," *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals* (Baltimore, 1983), 2:30, citing Providence Probate, 3:124.

[142] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 4 (1981): 156.

[143] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 319.

[144] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*. 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 227. Also *Providence Town Records*, 5:331.

Children of Israel and Elizabeth (Arnold) (Hawkins) Smith, born at Providence:[145]

vi. **Stephen Smith**, born 6 May 1719.

vii. **Naomi Smith**, born 28 October 1720.

viii. **Elizabeth Smith**, born 8 October 1722.

ix. **Israel Smith**, born 22 March 1724/5.

---

[145] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 245.

18. **MARY**[3] **ARNOLD** *(Eleazer*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was a daughter of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[146] She was probably born about 1697, based on her marriage date.

Mary Arnold of Eleazer and Eleanor of Providence married **GEORGE THOMAS** of Portsmouth at the Narragansett Society of Friends 29 9th month [November] 1717.[147] George was probably a son of George Thomas of Portsmouth, who was born at Newport, Rhode Island, in November 1694.[148]

Mary was mentioned as Mary Thomas in her father's will dated 25 August 1722.[149]

George was in Portsmouth in 1730 heading a household of five persons.[150]

George Thomas of Portsmouth, carpenter, wrote his will 26 May 1753 and it was proved 12 April 1756. He died 11 March 1756, as indicated in his probate records. He named his wife Mary Thomas; his sons, George, Richard, Benjamin, Abraham, and Arnold; and daughters Sarah Sherman, wife of Sampson Sherman, Mary Willcox, wife of Stephen Willcox, and Abigail Thomas, who was single.[151]

Children of George and Mary (Arnold) Thomas, as named in George's will:

i. **Sarah Thomas,** born perhaps in 1718; married in 1736.[152]

ii. **George Thomas.**

iii. **Richard Thomas.**

---

[146] Named as Mary Thomas in her father's will.
[147] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Narragansett Record of Friends, 140.
[148] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 4: Newport Births and Deaths, 118.
[149] *RIGR* 12 (1989): 162.
[150] Ruth W. Sherman, "1730 Census of Portsmouth, R. I.," *Rhode Island Roots* 7 (1984): 17.
[151] "Portsmouth Wills," *RIGR* 11 (1988): 85.
[152] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 4: Portsmouth Marriages, 45.

iv. **Benjamin Thomas.**

v. **Abraham Thomas.**

vi. **Arnold Thomas.**

vii. **Mary Thomas.**

viii. **Abigail Thomas.**

19. **JEREMIAH[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was said to have been born in what became Smithfield, Rhode Island, in 1700, a son of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[153]

He married **FREELOVE** _____, about 1721, based on the date of birth of their first child.[154]

Jeremiah was a freeman at Providence on 30 April 1723.[155] He was named a fence viewer there 1 June 1724 and 7 June 1725.[156]

Jeremiah and his brothers Joseph and John were appointed to administer the estate of their father, Eleazer Arnold, on 14 January 1722/3.[157]

Jeremiah inherited his father's dwelling house and homestead lands and meadow lying on the north side of the Moshassuck River and reaching easterly to the Great Valley, as well as 14 acres of a "twenty-acre lott on the plaine by Jonathan Spreagues land."[158] The dwelling house became known as the Stone Chimney House; it still stands today. Jeremiah sold it on 7 December 1736 to a cousin, Job Arnold, who married, as his second wife, Jeremiah's daughter Freelove.[159]

At the first town meeting of the Town of Smithfield, Rhode Island, on 17 March 1730/1, Jeremiah and two others were chosen as overseers of the poor.[160] He was made a freeman of Smithfield on 4 February 1733/4.[161] He served as ensign of the first militia company of Smithfield from 1742 through 1747.[162]

---

153 Greene, "Arnold Family," 16. This is probably more reliable than Pitman's "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66, which claims he was born in 1680.
154 The name Freelove appears in deeds cited in this entry.
155 Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:326.
156 *Providence Town Records*, 13:27, 31.
157 *Providence Town Records*, 12:66.
158 *Providence Town Records*, 16:214.
159 Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.
160 Steere, *History of Smithfield*, 25.
161 *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:491–492.
162 Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island*, 1:90, 95, 101, 13, 120.

Jeremiah and Freelove sold parcels of land in Providence (before Smithfield was formed) on 20 July 1728 and 1 January 1730/1.[163] They sold land in Smithfield on 13 November 1735, 7 December 1736, and 28 May 1746.[164]

Jeremiah was on a 1748 road list in Smithfield.[165] He was called Jeremiah Arnold of Smithfield in two lawsuits of June 1748.[166] On 11 November 1748, Jeremiah and Freelove deeded their son Jeremiah Arnold Jr. 70 acres of land in Smithfield, including "one half of my homestead farm where I now dwell."[167]

Jeremiah Arnold was recognized as a freeman in Cumberland, Rhode Island, in 1752.[168] As Jeremiah Arnold of Cumberland he sold land in Smithfield 8 June 1752.[169] Jeremiah Arnold of Cumberland was a party to litigation in December 1753.[170] He entered into three real estate transactions in Cumberland in 1755.[171] In June 1764, John Metcalf of Bellingham, Massachusetts, sued Jeremiah Arnold of Smithfield in an action of trespass and ejectment regarding 100 acres of land in Cumberland. The suit was withdrawn, and Jeremiah was awarded court costs.[172] On 18 April 1769 he was called Jeremiah Arnold of Providence, cooper (barrel maker) when he sold land in Cumberland.[173]

---

[163] Providence Deeds, 8:236, 238, 9:20.
[164] Smithfield Deeds, 1:234, 298, 2:464.
[165] Steere, *History of Smithfield,* 20.
[166] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 2:526.
[167] Smithfield Deeds, 3:168.
[168] Bruce C. MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen, 1747–1755* (Baltimore, 1977), 12.
[169] Smithfield Deeds, 3:285.
[170] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 3:252.
[171] Cumberland Deeds, 2:253, 256, 257.
[172] Cumberland Deeds, 5:57.
[173] Cumberland Deeds, 5:27.

Jeremiah died before 13 March 1775, when letters of administration were granted to his son-in-law, Job Arnold, who was his largest creditor.[174]

Children of Jeremiah and Freelove (_____) Arnold, born at what became Smithfield, Rhode Island:[175]

39 i. **Freelove[4] Arnold**, born 10 January 1722.

70 ii. **Jeremiah Arnold**, born 1725.[176]

71 iii. **Lavina Arnold**, born 11 November 1727.

iv. **Oliver Arnold**, born 21 April 1730. No further record.

72 v. **James Arnold**, born 4 August 1733.

73 vi. **Sarah Arnold**, born 1 February 1736.

vii. **Eleazer Arnold**, born 10 July 1739. No further record.

74 viii. **Charles Arnold**, born 1743.

75 ix. **Elizabeth Arnold**, perhaps a daughter.

---

[174] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:68.

[175] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240, lists the first eight in author's own copy in the rare book collection of the New England Historic Genealogical Society. The Pitman article also lists Elizabeth and an Amy, saying "perhaps," but the Amy identified was a daughter of another family.

[176] Austin shows his birth date as 12 March 1735, but that is less than nine months before the birth of Sarah and would make him too young to marry in 1744. Pitman shows 1725, without day and month.

20. **ABIGAIL[3] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a daughter of Eleazer and Eleanor (Smith) Arnold.[177] She was probably born about 1700, based on her marriage date.

She married **JOHN MAN** 29 June 1720.[178] He was born probably at Providence, Rhode Island, before 12 July 1694, a son of Thomas and Mary (Wheaton) Man.[179] In his will of 12 July 1694, Thomas Man of Providence left his son John his land at Palmer River, a £50 estate of common land in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, and meadowland.[180] John's parents moved to Providence after 16 February 1691/2, when a child's birth was recorded in Rehoboth.[181]

Abigail was mentioned as Abigail Mann in her father's will dated 25 August 1722.[182]

On 19 May 1746, John purchased the 100-acre farm in Smithfield of his brother Thomas Man for £1,000.[183] John also purchased a farm in Smithfield, Rhode Island (present-day Lincoln), from his brother Daniel.[184]

John was listed in the Smithfield 1777 military census as age 60 or more.[185]

In 1778, "John Man and Son" were taxed at Smithfield on a farm that included four houses, 14 ounces of silver plate, two horses, two oxen, eight horned cattle, eighteen sheep/goats, six swine, 16

---

[177] Named as Abigail Mann in her father's will.

[178] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Marriages, 7. The marriage record calls him John Mann, but the birth records of his children and his will call him John Man.

[179] George Sumner Mann, *Mann Memorial* (Boston, 1884), 30.

[180] *Providence Town Records*, 7:184.

[181] James N. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* (Providence, 1897), 670, shows the births of seven children to Thomas and Mary from 1679, not including John.

[182] *RIGR* 12 (1989): 162.

[183] Smithfield Deeds, 2:448.

[184] Mann, *Mann Memorial*, 30.

[185] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 90.

acres of pasture to keep three cows, 6 acres under tillage producing 30 bushels of grain, 1 acre of orchard producing 5 barrels of cider, 20 acres of meadow producing 4 tons of English hay and 4 tons of fresh hay, and 60 acres of wood and waste land for a total of 103 acres, valued at £81 for the personal estate and £488 for the real estate.[186]

On 22 9th month, [November] 1778, John sold the 100 acres of land he had purchased from his father and other land he had acquired in 1760 and 1769 for £500 to William Buffum and David Man of Smithfield and Joab Man of Glocester.[187]

John died 7 12th month [February] 1782[/3?].[188] In his will, dated 6 March 1775, he is named as John Man of Smithfield, Rhode Island, "far advanced in years"; the will was proved 19 May 1783. His wife Abigail had evidently passed away, as the will did not mention her. It does mention John's son John Man, as well as daughters Abigail Ballard, deceased, leaving unnamed children; Sarah Man, "who is to be maintained"; Mary Lapham; and Dorcas Herendeen.[189]

Children of John and Abigail (Arnold) Man, born at Smithfield:[190]

i. **Abigail Man**, born 11 December 1720.

ii. **Sarah Man**, born 13 November 1723.

iii. **Mary Man**, born 6 September 1726.

iv. **Dorcas Man**, born 27 June 1731.

v. **John Man**, born 13 December 1734.

---

[186] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 22 (1996): 21.
[187] Smithfield Deeds, 4:419, 6:210, 7:220.
[188] Sanborn, *Register* 146 (1992): 348.
[189] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 35.
[190] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 103.

THE FOURTH GENERATION

21. **JOSEPH[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 20 April 1700, a son of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold.[1]

He married **PATIENCE WILKINSON** at the Smithfield, Rhode Island, Society of Friends 26 1st month [March] 1725. She was born 9 June 1704, a daughter of Samuel Wilkinson Jr. and a sister of Ruth Wilkinson, who married Joseph's brother Woodward in 1729, and David Wilkinson, who married Joseph's sister Mary.[2]

On 5 September 1729, Joseph purchased the interest of his brother Woodward Arnold in the homestead and dwelling house in Providence of their grandfather, Joseph Woodward.[3] He purchased the homestead farm in Smithfield of his brother Richard on 5 June 1733.[4] Both brothers had left town and abandoned their families.

Joseph's father deeded him 25 acres of land on the northeast side of Woonsocket Hill on 20 October 1731.[5]

When Smithfield was incorporated as a separate town in 1731, Joseph was chosen with John Sayles to settle up accounts with Providence. In 1732 he was elected as town clerk, a position he also held from 1742 to his death in 1745. He was said to be an ardent and conscientious anti-slavery man, so much so that on his

---

[1] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[2] *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162. *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 425.
[3] Smithfield Deeds, 2:461.
[4] Smithfield Deeds, 1:127.
[5] Smithfield Deeds, 1:43.

visits to the Newport Yearly Meetings he would not stop at the hotel or home of those who held slaves.[6]

Joseph kept an inn, at what became known as Woonsocket Cross-roads in Smithfield. He was licensed 26 March 1733. After he died in 1745, his widow, Patience, continued operating the inn until September 1773. The local history says, "Here courts were held and fed, town councils assembled and soldiers for the old French War were recruited and quartered."[7]

On 8 November 1744, Joseph's father deeded him "the homestead farm where I now dwell, containing 60 acres."[8]

Joseph died at Smithfield 16 December 1745.[9] He called himself Joseph Arnold Jr., of Smithfield, yeoman, when he wrote his will 10 December 1745; it was proved 15 January 1745 [/46]. He named his father, Richard Arnold (who actually died just a few days after the will was written); his wife, Patience Arnold; his sons Jacob, William, and Caleb, all under age 21; and his daughters Mercy, Phebe, Patience, and Philadelphia, all also under age 21. He provided that his wife, Patience, "should put out his son Caleb to some profitable trade that he inclines to when he shall attain the age of fourteen years."[10]

Widow Patience Arnold was on a 1748 highway list of Smithfield.[11]

On the second Wednesday of May 1749, Patience signed a receipt as executor of the estate of Joseph Arnold for amounts received from Thomas Arnold, administrator of the estate of Joseph's father, Richard Arnold.[12]

---

[6] Thomas Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield* (Providence, 1881), 71.
[7] Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield*, 71.
[8] Smithfield Deeds, 2:332.
[9] Sanborn, "Smithfield Rhode Island Deaths," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.
[10] Smithfield Probate, 1:269. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 71.
[11] Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield*, 30.
[12] Smithfield Probate, 1:415.

On 1 June 1752, as executrix, Patience sold for £4,000 "all the homestead farm where I now dwell, about 80 acres" to Israel Wilkinson. However, she purchased the farm back on 25 November 1752 for £4,500 on behalf of her son Caleb, who was then 17.[13] On 15 March 1761, Patience's son Jacob sold his brother Caleb one-half the land his father had purchased from William Comstock.[14] The next day Jacob sold the other half to his mother, Patience.[15] On 10 April 1763, Patience sold Caleb "the half of the homestead farm where I now dwell that I purchased from my son Jacob."[16]

Patience filed an accounting for her husband's estate 6 April 1767, showing details of disbursements from 1745 of £4,105.[17]

Patience died at Smithfield 15 6th month [June] 1787, aged 82 years 9 months 27 days, as the widow of Joseph.[18] Her obituary in the *Providence Gazette* says she was age 84.[19] Arnold Pain was the administrator of Patience's estate and had an unusually difficult time involving much litigation. His accounting, filed in December 1793 — six years after Patience's death — mentioned two meetings with the heirs, meeting with the Town Council, and trips to Providence "when the Doctor sued me" and when he sued two persons who owed money to the estate. He made distributions to William Arnold, Philadelphia Arnold, Oliver Man, and Phebe Comstock.[20]

Children of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold, births recorded at Smithfield:[21]

i. **Stephen[5] Arnold**, born 30 November 1725, died 7 January 1726.

---

[13] Smithfield Deeds, 5:93. 119.
[14] Smithfield Deeds, 8:240.
[15] Smithfield Deeds, 8:241.
[16] Smithfield Deeds, 8:242.
[17] Smithfield Probate, 2:534.
[18] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 182.
[19] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[20] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 447.
[21] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88

76 ii. **Mercy Arnold**, born 19 April 1727.

iii. **Joseph Arnold,** born 27 November 1728, died 15 December 1728.[22]

77 iv. **Phebe Arnold**, born 18 November 1729.

78 v. **Jacob Arnold**, born 7 July 1732.

79 vi. **William Arnold**, born 30 November 1733.

80 vii. **Caleb Arnold**, born 21 March 1735.

81 viii. **Patience Arnold**, born 14 May 1738.

82 ix. **Philadelphia Arnold**, born 12 January 1740.

---

[22] Name and dates are from Greene, "Arnold Family," 60. Does not appear in Smithfield records.

22. **RICHARD[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 10 April 1702, a son of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold.[23]

He married **RUTH ALDRICH** at the Smithfield, Rhode Island, Society of Friends 19 5th month [July] 1722. She was born in 1691 at Braintree, Massachusetts, a daughter of Samuel and Jane (Puffer) Aldrich.[24] Her family had moved to Providence by 6 May 1701, when her father was admitted as a freeman.[25]

Richard's father deeded land to his various sons, including 60 acres to Richard, on 11 May 1731.[26]

The next year, things started to break down in Richard's life. On 29 4th month [June] 1732 the Smithfield Society of Friends noted that[27]

> Richard Arnold Jr. was in times past under the care of Friends and of late his conversation is disagreeable and contrary to our profession, notwithstanding the care and labour Friends have taken with him which the meeting taking into our consideration refer this matter to the next monthly meeting.

The records continue on 28 7th month [September] 1732:

> Richard Arnold Jr. still refusing to take the advice of Friends this meeting concludes to denye him as a member of the meeting and accordingly has drawn up and signed a paper of condemnation against him and the same is appointed to be read in a public meeting in Smithfield.

On 5 June 1733, Richard sold his homestead farm "where I now dwell," on the east side of Woonsocket Hill, to his brother Joseph

---

[23] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241. Date from Greene, "Arnold Family," 21.

[24] *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162; Alvin James Aldrich, *The George Aldrich Genealogy*, 6 vols. (Decorah, Iowa, 1971–1988), 1:41.

[25] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 3:429.

[26] Smithfield Deeds, 1:52.

[27] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.

for £180.[28] The next day Richard left his family, and it is said that he went to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.[29] His father's will of 6 September 1735 left £40 to "Richard's wife Ruth" and nothing to Richard.[30] On 13 November 1740, Richard's brother Joseph sold Ruth 60 acres of land on the east side of Woonsocket Hill, "where said Ruth now dwells."[31]

On 1 June 1743, Ruth was ready to enter into her second marriage. Perhaps she was uncertain about her husband-to-be. On that day, calling herself Ruth Arnold of Smithfield, "widow," she deeded the 80-acre homestead on which she lived to her minor sons, Richard and Stephen.[32]

Three days later, on 4 June 1743, Ruth married second Thomas Man at Smithfield.[33] He was probably the Thomas Man who was born at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, 24 January 1684/5, a son of Thomas and Mary (Wheaton) Man.[34] His parents moved to Rhode Island before his father wrote his will on 12 July 1694, in which he was called their eldest son, under age 21.[35] He first married Mary Whiting and had children born between 1713 and 1733.[36]

On 10 December 1744, the Smithfield town council noted that Richard Arnold had left the colony on 6 June 1733 and that, since he had not been heard from for many years, he was assumed deceased. His son-in-law Gideon Comstock, husband of his daughter Ruth, was appointed administrator of the estate.[37] It was

---

[28] Smithfield Deeds, 1:127.
[29] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.
[30] Richard Arnold will and book of writings 1725–1735, Duke University Special Collections Library, OCLC 73282792.
[31] Smithfield Deeds, 1:589.
[32] Smithfield Deeds, 2:319.
[33] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[34] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth, 1642–1896*, 47.
[35] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 156.
[36] Mann, *Mann Memorial*, 30.
[37] Smithfield Probate, 1:256.

said that his sons Richard and Stephen applied to the council to have a guardian appointed in 1744.[38]

As administrator, Gideon Comstock brought charges in June 1745 in the Court of Common Pleas in Providence against Thomas Man "late of Smithfield," for "taking and carrying away the personal estate of the said Richard Arnold."[39] The case was again tried on the third Tuesday of June 1746. On the first Tuesday of September 1746, a jury for the Superior Court at Newport upheld the verdict and awarded the estate £275 plus court costs of £21.[40] Thomas evidently did not pay the judgment. On 13 January 1746[/7], Thomas Man, "now a prisoner in His Majesty's Gaol in Providence," petitioned the Rhode Island General Assembly. He stated that he *was* [emphasis added] married to Ruth Arnold, the reputed widow of Richard Arnold. He petitioned to obtain a portion of the estate, but the petition was dismissed 30 October 1747.[41]

Before the trials discussed above, Thomas sold several parcels of land in Smithfield. On 16 May 1745, he sold 100 acres of land, "part of my homestead where I now dwell" for £617. On 31 December 1745, he sold 120 acres of land for £280. On 17 April 1746 he sold land to his son John Man of Smithfield, blacksmith, for £140. On 19 May 1746, Thomas Man "of Smithfield" sold the 100-acre farm in Smithfield "where I now dwell" to his brother John Man for £1,000.[42] Having sold land for so much money, it is a mystery why he ended up in jail for not having paid the judgment against him.

On 12 April 1749, Gideon Comstock of Providence filed an inventory of Richard Arnold's estate at Smithfield showing as an asset the £296 judgment, not yet paid.[43]

---

[38] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.

[39] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 2:278, 3:377.

[40] Rhode Island Superior Court, first Tuesday of September 1746, FHL microfilm #945808.

[41] Petitions to the Rhode Island General Assembly, 5:120, FHL microfilm #947779.

[42] Smithfield Deeds, 2:385, 460, 372, 448.

[43] Smithfield Probate, 1:413.

We have not found a record of Ruth's death. Thomas Man died at Smithfield 24 October 1754.[44]

Children of Richard and Ruth (Aldrich) Arnold:[45]

83 i. **Ruth[5] Arnold**, born 1724.[46]

84 ii. **Jane Arnold.**

iii. **Richard Arnold**. His mother deeded her homestead farm to him and Stephen in 1743. On 4 April 1754, John Aldrich of Smithfield sold Stephen Arnold 40 acres of land that had been deeded to Arnold by his mother, Ruth Arnold.[47] No further record.

85 iv. **Stephen Arnold**, born at Smithfield 23 April 1728.[48]

v. **Samuel Arnold**, born about 1730. Probably died before 1743 since he did not share in his mother's homestead farm.

---

[44] Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 348, citing Smithfield Probate, 2:158.
[45] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.
[46] Greene, "Arnold Family," 61.
[47] Smithfield Deeds, 4:406.
[48] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.

23. **THOMAS[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 19 February 1705, a son of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold.[49]

He married first **SUSANNAH COMSTOCK** about 1729 (based on the birth date of their first child). Susannah was born 7 April 1707, a daughter of Hezediah and Catharine (Pray) Comstock. She died 30 June 1736.[50]

He married second **MARY MAN** at Smithfield, Rhode Island 14 November 1739.[51] She died 16 April 1747.[52] She may have been a daughter of Daniel Man of Smithfield who died in 1744.[53] Alternatively, she could have been the Mary Mann, born 2 August 1715, daughter of Thomas and Mary (Whiting) Mann.[54]

He married third **PATIENCE COOK,** probably about 1749. She was born probably at Newport, Rhode Island, about 1720,[55] a daughter of Peleg and Martha (Jencks) Cook.[56] She died at Smithfield 7 August 1805, aged 85 years.[57]

Thomas was known as Judge Thomas Arnold.[58]

Thomas's father deeded him 60 acres of land on 8 December 1729 "where his house now stands, partly bounded by the meeting house land."[59]

---

[49] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 241.
[50] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 190.
[51] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.
[52] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 190.
[53] This is based on the 1744 deed in which Thomas sold his interest in the real estate of Daniel Man. However, Mary was not listed as a daughter in Mann, *Mann Memorial,* 30, or in *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island.*
[54] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 129.
[55] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 190.
[56] Jane Fletcher Fiske, *Thomas Cook of Rhode Island* (Boxford, Mass., 1987), 1:133.
[57] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 133.
[58] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 133.
[59] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 241.

On 19 October 1731, Thomas entered into an agreement with others regarding a road being built in the neighborhood. As part of the agreement, he and his brother Woodward agreed to build a "good cart bridge over the Woonsocket River," and mend the highway on either side of the bridge "so a loaded cart may pass."[60]

On 27 December 1731, Thomas's father deeded him rights to a 16-acre division of land not yet laid out. In 1733, his father deeded him two additional parcels of land in Smithfield containing 10 and 20 acres.[61] In 1733, he also purchased 14 acres of land in Smithfield from his cousin Daniel Arnold.[62]

On 27 March 1745, Thomas Arnold of Smithfield sold all of his rights to the real estate of Daniel Man, late of Smithfield his father-in-law, including his homestead farm and land in Smithfield and Glocester, excepting the farm he purchased of Andrew Man of Smithfield on 11 March 1744.[63]

Thomas died 11 December 1765.[64] "Thomas Arnold of Smithfield, Esq." had written his will 16 April 1765; it was proved 13 December 1765. His wife, Patience Arnold, was left the use and income of "my homestead farm where I now dwell for the support and education of my young children." She also received his best feather bed and furniture, as well as the rest of his personal estate not left to others. Son Peleg was left land when he reached age 21, son John was left a dwelling house in Cumberland, Rhode Island, and three-eighths of his forge, land, and "cole house." Daughter Mary Aldrich received one-eighth of the forge. Daughter Katherine Arnold received £36. Six daughters under age 18 were mentioned: Lydia, Martha, Naomi, Hannah, Sarah, and Patience. His grandson, Asa Arnold, son of Thomas,

---

[60] Smithfield Deeds, 1:12.

[61] Smithfield Deeds, 1:42, 93.

[62] Smithfield Deeds, 1:384.

[63] Glocester Deeds, 3:125; Smithfield Deeds, 2:384. The Andrew Man purchase is at Smithfield Deeds, 2:387.

[64] Smithfield Probate, 2:485. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.

was left 2 acres of land in Smithfield. He mentioned a 40-acre tract of land in Smithfield at a place called the White Oak Island and another 60 acres at "Wansocket Hole" at the southern end of Blackplain, Smithfield, both of which were to go to son Peleg when he became of age. He left land and a dwelling in Cumberland and "Wansocket Falls" to son John.[65]

"Patience Arnold, widow of Thomas," was listed at Smithfield in the 1774 Rhode Island census with a household of two females under age 16 and one female over age 16.[66]

Children of Thomas and Susannah (Comstock) Arnold, presumably all born at Smithfield:[67]

86 i. **Mary[5] Arnold**, born 2 October 1730.

ii. **Susannah Arnold**, born 12 January 1731/2; died 22 June 1736.

87 iii. **Thomas Arnold**, born 8 October 1733.

88 iv. **Catherine Arnold**, born 24 September 1735.

Children of Thomas and Mary (Man) Arnold:

v. **Asa Arnold**, born 28 August 1738; died 7 December 1740.

89 vi. **John Arnold**, born 22 January 1741.

Children of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold, presumably all born at Smithfield:

90 vii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 16 October 1749.

91 viii. **Peleg Arnold**, born 10 June 1751.

---

[65] Smithfield Probate, 2:481. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 302.

[66] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.

[67] All children through Peleg recorded on 9 February 1753 in Smithfield Council Book, vol. 1, FHL microfilm #959528. Also at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88. The other daughters were named in their father's will.

92 ix. **Naomi Arnold**, born about 1752 (married in 1772).

x. **Martha Arnold**, born about 1753, based on age at death, married **Seth Arnold** (#118) and **Caleb Arnold** (#80) .

93 xi. **Hannah Arnold**, born about 1756, based on age at death.

94 xii. **Sarah Arnold**, born about 1756 (married in 1776).

95 xiii. **Patience Arnold**, born about 1758 (married in 1778).

24. **WOODWARD[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 8 October 1707, a son of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold.[68]

He married **RUTH WILKINSON** 12 1st month [March] 1729.[69] They declared their intentions of marriage at the Smithfield Society of Friends on 4 12th month [February] 1729.[70] She was born in 1715, a daughter of Samuel Wilkinson, Jr., and a sister both of Patience Wilkinson, who married Woodward's brother Joseph in 1725, and of David Wilkinson, who married Woodward's sister Mary.[71]

Before Woodward was married, his grandfather, Joseph Woodward, wrote his will 16 September 1724 (which was proved 31 March 1725/6). He left his homestead in Providence and a parcel of meadow in Attleborough, Massachusetts, to Woodward and his cousin Woodward Lovit, to be equally divided between them.[72] On 5 September 1729, Woodward sold his interest in the homestead and dwelling house in Providence of his grandfather, Joseph Woodward, to his brother Joseph.[73]

On 27 5th month [July] 1731, the Smithfield Friends meeting declared that "Ruth Arnold, wife of Woodward Arnold, hath fallen into unclear conversation. The meeting does denie her as being a member of the meeting till she shall be restored."[74]

On 17 September 1731, Woodward's father gave him a 60-acre farm lying within the "thousand acre purchase," on the northwest part of Woonsocket Hill. [75]

---

[68] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241. Date from Greene, "Arnold Family, 22.
[69] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.
[70] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[71] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 425.
[72] *Providence Town Records*, 16:450.
[73] Smithfield Deeds, 2:461.
[74] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[75] Smithfield Deeds, 1:15.

On 19 October 1731, Woodward entered into an agreement with others regarding a road being built in the neighborhood. As part of the agreement, he and his brother Thomas agreed to build a "good cart bridge over the Woonsocket River," and mend the highway on either side of the bridge "so a loaded cart may pass."[76]

Woodward was admitted as a freeman of Smithfield on 4 February 1733/4.[77]

In his father's will dated 6 September 1735, which was never probated, Woodward was to receive a share of silver money and £40 payable over a three-year period.[78]

On 25 February 1736, Woodward purchased a parcel of land from his father. He purchased 110 acres in Smithfield on 7 December 1736.[79]

On 24 February 1737, Woodward sold 100 acres of land in Smithfield. On 4 July 1737, he and Ruth sold their 100-acre homestead "where I lately dwelt in Smithfield."[80] On 30 March 1739, he sold 50 acres of land to his brother Josiah.[81] He was still in Smithfield when he witnessed a deed of his brother Josiah on 5 December 1740.[82]

According to the Woonsocket history, Woodward "absconded." It says he removed to Massachusetts, evidently without his family, after selling his homestead in 1737. However, he was still in Smithfield in 1740 as shown above, and no record has been found of him in Massachusetts. Captain Daniel Arnold, son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, was appointed guardian of one of his children.[83] Woodward died before 1781, when his brother

---

[76] Smithfield Deeds, 1:12.
[77] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:491– 2.
[78] Richard Arnold will and book of writings 1725–1735, Duke University Special Collections Library, OCLC 73282792.
[79] Smithfield Deeds, 1:403, 460.
[80] Smithfield Deeds, 1:374, 420.
[81] Smithfield Deeds, 1:547.
[82] Smithfield Deeds, 5:29.
[83] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 191.

Edmund remembered Philip Arnold, "son of Woodward Arnold, deceased," in his will.[84]

Children of Woodward and Ruth Arnold, presumably all born at Smithfield:[85]

i. **Ismael[5] Arnold**, died without children.[86]

96 ii. **Philip Arnold**, mentioned in the 1781 will of his uncle, Edmund Arnold.

97 iii. **Naomi[5] Arnold**, born 2 June 1735.

iv. **Lydia Arnold**, possible daughter.[87]

---

[84] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 34.

[85] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88, shows the birth of Naomi. Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 191, does not list Lydia, citing "Wilkinson's genealogy." *History of Woonsocket* includes a William Arnold as a son based on the 1869 *Wilkinson Family in America*, but that source appears to have confused the parents of William who was born 30 November 1733, a son of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.

[86] Greene, "Arnold Family," 66.

[87] Listed in "Arnold Family," 65, stating she had no children.

25. **MARY[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born about June 1712, a daughter of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold.[88]

She married **DAVID WILKINSON** about 1730.[89] He was born 16 October 1707, a son of Samuel Jr. and Huldah (Aldrich) Wilkinson. David was a brother of Patience Wilkinson, who married Mary's brother Joseph, and of Ruth Wilkinson, who married Mary's brother Woodward.[90]

David was admitted as a freeman of the town of Providence in May 1730, the year before Smithfield was formed from a part of Providence.[91] He entered into real estate transactions in Smithfield in 1733, 1736, 1739, 1747, 1776, and 1779.[92]

David was ensign of the Smithfield Second Company of militia in 1741.[93] David and Thomas Beadle petitioned the Rhode Island General Assembly to have a claim allowed in November 1744.[94] He was sheriff of Providence County in 1751, 1752, 1754, and 1756 and a justice of peace in Providence from 1766 through 1777.[95]

In 1778, David's farm included five houses, one-quarter of a sawmill, one horse, two oxen, five horned cattle, fifteen sheep/goats, four swine, 40 acres of pasture to keep eight cows, 8 acres under tillage producing 100 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 10 barrels of cider, 14 acres of meadow producing 6 tons of English hay and 8 tons of fresh hay, and 36 acres of wood and

---

[88] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241; Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 189. Birth date from age at death in obituary.

[89] David died in February 1796, and Mary's obituary said they had been married 65 years, 9 months.

[90] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 425.

[91] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:435.

[92] Smithfield Deeds, 1:327, 448, 528, 548, 550, 6:319, 469, 472.

[93] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island*, 86.

[94] Petitions to the Rhode Island General Assembly, 5:73, FHL microfilm #947779.

[95] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island*, 16, 149, 155, 169, 186, 263, 273, 283, 291, 295, 299, 302, 310, 326, 346, 370.

wasteland for a total of 100 acres. He had a personal estate valued at £65 and £18 of debt, and his real estate was valued at £570.[96]

His death, in his 89th year, was noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 6 February 1796.[97] His will, written at Providence 28 March 1786, was proved 4 April 1796. He mentioned his wife, Mary Wilkinson; daughter Mary Cronch and unnamed daughters, one a mother of Marsh grandsons and one wife of son-in-law William Thurber; and grandsons David Wilkinson Marsh and Jonathan Marsh. A number of children and grandchildren were not named.[98]

Mrs. Mary Wilkinson, widow of David, died in Providence 1 July 1803. Her obituary states she was aged 91 years, "wanting 10 days," that she had lived with her husband 65 years and 9 months, and that "she raised nine children, all save one now living. That child has been dead 22 years." The obituary also claims that Mary was a granddaughter of the first Arnold in America — which identifies her as Mary Arnold, but Mary was the fourth generation, not a granddaughter.[99]

Children of David and Mary (Arnold) Wilkinson, presumably all born at Smithfield:[100]

i. **Susannah Wilkinson**, born 8 February 1732.

ii. **William Wilkinson**, born 24 April 1735.

iii. **Samuel Wilkinson**, born 26 September 1738.

iv. **Mary Wilkinson**, born 15 September 1740.

v. **Sarah Wilkinson**, had no children.

---

[96] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 23 (1997): 28.
[97] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 424.
[98] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 15(1992): 57.
[99] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 425.
[100] The first four at *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 121. The next four are from Greene, "Arnold Family," 66, 67.

vi. **Betsey Wilkinson,** had no children.

vii. **Ichabod Wilkinson**, went South.

viii. **Daniel Wilkinson**, had no children.

ix. **Nancy Wilkinson**, born about 1751 (married in 1771).[101]

x. **Patience Wilkinson**, born about 1752 (married in 1772) .[102]

---

[101] Nancy Wilkinson, daughter of David of Providence, married 6 July 1771, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 15: Providence Gazette Marriages, 443.

[102] Patience Wilkinson, daughter of David, married William Thurber, 24 October 1772, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 15: Providence Gazette Marriages, 443.

26. **EDMUND[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 1 December 1714, a son of Richard and Mary (Woodward) Arnold.[103]

He married **MARY STAPLES** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 24 December 1738.[104] Probably she was the Mary Staples born at Bellingham, Massachusetts, 8 April 1721, daughter of Samuel and Rose Staples.[105] Samuel and Rose had moved to Smithfield by 1727/8, when they had a daughter born there.[106]

On 29 December 1735, Edmund's father deeded him a parcel of land in Smithfield for "fatherly love and affection.[107]

Edmund was made a freeman at Smithfield in 1751.[108]

On 31 7th month [July] 1766, the Smithfield Society of Friends appointed Edmund Arnold and Ezekiel Comstock to reshingle the Woonsocket Meeting House and make new seats in the gallery. When the work was completed, on 28 5th month [May] 1767, it was reported that "Edmund Arnold and some others have given the whole cost" of the project.[109]

On 24 April 1772, Edmund sold to William Arnold 60 acres of land in Smithfield, "all my farm and buildings where I now live," for the sum of £420. Three days later, William granted "Edmund and his present wife Mercy during his natural life the right to stay on the 60-acre farm where they now live."[110]

Edmund's household at Smithfield in 1774 included one male over age 16 and one female over age 16.[111] He was listed at Smithfield

---

[103] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[104] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.
[105] *Vital Records of Bellingham, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston, 1904), 62.
[106] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 118.
[107] Smithfield Deeds, 1:243.
[108] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen 1747–1755*, 12.
[109] Smithfield Society of Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[110] Smithfield Deeds, 6:334, 7:332.
[111] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.

as over age 60 in the 1777 military census.[112] In 1778, he was taxed on his lime kiln and tanyard, one horse, and personal estate.[113]

Edmund died at Smithfield 16 11th month [November] 1781.[114] The will of "Edmund Arnold of Smithfield, tanner," had been written 10 November 1781 and was proved 21 January 1782. He left his money and securities and his tanner's stock of hides, leather, and bark to his nephew Philip Arnold, son of Edmund's late brother Woodward. "William Arnold, physician" (another nephew) received the rest of Edmund's personal estate. George Comstock was named sole executor. Witnesses were Jacob Arnold, Thomas Arnold, and Alfred Mann.[115]

No record has been found that Edmund and Mary had children; none were mentioned in his will.

---

[112] *The Rhode Island 1777 Military Census* (Baltimore, 1985), 90.

[113] "List of the Polls and Estates . . . Town of Smithfield . . . October 1778," *Rhode Island Roots* 21(1995): 19.

[114] Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.

[115] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 193. Also, "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1984): 34.

27. **JOSIAH[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 8 October 1716, a son of Richard and Dinah (Thornton) Arnold.[116]

He married **AMEY PHILLIPS** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 20 July 1738.[117]

Josiah was deeded 60 acres of land west of Woonsocket Hill on 22 February 1736/7 and 84 acres of land near Woonsocket Hill in Smithfield by his father on 15 October 1737 (as a twenty-first birthday present?).[118] On 13 March 1739, he purchased 50 acres of land on the west side of Woonsocket Hill from his brother Woodward.[119]

He was admitted as a freeman at Smithfield on 2 May 1738.[120]

On 2 December 1740, Josiah Arnold of Smithfield purchased 204 acres of land in Glocester, Rhode Island, "on the east and west side of a small river called Pascoque River" (present-day Pascoag?) for the sum of £460. Three days later, on 5 December 1740, he sold his 225-acre homestead farm in Smithfield.[121] He purchased an additional 40 acres of land in Glocester for the sum of £80 on 12 December 1740. The next spring, on 25 May 1741, Josiah Arnold of Glocester "late of Smithfield" purchased an additional 50 acres in the same area for £143.[122]

Josiah purchased an additional 20 acres on 18 February 1742 and 70 acres on 11 June 1744.[123] He sold 70 acres on 21 October 1745; 380 acres on 5 May 1746, in a transaction mentioning his wife, Amey; and 25 acres on 25 March 1746.[124]

---

[116] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[117] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfied Marriages, 10.
[118] Smithfield Deeds, 1:316, 336.
[119] Smithfield Deeds, 1:547.
[120] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:542.
[121] Smithfield Deeds, 5:29.
[122] Glocester Deeds, 1:463, 465, 464.
[123] Glocester Deeds, 1:539, 2:57.
[124] Glocester Deeds, 3:132, 2:103, 3:138.

In May 1744 and May 1745, Josiah was lieutenant of the Second Glocester Militia Company.[125]

Josiah had moved to Providence by 21 February 1746, when he sold land there.[126] He was in Providence on 22 June 1747, when he sold 100 acres of land in Glocester. Perhaps that was a financing transaction, since the buyer sold back the same land to Josiah on 30 September 1747 for the same price, £850. On the same day, however, Josiah resold the land, again for the same price, to a different buyer.[127]

Josiah's gravestone at the North Burial Ground in Providence says he died 23 March 1747 [1747/8], in his 32nd year.[128] His wife, Amey, was appointed to administer his estate on 25 April 1748. The inventory of his estate, taken 22 April 1748, called him Josiah Arnold, merchant, late of Providence, and totaled £3,955. It included monies due on account, 54 gallons of molasses sent to Boston and shares in various vessels: 1/32 each of the brigantines (two-masted, square-rigged ships) *Warsuat* and *Hannah* and 3/16 of the sloop *Success* (a single-masted boat rigged fore and aft).[129]

Josiah's older half-brother, Thomas Arnold of Smithfield, was appointed administrator of his estate in Smithfield on 10 May 1749.[130]

Perhaps Amey married, second, Gideon Comstock (#83) of Smithfield before 2 June 1749.[131]

---

[125] Smith, *Civil and Military List of R.I.*, 101, 107.

[126] Providence Deeds, 12:195.

[127] Glocester Deeds, 4:19, 91, 92.

[128] William Waterman Chapin, "Genealogy of the Descendants of Dr. Jonathan Arnold . . .," 1910 typescript at Rhode Island Historical Society, FHL microfilm #22323, Item 8.

[129] Providence Probate, W4:220, 280.

[130] Smithfield Probate, 1:415.

[131] John A. Comstock, *History and Genealogy of the Comstock Family in America* (Los Angeles, 1949), 27, says Gideon married, second, Freelove Arnold, widow of Josiah Arnold and, third, AmEy _____. No primary source record has been found for the marriage to Freelove or of a Freelove, widow of a Josiah. It seems likely that AmEy (Phillips) Arnold

Children of Josiah and Amey (Phillips) Arnold:[132]

i. **Dinah[5] Arnold**. Died young.

ii. **Josiah Arnold.** No further record.

98 iii. **Jonathan Arnold**, born 3 December 1741.[133]

iv. **Amaziah Arnold.** No further record.

---

was the AmEy whom Gideon married before 2 June 1749, and the Comstock genealogy author was confused.

[132] Greene, "Arnold Family," 23, 68.

[133] Obituary in the *Providence Gazette* of 1 February 1793 says Dr. Jonathan Arnold died at St. Johnsbury, Vermont, in his 53rd year. A biography in *Dictionary of American Biography* has the exact date.

28. **DINAH[4] ARNOLD** *(Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 4 September 1719, a daughter of Richard and Dinah (Thornton) Arnold.[134]

She married first **WILLIAM COMSTOCK**, a son of Hezediah and Catherine (Pray) Comstock. He died at Providence 18 11th month [January] 1745.[135]

She married second **JOSEPH KILTON** of Providence, Rhode Island, 4 February 1747.[136] He was born 2 June 1723, a son of Thomas and Phebe (Dexter) Kilton.[137]

William Comstock wrote his will 18 November 1745; it was probated 19 January 1745/6. His inventory was valued at £2,722, and a vessel and cargo at sea were valued at £1,552. On 26 September 1750, Elenathan Comstock, daughter of William, chose her father-in-law (stepfather in today's usage), Joseph Kilton, as guardian. On 13 February 1756, Penelope, daughter of William, chose George Brown as her guardian.[138]

Joseph wrote his will 23 June 1756 as Joseph Kilton of Providence, cordwainer (shoemaker). His inventory was dated 29 September 1756. He mentioned that his sons should receive furniture that was his before his marriage with his current wife, Dinah. His sons were named as Arnold Kilton and Joseph Kilton Jr.[139]

Dinah died 28 November 1771.[140]

---

[134] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 241.
[135] Greene, "Arnold Family," 23.
[136] Greene, "Arnold Family," 23.
[137] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 116.
[138] C. B. Comstock, *Some Descendants of Samuel Comstock of Providence . . .* (New York, 1905), 14.
[139] "Abstracts of Providence Wills," *Rhode Island Genealogical Register* 13 (1990):13.
[140] Comstock, *Some Descendants of Samuel Comstock of Providence*, 14.

Children of William and Dinah (Arnold) Comstock:[141]

i. **James Comstock.**

ii. **Jonas Comstock.**

iii. **Andrew Comstock**, born 1743.

iv. **Elenathan Comstock.**

v. **Penelope Comstock**, born about 1744; married in 1764.

---

[141] Comstock, *Some Descendants of Samuel Comstock of Providence*, 14.

29. **WILLIAM[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 9 December 1695, a son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, as shown by the records of the Narragansett Society of Friends.[142]

He married first **HANNAH WHIPPLE** 27 December 1717.[143] She was born probably 5 March 1695, a daughter of Eleazer Whipple.[144]

He married second **MARGARET CAPRON** 5 May 1729, recorded at Smithfield, Rhode Island.[145] She was born about 13 August 1700, having died 22 June 1739, aged 38 years, 10 months, 9 days.[146] She was a daughter of Banfield and Elizabeth (Calender) Capron, who lived in Attleborough, Massachusetts.[147]

He married third **HANNAH (BAXTER) HAYWARD** of Mendon, Massachusetts, 1 April 1740, at Smithfield.[148] Hannah was from Braintree, Massachusetts, when she first married John Hayward, as his second wife, 6 March 1728/9.[149] She was a daughter of John and Huldah (_____) Baxter, who each mentioned her in their wills, written 20 November 1745 and 23 March 1747. Huldah's will specifically called her "Hannah Arnold, wife of William Arnold of Smithfield, R.I."[150]

---

142 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends, 143.

143 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7.

144 Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 191. Also *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 4.

145 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

146 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.

147 Frederic A. Holden, *Genealogy of the Descendants of Banfield Capron* (Boston, 1859), 11.

148 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.

149 *Vital Records of Mendon, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston, 1920), 246. Also in Inez I. Illingworth, "William Hayward of Weymouth and Braintree, Massachusetts," 24, 1966 typescript at New England Historic Genealogical Society.

150 Waldo Chamberlain Sprague, *Genealogies of the Families of Braintree, Mass.,* CD-ROM (Boston, 2001).

He married fourth **HANNAH (WHIPPLE) EDDY** at Smithfield 18 May 1755.[151] She was a daughter of Job Whipple and the widow of Nathaniel Eddy.[152]

William was admitted as a freeman of the Town of Providence in October 1720.[153]

On 29 November 1727, William's father deeded him one-fourth of a sawmill in Mendon at a branch of the Great River at Woonsocket Falls and a 50-acre farm in Smithfield.[154] The farm became known as the "Old Maid's Farm" a hundred years later, when it was owned and operated by two unmarried great-granddaughters, Abigail and Lucy Arnold.[155] William acquired 30 acres of land on the Great River on 17 March 1729/30 and 30 additional acres and two small islands on the river on 6 July 1744.[156]

When the town of Smithfield was formed, William represented it in the Rhode Island General Assembly in May 1731.[157]

On 13 February 1733/4, William sold 31 acres of land in Glocester, Rhode Island, bounded by the colony of Connecticut.[158] On 5 April 1757, William and his siblings sold their rights to 53 acres of land in Glocester laid out to their father.[159]

In February 1738/9, William Arnold and Thomas Sayles, Esqs., petitioned the Rhode Island General Assembly to pay for a £53 overrun of costs of constructing a bridge over the Pawtucket River at a place called "Wansoket Falls" in Smithfield. Their request was granted.[160]

---

[151] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[152] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 191.
[153] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:289.
[154] Smithfield Deeds, 2:327, 331.
[155] Bayles, *History of Providence County,* 2:269.
[156] Smithfield Deeds, 2:329, 335.
[157] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:449.
[158] Glocester Deeds, 1:160.
[159] Glocester Deeds, 6:298.
[160] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:552.

In an undated deed acknowledged in 1755 and recorded in 1766, William deeded to his son Elisha for the sum of £4,000, all his land in Smithfield with his house, barns and other buildings, inherited from his father John, and all his land in Cumberland with the right he had to a mill in Cumberland.[161]

William died at Smithfield 2 August 1766.[162] He did not leave a will. His last wife, Hannah, was named in the probate records. John Sayles was named administrator of the estate. An extensive inventory of six and a half pages was filed with no total.[163]

The widow Hannah purchased land in Smithfield in 1768 and sold land in Smithfield in 1770 and 1772.[164] Hannah (Whipple) (Eddy) Arnold married Uriah Mowry, as her third husband, at Smithfield 28 November 1773.[165]

Children of William and Hannah (Whipple) Arnold, born at the part of Providence that became Smithfield:[166]

99 i. **Sarah[5] Arnold**, born 12 January 1717/8.

100 ii. **Elisha Arnold**, born 14 March 1719/20.

101 iii. **Martha Arnold**, born 28 December 1721.

iv. **Thomas Arnold**, born 11 October 1724; died 14 August 1725.

v. **John Arnold**, born 13 August 1726; died 22 July 1736.[167]

vi. **Hannah Arnold**, born 1727.[168] Presumably died young.

---

[161] Smithfield Deeds, 6:115.
[162] Smithfield Probate, 2:518. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.
[163] Smithfield Probate, 2:500, 518.
[164] Smithfield Deeds, 6:169, 170, 171, 282, 336.
[165] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3 :Smithfield Marriages, 51.
[166] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births, 210.
[167] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[168] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 191.

Children of William and Margaret (Capron) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[169]

vii. **Benedict Arnold**, born 30 June 1729; died 27 October 1744.

viii. **Hannah Arnold**, born 18 September 1731; died 20 September 1744.

ix. **Gideon Arnold**, born 11 July 1734; died 22 July 1736.

102 x. **Susannah Arnold**, born 31 January 1735/6.

103 xi. **Gideon Arnold**, born 5 June 1738.

Children of William and Hannah (Haywood) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[170]

xii. **Son**, born 5 December 1740; died 12 March 1740/1.

xiii. **Anne Arnold**, born 9 November 1741. No further record.

Daughter of William and Hannah (Eddy) Arnold, born at Smithfield:

104 xiv. **Hannah Arnold**, born 31 December 1755.[171]

---

[169] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[170] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[171] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.

30. **JOHN[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 27 July 1697, a son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, as shown in the records of the Narragansett Society of Friends.[172]

He married **MARTHA JENKS** at Providence, Rhode Island, in August 1717.[173] She was born 5 August 1698, a daughter of Daniel and Katherine (Balcom) Jenks.[174]

John died 12 March 1727, when he was not yet 30 years old, leaving a family of five children. His widow, Martha, married James Aldrich 13 December 1731.[175]

Martha Aldrich of Smithfield, widow, wrote her will 22 May 1749, and it was proved 16 September 1751. She mentioned her sons Moses, Noah, and David Arnold and noted that Moses had a larger share of his father's estate than his brothers.[176]

In his will of 5 May 1753, John's father, John Arnold of Smithfield, miller, "now an ancient man," mentioned his grandsons Moses, Noah, and David Arnold.[177]

Children of John and Martha (Jenks) Arnold:[178]

105 i. **Moses[5] Arnold**, born say 1718.

106 ii. **David Arnold**, born say 1720.

107 iii. **Noah Arnold**, born say 1722.

---

[172] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Narragansett Friends, 143.
[173] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[174] William B. Browne, *Genealogy of the Jenks Family of America* (Concord, N.H., 1952), 31.
[175] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 192. Date of death from Greene, "Arnold Family," 18.
[176] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 329.
[177] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 332.
[178] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 192.

iv. **Daniel Arnold**, evidently died between 1 January 1736/7 and 22 May 1749.[179]

v. **Aaron Arnold**. Aaron's stepfather, James Aldrich, deeded him land in Smithfield in 1740 and sold him two other parcels in 1741.[180] Aaron died at Smithfield 5 June 1742, as shown in his probate records. His brother Moses was appointed administrator of his estate and sold Aaron's land on 11 June 1743.[181]

---

[179] Named along with his brothers Aaron, Noah, and David as "cousins" in the 1 January 1736/7 will of John Balcom (Smithfield Probate, 1:137) and not named in his mother's will of 22 May 1749.

[180] Smithfield Deeds, 2:23, 29.

[181] Smithfield Probate, 1:215; Smithfield Deeds, 2:154.

31. **DANIEL[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 1 May 1699, a son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, as shown in the records of the Narragansett Society of Friends.[182]

He married **BATHSHEBA BALLOU** at Providence, Rhode Island, 16 October 1720.[183] She was born at Providence 15 February 1698, a daughter of James and Susannah (Whitman) Ballou.[184]

Although Daniel's birth was recorded in the records of the Society of Friends, he probably did not remain a Quaker, as his marriage and the births of his children were recorded in civil records. Also he was a lieutenant in the Smithfield militia in 1732 and 1733 and served as a captain from 1735 through 1753, positions not compatible with being an active Quaker.[185]

Daniel's father deeded him parcels of land in Smithfield on 2 October 1733 and 19 July 1736 and sold him 100 acres on 6 November 1740. Daniel sold a 14-acre parcel on 2 October 1733.[186]

Daniel was a freeman at Smithfield in 1754.[187] On 5 April 1757, Daniel Arnold of Smithfield and his siblings sold their rights to 53 acres of land in Glocester laid out to their father.[188]

Daniel died at Smithfield 30 7th month [July] 1773.[189] He had written his will 21 December 1770, calling himself "Daniel Arnold of Smithfield, Gentleman." It was proved 16 August 1773. One-third of his real estate and "moveables" were left to his wife, Bathsheba. His son Uriah received his carpenter's tools, two-thirds of his homestead

---

[182] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends, 143.
[183] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[184] Adin Ballou, *An Elaborate History and Genealogy of the Ballous in America* (Providence, 1888), 51.
[185] Smith, *Civil and Military List of R.I.*, 56, 60, 70, 72, 101, 106, 113, 120, 134, 140, 146, 153, 159.
[186] Smithfield Deeds, 1:300, 301, 384, 2:76.
[187] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen*, 12.
[188] Glocester Deeds, 6:298.
[189] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 61. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.

plus the other third on the death of his mother and 20 acres of land Daniel had bought from Caleb Baron. Daughter Anna was to have the right of victuals and dining with her brother Uriah at his expense and to live in the west end of the house. She also received land in Mendon purchased from Ebenezer Cook on 14 February 1745. The other three daughters — Mary Comstock, Rachel Arnold, and Dorcas Cargill — received land in Providence he had bought of his son Uriah on 7 January 1764. Grandson David Arnold, son of Uriah, under age 21, received a farm in Cumberland purchased from Isaac Richardson. Grandson Joseph Arnold, son of Enoch Arnold, deceased, under age 21, received a farm Daniel had bought from Ebenezer Cook, the mill lot, and 200 acres. Granddaughter Mary Arnold, daughter of Enoch Arnold deceased, and granddaughter Amy Arnold were also mentioned.[190]

Daniel's inventory was four and a half pages long and was valued at £667. It included book accounts, notes receivable, a Bible, a spelling book, sundry old books, a sword, a gun, a hunting pocket of powder, a silver tankard and porringer, large and small silver spoons, furniture, and farm animals.[191]

Bathsheba was 80 years old in 1778 when "Uriah Arnold and his mother" were taxed on their 120-acre farm in Smithfield.[192]

The death of Bathsheba Arnold, "widow of Captain Daniel Arnold," was noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 23 January 1790.[193]

Children of Daniel and Bathsheba Arnold, recorded at Smithfield, Rhode Island:[194]

108 i. **Uriah[5] Arnold**, born 9 April 1721.

ii. **Priscilla Arnold**, born 2 March 1722/3. Not mentioned in father's will.[195]

---

[190] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 58.
[191] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 61.
[192] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 23 (1997): 20.
[193] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[194] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield, 88.
[195] Greene, "Arnold Family," 54, says she died without children.

109 iii. **Enoch Arnold**, born 31 March 1725.

iv. **Elijah Arnold**, born 23 December 1726. Not mentioned in father's will.

110 v. **Mary Arnold**, born 23 August 1728.

vi. **Rachel Arnold**, born 19 December 1730; married her cousin Stephen Arnold (#85).

111 vii. **Dorcas Arnold**, born 18 May 1732.

viii. **Anne Arnold**, born 17 February 1733/4; married her cousin Caleb Arnold (#58).

32. **MERCY[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 22 December 1701, a daughter of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, as shown the records of the Narragansett Society of Friends.[196]

She married **NICHOLAS LAPHAM** at the Smithfield, Rhode Island, Society of Friends 1 10th month [December] 1725.[197] Nicholas was born 1 2nd month [April] 1689, a son of John and Mary (Mann) Lapham, as recorded at the Dartmouth, Massachusetts, Society of Friends.[198] The Lapham genealogy states that he was born in Glocester, Rhode Island.[199]

Nicholas and Mercy lived in Dartmouth. On 26 6th month [August] 1709 John and Mary Lapham of Dartmouth deeded their land in Providence to their sons Nicholas and John Lapham.[200] On 22 March 1710/1 Nicholas and John were both of Dartmouth when they sold 20 acres of land in Providence to Walter Pheteplace for £8.[201] The next day Nicholas and John sold 80 acres of land in Providence to Nathaniel Waterman Jr. for £50.[202] Nicholas sold another lot in Providence on 23 October 1747.[203]

"Marcy" Lapham, wife of Nicholas, died at Dartmouth about "ye last of" August 1756.[204] Nicholas Lapham of Dartmouth wrote his will 8 March 1758; it was proved 11 July 1758. He mentioned sons Solomon, Nicholas, and Arnold (Arnold "not being able to get his Living") and daughter Abigail.[205]

---

[196] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends, 143.
[197] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.
[198] *Dartmouth Vital Records,* 1:147.
[199] Bertha Bortle Beal Aldridge, *Laphams in America* (Victor, N.Y., 1953), 19.
[200] *Providence Town Records,* 20:418.
[201] *Providence Town Records,* 20:427.
[202] *Providence Town Records,* 21:38.
[203] Providence Deeds, 13:180.
[204] *Dartmouth Vital Records,* 3:45.
[205] H. L. Peter Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate Records 1745–1762* (Baltimore, 1988), 221. See also Mary W. Peckham, "Concerning John Lapham and Sons of His Descendants," *TAG* 24 (1948): 12, citing Bristol County Probate, 16:79.

Children of Nicholas and Mercy (Arnold) Lapham, the first four recorded at Dartmouth:[206]

i. **Abigail Lapham**, born 12 January "1727 or 8."

ii. **Solomon Lapham**, born "first of" August 1730.

iii. **Rebecca Lapham**, born 13 July 1733.

iv. **Nicholas Lapham**, born 22 February 1735/6.

v. **Arnold Lapham.**

[206] *Dartmouth Vital Records*, 1:147–148.

33. **ANTHONY[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 12 March 1704, a son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold, as shown the records of the Narragansett Society of Friends.[207]

He married **SARAH FISH** at the Dartmouth, Massachusetts, Society of Friends 29 8m "called October" 1731. She was a daughter of John Fish.[208] In his will, written 4 April 1737 and proved 20 April 1742, John Fish named his daughter, Sarah Arnold, wife of Anthony Arnold.[209]

Anthony received 60 acres of land from his father in August 1733. They were at "The Falls" and included "the Island with two corn mills and a fulling mill thereon."[210] He was admitted as a freeman of Smithfield on 4 February 1733/4.[211]

In 1736, Anthony was called a miller when he sold land in Smithfield to his father.[212] On 17 July 1739, Anthony sold his Smithfield estate to his brother Seth,[213] and, according to *History of Woonsocket,* removed to Dartmouth, Massachusetts (where Sarah's parents lived).[214]

However, Anthony did not stay long in Dartmouth. He was of New Milford, Connecticut, which is just east of Dutchess County, New York, on 2 October 1739, when he purchased 65 acres of land near Rocky River.[215] Additional parcels of land near his original purchase were assigned or laid out to him in 1741, 1742, 1743, 1745, 1747, and 1750.[216]

---

[207] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends, 143.
[208] *Dartmouth Vital Records,*2:41.
[209] Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate Records,* 316.
[210] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 49, citing Smithfield Deeds, 1:71 and Cumberland Deeds, 1:277. Also Bayles, *History of Providence County,* 2:270.
[211] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 4:491–92.
[212] Smithfield Deeds, 4:204.
[213] Smithfield Deeds, 1:540, 542.
[214] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 49.
[215] New Milford Deeds, 4:448.
[216] New Milford Deeds, 5:55, 80, 169, 357, 416, 514, 6:315.

While these moves were taking place, the Smithfield Society of Friends had some problems with Anthony, noting on 31 5th month [July] 1740:[217]

> Whereas Anthony Arnold who was in unity with Friends has of late gone into a disorderly conduct contrary to our profession and utterly refuseth and condemeth ye advice of Friends in this meeting . . . doth therefore put him from under the care of Friends till he be restored by a reformation.

Whatever problems Anthony had with the Society of Friends were evidently resolved. He and Sarah, whose daughter Sarah was born 24 4th month [June] 1742, belonged to the Nine Partners Monthly Meeting of the Society of Friends of Dutchess County, New York, in 1761.[218]

Anthony had moved across the New York border and was living at Crum Elbow Precinct, Dutchess County, as a miller, when he sold 94 acres of land on 12 September 1750.[219] The earmark for his cattle was recorded at Crum Elbow 30 January 1750/1.[220] On 27 November 1751, Anthony sold 140 acres of land on Rocky River in New Milford, including his dwelling house, barn and gristmill, for £2,500.[221] He was of Nine Partners, Crum Elbow Precinct, on 13 January 1758, when he sold 12 acres of land in Smithfield.[222]

Anthony Arnold was taxed at Nine Partners, Dutchess County, from February 1753 to 1774.[223]

---

[217] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.

[218] Frank J. Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent,* 8 vols. to date (Pleasant Valley, N.Y., 1990–), 2:222.

[219] Dutchess County Deeds, 5:154. Also Clifford Buck and William McDermott, *Eighteenth Century Documents of the Nine Partners Patent,* Collections of the Dutchess County Historical Society, Vol. X (Baltimore, 1979), 189.

[220] Franklin D. Roosevelt, *Records of Crum Elbow Precinct,* Collections of the Dutchess County Historical Society, Vol. 7 (no place of publication, 1940), 3.

[221] New Milford Deeds, 6:612.

[222] Smithfield Deeds, 4:356.

[223] Clifford M. Buck, *Dutchess County Tax Lists, 1718–1787* (Rhinebeck, N.Y., 1990), 65.

In 1753 and 1754, Anthony Arnold of Crum Elbow Precinct brought suit in the Court of Common Pleas for the collection of four debts owed to him.[224] He was mentioned in Crum Elbow Precinct in 1766, 1769, 1774, 1775, 1776, and 1784.[225]

On 12 August 1773, Anthony Arnold, yeoman, of what was then Charlotte Precinct in Dutchess County, conveyed 56 acres of lot 12 to George Freligh, merchant of Rhinebeck.[226]

Reputed children of Anthony and Sarah (Fish) Arnold:[227]

112 i. **David[5] Arnold**, born 27 2nd month [April] 1733.

113 ii. **Sarah Arnold**, born 24 4th month [June] 1742.

iii. **Ebenezer Arnold**, possible son, born 5 February 1744.[228]

---

[224] Dutchess County Ancient Documents, #2723, 3182, 3183 and 3224.

[225] Roosevelt, *Records of Crum Elbow Precinct*, 7:68, 72, 79, 84, 88, 105.

[226] Buck and McDermott, *Eighteenth Century Documents of the Nine Partners Patent*, 382.

[227] The first two recorded in Dutchess County Quaker records, FHL microfilm #873511. A number of other children have been attributed to Anthony and Sarah by undocumented Internet sources. They include James, Joseph, Mercy, Wait, Anthony, Ada, Mary, Elisha, and Noah.

[228] In the *Boston Evening Transcript*, 22 November 1922, #9, W.B.B.N. wrote that in the absence of direct proof he assumed that Ebenezer Arnold of Hoosick, New York, was a son of Anthony and Sarah. He states that Ebenezer first married Hannah Haviland in 1768 and had eight children, and married second Esther Andrews, widow of Elijah Turner, and had four more children.

34. **SETH[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence (now Smithfield), Rhode Island, 26 7th month [September] 1706, a son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold.[229]

He married first **HANNAH ALDRICH** about 1731, the marriage date calculated from the year of birth of their first child. Hannah was born 17 May 1711, a daughter of Samuel and Hannah (_____) Aldrich.[230] Samuel Aldrich of Smithfield named his son-in-law, Seth Arnold, in his will of 10 December 1756.[231] Hannah died 1 February 1749, "in her 39th year."[232]

He married second **MARY CARGILL** at Smithfield 25 October 1750.[233] She was born at South Kingston, Rhode Island, 9 August 1726, a daughter of James and Phebe (Smith) Cargill. She died at Smithfield 21 November 1793.[234] Mary's stepmother, Sarah (Aldrich) Cargill, who married Mary's father when Mary was about 17, may have been related to Seth's first wife, Hannah Aldrich.

Seth was known for being usually tall for the times, with a height of six feet, four inches.[235]

Seth was admitted as a freeman of Smithfield on 4 February 1733/4.[236] His father gave him 300 acres of land "on the Smithfield side of the River" in August 1733. On 17 July 1739 he purchased 60 acres "in the immediate vicinity of the Falls," including the "island, with two corn mills and a fulling mill thereon," from his brother Anthony.[237] These lands became the business center of Woonsocket,

---

229 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Births, 143.
230 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 84.
231 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1981): 336.
232 "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 176. Also at *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
233 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
234 See Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13:130, for *Providence Gazette* notice of Mary's death.
235 Richard M. Bayles, "History of the Arnold Family," 1891 manuscript in the Arnold File, Rhode Island Historical Society, FHL microfilm #22323, item 9.
236 Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 491492.
237 Smithfield Deeds, 1:540, 542.

Rhode Island.[238] On 10 January 1743, he purchased from his father one-quarter of a sawmill in Mendon at Woonsocket Falls for £100 and 15 acres of land in Smithfield for £200.[239] On 29 August 1744, he purchased 80 acres of land for £830 on the gore of land in dispute between Rhode Island and Mendon on the bank of the Pawtucket River next to the land of Captain Daniel Arnold.[240] In his father's will, Seth was left "his part of the saw mill and appurtenances at the falls in Cumberland" in 1753.[241] The inventory of his father's estate included a note receivable from Seth for £559 payable 17 November 1757.[242]

In 1876, it was written that "Seth Arnold first lived at the Globe, in a house which stood in the rear of the Globe store, and has recently been demolished to make room for a brick building which has been erected by the Balloon Manufacturing Company. He subsequently moved to the house of his son James, where he passed the remainder of his days."[243]

Seth and Hannah lost four of their five children between September and November 1741.

Seth evidently stretched his pious Quaker upbringing. The records of the Rhode Island Supreme Court include the following:[244]

> Seth Arnold of Smithfield . . . wickedly and with an intent to defraud and deceive on the fifth day of January in the fifteenth year of said Majesty's reign [1741] at Glocester in the County of Providence aforesaid, did . . . utter and pass away in payment to Anthony Arnold of New Milford in the County of Fairfield in the Colony of Connecticut, yeoman, [his brother] fifteen false and counterfeit bills of the denomination of twenty shillings, knowing them to be false and counterfeit in imitation of the true twenty shilling bills of publick credit emitted by the Colony.

---

238 Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 49.
239 Worcester County Deeds, 18:113; Smithfield Deeds, 2:168.
240 Worcester County Deeds, 22:289.
241 Smithfield Probate, 2:13.
242 Smithfield Probate, 2:216.
243 Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 50.
244 Rhode Island Supreme Court, Case C35, FHL microfilm #945808.

> Wherefore it is considered by this court, that you the said Seth Arnold, upon Friday the twenty eighth of May next ensuing, between the hours of three and five in the afternoon do stand in the Pillory in the Town of Newport . . . before the door of the Colony House and there be confined for the space of half an hour and have your ears cropped or pay a fine into the General Treasury of this Colony of three hundred pounds . . . and likewise that on or before the said twenty eighth day of May you give bond with sufficient sureties to the General Treasury of this Colony in the sum of Five Hundred Pounds for exchanging all said counterfeit twenty shilling bills as have been passed & uttered by you . . . and make good double damages to persons injured thereby and that you pay all charges of prosecution and all lawful fees and to remain secured in His Majesty's Goal in Newport aforesaid, till this sentence be performed.

A similar charge and sentence was place on Azariah Comstock of Smithfield, who collaborated in "forging, counterfeiting, imprinting and signing the counterfeit bills."

On the second Monday of February 1743, Seth Arnold and Daniel Comstock Jr., both of Smithfield, having paid their fines (and thus evidently retaining their ears), petitioned the Rhode Island General Assembly for the return of their freemen's privileges. Their petition was supported by the signatures of fifty-one neighbors from Smithfield, who stated they were neighbors well acquainted with Arnold and Comstock, "honest men until they fell into that affair of counterfeiting the Colony's bills."[245] Included were the signatures of Isaac Benson and his son John. To show the continued support of the Bensons, some 220 years later, a descendent of Isaac Benson, Richard H. Benson, the compiler of this book, married a descendent of Seth Arnold.

On 29 January 1752, two acres of land in Mendon, Massachusetts, on the Grand River on the south side of the road leading to Mansokitt Falls were laid out to Seth Arnold.[246]

---

[245] Petitions to the General Assembly, 5:42, Rhode Island Archives. Also FHL microfilm #947779.

[246] *Proprietors Records of the Town of Mendon* (Boston, 1899), 971.

In 1774, Seth headed a household in Smithfield of three males ages 16 or more, two males under age 16, one females age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[247] In the 1777 military census, Seth was listed as age 60 or more.[248]

In 1778, Seth was taxed on five houses, two mills, £74 in money and trading stock, 13 ounces of plate, one chaise, two horses, two oxen, six horned cattle, twenty-four sheep/goats, two swine, 36 acres of pasture to keep ten cows, 10 acres under tillage producing 200 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 5 barrels of cider, 12 acres of mowing land producing 12 tons of England hay and 90 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 150 acres; £170 personal estate; and £1,175 real estate.[249]

During litigation of December 1784, Seth was described as "of Cumberland, Rhode Island."[250] Seth was 78 years old and his son Levi was living there at the time. However, in 1790, Seth was again in Smithfield.[251]

Mary died 13 November 1793.[252] The *Providence Gazette* of 23 November 1793 noted that Mary Arnold, wife of Seth, died at Smithfield in her 68th year.[253]

On 29 October 1794, Seth's sons George, James and Levi leased him various parcels of land that he had conveyed to them by deeds of gift; the leases were specified as being for the rest of Seth's natural life.[254]

---

[247] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[248] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 90.
[249] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 20.
[250] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 7:649.
[251] *Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Rhode Island* (Washington, D.C., 1908), 38.
[252] "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* , 19 (1995): 176.
[253] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[254] Smithfield Deeds, 8:384, 385, 385.

Seth died 27 November 1801, "in his 96th year.[255] His will — dated 27 September 1798 at Cumberland, where he was living at the time of his death — was proved 15 December 1801. He named his sons James, "Nathan Arnold deceased," Levi, "Seth Arnold deceased," and George. He also named daughters Hannah Aldrich, wife of Simeon Aldrich; Abigail Comstock, wife of Nathan Comstock; Phebe Arnold, wife of Luke Arnold; and grandsons Samuel Arnold and Nathan Arnold, sons of Nathan Arnold, deceased. He left his clothing and carpenter's tools to his sons Levi, George, and James. His homestead was left to his son James providing that James make specific payments to Samuel and Nathan, sons of son Nathan, deceased; to Levi Arnold; children of Seth Arnold, deceased; and to his daughters Hannah, Abigail, and Phebe.[256] A long and detailed inventory included furniture, a clock, bedding, woolen sheets, linen sheets, pewter, tools, clothing, and notes receivable from seventeen different people.[257]

Children of Seth and Hannah (Aldrich) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[258]

i. **Levi[5] Arnold**, born 6 December 1731; died 24 November 1741.

114 ii. **Nathan Arnold**, born 18 October 1733.

iii. **Seth Arnold**, born 10 February 1735; died 6 September 1741.

iv. **Hannah Arnold**, born 30 November 1737; died 29 September 1741.

v. **Abigail Arnold**, born 25 March 1740; died 24 November 1741.

115 vi. **Hannah Arnold**, born 27 December 1742.

116 vii. **Abigail Arnold**, born 10 April 1744.

---

[255] "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR*, 19 (1995): 176.
[256] Cumberland Probate, 7:411. Also "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 173.
[257] Cumberland Probate, 7:429.
[258] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.

117 viii. **Levi Arnold**, born 11 December 1746.

118 ix. **Seth Arnold**, born 6 January 1749.

Children of Seth and Mary (Cargill) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[259]

119 x. **George Arnold**, born 22 10th month [December] 1751.[260]

xi. **Phebe Arnold**, born 2 June 1755; married her cousin **Luke Arnold** (#143).

120 xii. **James Arnold**, born 27 November 1763.

121 xiii. **Anthony Arnold**, born 28 May 1769.

---

[259] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 193.

[260] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births, 182.

35. **ISRAEL[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard , Thomas[1])* was born at Providence (now Smithfield), Rhode Island, about 1708, a son of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold.[261]

Israel and **WAITE MOWRY** were both of Smithfield when they married at Glocester, Rhode Island, 18 March 1730/1.[262] She was born 6 June 1716, a daughter of Joseph and Alice (Whipple) Mowry.[263]

On 13 April 1733, Israel purchased 8 acres of land in Uxbridge, Massachusetts, on the colony line with Rhode Island.[264] A few days later, on 30 April 1733 he purchased the 70-acre homestead farm of Daniel Man in Glocester.[265] Four months later, on 24 August 1733, Israel's father, John Arnold of Smithfield, "for love and fatherly affection," deeded him 100 acres of land in Glocester "northerly on the Colony line, next to land Israel bought from Daniel Man,"[266] On 14 October 1745, Israel purchased 10 more acres of land in Uxbridge.[267]

Israel and Waite lived in that part of Glocester that became Burrillville.[268] Israel was ensign of the Glocester militia in 1734 and became its lieutenant in 1735 and 1736.[269] He became a freeman at Glocester in 1747.[270] He was licensed to operate a tavern there from 1750 through 1763.[271] He was a justice of the peace there from 1754 through 1776.[272] In 1765 and 1768, Captain Israel Arnold

---

[261] Parentage from Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 189. Birth date estimated based on brother Seth's birth in 1706 and marriage in 1730.
[262] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Glocester Marriages, 6.
[263] William A. Mowry, *A Family History Richard Mowry of Uxbridge, Mass.* (Providence, 1878), 39, 65.
[264] Worcester County Deeds, 24:192.
[265] Glocester Deeds, 1:108.
[266] Glocester Deeds, 1:106.
[267] Worcester County Deeds, 24:190.
[268] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 192.
[269] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island 1647–1800*, 64, 70, 72.
[270] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen 1747–1755*, 12.
[271] Elizabeth A. Perry, *A Brief History of Glocester* (Providence, 1886), A1.
[272] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island 1647–1800*, 172, 187, 206, 213, 221, 229, 240, 249, 271, 174, 184, 292, 296, 303, 311, 327, 346.

was a deputy representing Glocester in the Rhode Island General Assembly.[273]

In 1742, Israel and his brother Seth became involved in a scheme to obtain and pass counterfeit Rhode Island bills for which he was fined.[274] This did not seem to affect his status in the community. See further discussion in profile of Seth Arnold (#34).

On 25 November 1748, Israel purchased an additional 23 acres of land on the east side of his farm near the land of John Benson (direct ancestor of the author).[275] On 30 March 1752, Israel purchased 100 acres of common or undivided land on the west side of the Seven Mile Line (the eastern boundary of Glocester) for £200. A few weeks later, on 14 May, he sold parcels of 21, 8, and 27 acres of this land.[276] On 5 April 1757, Israel Arnold of Glocester and his siblings sold their rights to 53 acres of land in Glocester laid out to their father.[277]

In 1774, Israel's household in Glocester included four males age 16 or more, one female age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[278] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 60 or more.[279]

On 19 4th month [April] 1775, Israel deeded 20 acres of land in Glocester and 100 acres of land in Uxbridge to his son Elisha. On the same day he deeded he deeded his son Benedict 200 acres adjoining the colony line and the land of Job Benson and 100 acres of land in Uxbridge on the colony line.[280]

---

[273] Perry, *Brief History of Glocester*, 90, 91.
[274] Kenneth Scott, *Counterfeiting in Colonial Rhode Island* (Providence, 1960), 21.
[275] Glocester Deeds, 3:235.
[276] Glocester Deeds, 5:72, 74, 76.
[277] Glocester Deeds, 6:298.
[278] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 128.
[279] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 44.
[280] Glocester Deeds, 9:433, 11:91; Worcester County Deeds, 100:87, 73:360.

The death of Israel Arnold Esq. of Glocester was reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 10 February 1781.[281] He had died in January.[282]

On 9 4th month [April] 1802, Waite Arnold of Glocester sold "my son Elisha Arnold of Leicester" her right of dower in a land in Uxbridge that her Israel, "late of Glocester," had deeded to him as a gift.[283]

Waite died 2 May 1807.[284] The *Providence Gazette* of 3 June 1807 reported, "Mrs. Waitstill Arnold, widow of Israel, and mother of the late Oliver of this town," died at Glocester in her 92nd year.[285]

Children of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold, recorded at Glocester and in their family Bible:[286]

i. **Israel[5] Arnold,** perhaps born in 1742, no further record.[287]

122 ii. **Marcy Arnold**, born 24 January 1734.

123 iii. **Oliver Arnold**, born 7 August 1736.

iv. **Alice Arnold**, born 30 March 1739; died 12 October 1740.

124 v. **Martha Arnold**, born 24 August 1741.

vi. **Waite Arnold**, born 24 March 1744; died 19 March 1755.

vii. **Patience Arnold**, born 18 March 1745; died 25 March 1755.

---

[281] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[282] Bible Record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C 195.
[283] Worcester County Deeds, 147:207.
[284] Worcester County Deeds, 147:207.
[285] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 133.
[286] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 44, lists all except Mercy, Israel, Elisha, and Benedict. All except Israel in Bible record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C 195.
[287] Listed as a son in Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 192. Not listed in Bible, which may not have been a contemporary source.

125 viii. **Lucy Arnold**, born 5 November 1747.

126 ix. **Mary Arnold**, born 6 March 1749.

x. **William Arnold**, born 14 January 1754; died without children.[288]

127 xi. **Elisha Arnold**, born 24 4th month [April] 1756[289] (listed with no date in the Bible).

128 xii. **Benedict Arnold**, born 27 4th month [April] 1756.[290]

---

[288] Greene, "Arnold Family," 53.

[289] Identified as a son of Israel in his Glocester marriage record. Birth at *Vital Records of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston, 1916), 25.

[290] Identified as a son of Israel and Waite when he married Sarah Southwick of Mendon in 1774 at the Smithfield Society of Friends, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162. Birth at *Vital Records of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston, 1916), 25.

36. **ANNA[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2] , Thomas[1])* was born at Providence (now Smithfield), Rhode Island, about 1711, a daughter of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold.[291]

She married **BENJAMIN PAINE** at Smithfield, 24 December 1731, as his second wife.[292] He was born at Providence in 1699, a son of John and Elizabeth (Belcher) Paine.[293] He married his first wife, Elizabeth Owen, at Smithfield 14 August 1719.[294]

During the short marriage of Benjamin and Anna, Benjamin came to an agreement with the Smithfield Society of Friends to change his ways:[295]

> 29 4th month [June] 1732. Whereas Benj[a] Pain was in times past under the care of the Friends but of late hath led a life and conversation disagreeable to our profession which the meeting takes into consideration and refers the matter to the next monthly meeting.
>
> 26 5th month [July] 1732. Whereas Benjamin Pain is under dealings with the meeting and he appears and offers to give Friends satisfaction by signing a paper of condemnation of his out goings – Samuel Aldrich and John Mowry are appointed to assist him in drawing up said paper.

Anna died in 1734, possibly from complications of childbirth in February. On 2 November 1734, Benjamin married his third wife, Annie Mowry. He married his fourth wife, Jemima Eston, 30 April 1751.[296]

---

[291] Listed as Anna Paine in her father's will. Birth date estimated from 1731 marriage date.

[292] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

[293] Judith A. Hurst, "Paine–Belcher–Raynsford Genealogy," *Rhode Island Roots* 13 (1987): 51.

[294] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 171.

[295] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.

[296] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 56.

Benjamin died at Smithfield 1 1st month [January] 1784.[297] He had written his will 9 January 1783, and it was proved 20 January 1784. He mentioned his son Arnold and numerous other children by his other three wives.[298]

Children of Benjamin and Anna (Arnold) Paine:

i. **Anna Paine**, died without children.[299]

ii. **Arnold Paine**, born at Smithfield 12 February 1734.[300]

---

[297] Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Deaths," *Register* 146 (1992): 348
[298] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 35.
[299] Greene, "Arnold Family," 57.
[300] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 109.

37. **ABIGAIL[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence (now Smithfield), Rhode Island, about 1714, a daughter of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold.[301]

She married **ABNER BARTLETT** at Smithfield 30 April 1734.[302] He was a son of Jacob Bartlett of Bellingham, Massachusetts.[303]

Abner was of Bellingham on 16 September 1731 when he purchased 109 acres of land in the northeastern part of Glocester, Rhode Island, on the north side of Branch River.[304]

Abner was admitted as a freeman of Glocester 4 May 1742. He served as a selectman from 1743 to 1750 and was a member of the town council and a surveyor of highways.[305]

Abner was described as a blacksmith of Glocester when he and Abigail sold their interest in the land of Abigail's father on 5 April 1757.[306] In 1774, Abner's household in Glocester included two males above age 16 and one female above age 16.[307] That year he was granted a license to operate a tavern.[308] He was listed as age 60 or more in the 1777 military census.[309] He and Abigail were living by themselves in 1782.[310]

---

[301] Named as Abigail Bartlett in her father's will. Birth date estimated from 1734 marriage date.

[302] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

[303] John O. Austin, "John Bartlett of Rehoboth," *Newport Historical Magazine*, 6 (1888):30, reprinted in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals*, 2 vols. (Baltimore, 1983), 1:127. Also Thomas Edward Bartlett, *The Bartletts* (New Haven, Conn., 1892), 42.

[304] Austin, "John Bartlett of Rehoboth," in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals*, 1:127.

[305] Bartlett, *The Bartletts*, 42.

[306] Glocester Deeds, 6:298.

[307] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 130.

[308] Perry, *Brief History of the Town of Glocester*, A2.

[309] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 44.

[310] Jay Mack Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census* (Oxford, Mass., 1979), 11.

In 1778, he was taxed on a farm in Glocester that included three houses, one horse, four horned cattle, two swine, 15 acres of pasture to keep three cows, 3 acres under tillage producing 30 bushels of grain, 1 acre of orchard producing 2 barrels of cider, 10 acres of meadow producing 6 tons of English hay, and 41 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 70 acres. He was taxed on £29 of personal estate and £420 of real estate.[311]

Abner Bartlett of Glocester, Rhode Island, died 13 December 1784.[312] His will, dated 23 November 1784, was proved 17 September 1785. He mentioned his wife Abigail and his sons Rufus, Elisha, and Caleb.[313]

Abigail Barlett of Glocester, widow, wrote her will 21 May 1799; it was proved 5 November 1811. She mentioned her sons Elisha and Caleb, and two granddaughters, Ester and Joanna, daughters of Caleb.[314]

Children of Abner and Abigail (Arnold) Bartlett, born at Glocester:[315]

i. **Anna Bartlett.**[316]

ii. **Rufus Bartlett**, born 16 November 1739.

iii. **Elisha Barlett**, born 7 September 1742.

iv. **Caleb Bartlett**, born 19 June 1745.

---

311 "The Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots*, 19 (1993): 88.
312 Austin, "John Bartlett of Rehoboth," 1:127.
313 "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 6 (1983): 38.
314 "Burrillville Wills," *RIGR* 2:229.
315 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 40.
316 Not in Glocester Vital Records. Listed in Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 194, also in Austin, "John Bartlett of Rehoboth," 1:127.

38. **SUSANNA[4] ARNOLD** *(John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence (now Smithfield), Rhode Island, about 1716, a daughter of John and Mary (Mowry) Arnold.[317]

She married **JOHN MALAVERY** at Smithfield 26 December 1736.[318] He was a son of John Nathaniel and Experience (Mowry) Malavery.[319]

John's father died 18 September 1718, and in his will of 15 September left his property in Providence to his sons John and Nathaniel, who were both under age 21.[320]

John purchased 19 acres of land in Smithfield on 25 November 1737. On 26 December 1749, John and Susanna sold the eastern part of their homestead farm containing 40 acres.[321] John was admitted as a freeman of Smithfield on 3 May 1748.[322]

Susanna died after 5 May 1753, when she was named in her father's will, and before 9 January 1753/4, when John married Elizabeth Comstock as his second wife.[323] John and Elizabeth sold their 94-acre homestead farm in Smithfield 11 April 1763.[324]

Children of John and Susanna (Arnold) Malavery, born in Smithfield:[325]

i. **Amy Malavery**, born 18 December 1740.

ii. **Mary Malavery**, born 6 June 1745.

---

317 Named as Susanna Malavery in her father's will. Birth date estimated from 1735 marriage date.
318 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.
319 *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 340.
320 *Providence Town Records*, 16:80.
321 Smithfield Deeds, 1:428, 2:692.
322 MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen 1747–1755*, 32.
323 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.
324 Smithfield Deeds, 5:351.
325 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 103.

39. **JOB[4] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 6 9th month [November] 1707, a son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Burlingame) Arnold.[326]

Job married first **KESIAH HAWKINS** at Providence 18 January 1729/30.[327] She was born 30 January 1710 at Providence, a daughter of Stephen and Hannah (Coggeshall) Hawkins.[328] On 20 October 1830, Job and his brother-in-law, Zephaniah Peck, who had married Kesiah's sister, partitioned land the two sisters had inherited from Stephen Hawkins, deceased.[329] Kesiah died after 6 December 1738, when she signed a deed.[330]

Job married second **FREELOVE ARNOLD**, his second cousin, at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 13 August 1741.[331] She was born 10 January 1722, a daughter of Jeremiah and Freelove Arnold.[332]

Job's father's will, probated 6 March 1726/7, provided that, as the oldest child, Job should receive half the homestead farm and the other half at his mother's death. She died in 1752, leaving Job her "Great Bible." Job was recognized as a freeman at Providence on 6 May 1729.[333] He sold a portion of his father's farm on 18 March 1729/30.[334]

Job was surveyor of highways in Smithfield in 1731, when the town was first established.[335] He purchased the early Arnold homestead

---

[326] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209. Other information in this sketch is from Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:68.
[327] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8.
[328] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:68.
[329] Providence Deeds, 8:357.
[330] Providence Deeds, A10:236.
[331] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[332] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 241.
[333] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 4:420.
[334] Providence Deeds, 9:155.
[335] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:68.

in Smithfield, since known as the Stone Chimney House, from Freelove's father 7 December 1736.

Job Arnold "of Smithfield" leased land in Providence "that was the homestead of my father-in-law Stephen Hawkings, deceased," for a five year period to William Rusel of Providence on 31 March 1731. Job and his brothers Thomas and Jonathan sold half a lot in Providence on 30 June 1738.[336] Job and his brother Thomas, both of Smithfield, sold 180 acres of land in the northern part of Glocester, Rhode Island, on 14 April 1740 and 96 acres of land in Smithfield on 21 August 1740.[337] Job sold other land in Providence on 12 December 1735, 14 April 1738, 6 December 1738, and 3 March 1738/9.[338] On 3 March 1753, Job and his cousin Benjamin Arnold (#56) purchased the right to set up a lime kiln on land "next to the Pawtucket River at the head of the Island," for ninety-nine years, paying one shilling for each load of limestone processed.[339]

Job's household in Smithfield in 1774 included two males over age 16, one male under age 16, three females above age 16, one female under age 16, and seven African Americans.[340]

Job wrote his will at Smithfield 13 October 1765, and it was proved 29 July 1776. He left half the profits of his real estate and half of his personal estate to his wife, Freelove, "while she is a widow, to enable her to educate my young children and for their comfortable subsistence in life." Sons Isaac and Job, who were under age 21, were left his homestead farm and sawmill except one-third of the sawmill was left to son Stephen. Sons Abraham and Job received his rights to the lime kiln on the land of John Dexter. Son Job also received half of Job's blacksmith shop and half the tools. Job also mentioned sons Stephen and Oliver, and daughters Lydia Potter, Sarah Arnold, Keziah Arnold, and

---

[336]Original deeds in Job Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 13.

[337] Glocester Deeds, 1:427, 482.

[338] Providence Deeds, A10:19, 182, 236, 264.

[339] Smithfield Deeds, 7:270.

[340] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.

Freelove Arnold, under 18 and unmarried. Samuel and Nathan Arnold, no relationships given, received land.[341]

The inventory of Job's estate was taken 27 July 1776 and was valued at £422. It included 30 tons of lime rock in the kiln, clothing, furniture, household goods, farm animals, a "Negro man, Price (£45), a Negro boy, Adam (£22) and a Negro woman, Prudence (£25)."[342] That same year, the Smithfield Town Meeting voted that their representative to the Rhode Island General Assembly "use their uttermost endeavors" to pass a bill forbidding the importation of Negro and mulatto slaves.[343]

Freelove and her son Job were taxed on the homestead farm in 1778. It included two and one half houses, one-third of a mill, 10 ounces of plate, one horse, three horned cattle, ten sheep/goats, three swine, 42 acres of pasture to keep five cows, 3 acres under tillage producing 36 bushels of grain, an orchard producing 5 barrels of cider, 12 acres of mowing land producing 5 tons of English hay and 4 tons of fresh hay, and 2 acres of wood and waste land, for a total of 57 acres.[344]

Children of Job and Kesiah (Hawkins) Arnold:[345]

129 i. **Stephen[5] Arnold**, born perhaps about 1731 (a year after his parents married).

130 ii. **Lydia Arnold**, born probably about 1733; married in 1753.

---

[341] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 97. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1995): 31.

[342] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 102.

[343] Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield*, 35.

[344] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 21.

[345] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:68. Lydia, Sarah, and Kesiah were named in the will of Job's mother, written in 1749.

Children of Job and Freelove (Arnold) Arnold:

iii. **Sarah Arnold**, born before 1749, when mentioned in grandmother's will. As Sarah Arnold, she had a son, Nathaniel Hawkins, on 21 May 1771.[346] Married later _____ Phillips.[347]

131 iv. **Abraham Arnold**.

132 v. **Isaac Arnold**, born about 1746 (married in 1768).

133 vi. **Kesiah Arnold**, born probably about 1747 (date of husband's birth and before 1749 when mentioned in grandmother's will).

134 vii. **Oliver Arnold**, born 12 April 1752.

135 viii. **Freelove Arnold**, born perhaps in 1755; married in 1775. Not mentioned with other granddaughters in her grandmother's will of 1749.

136 ix. **Job Arnold**, born 16 October 1760.[348]

---

[346] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 100.
[347] Greene, "Arnold Family," 69, 168.
[348] Revolutionary War Pension File #S15359.

40. **JONATHAN[4] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 18 November 1709, a son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Burlingame) Arnold.[349]

He married **ABIGAIL SMITH** about 1738, figuring from the year of birth of their first child.[350] Abigail was born 10 6th month [August] 1714, a daughter of Benjamin and Mercy (Angell) Smith.[351]

Although he was raised as a Quaker and received a copy of *Barclay's Apology* in his portion of the family books, Jonathan did not appear in the Quaker records except for occasional attendance at a wedding. Abigail was raised as a Quaker and early in life was a member of the Smithfield Monthly Meeting. She lost interest in the Society when she was sharply rebuked by her elders for tippling "spirituous" liquors "in excess." Nevertheless, five of their children — Benjamin, Jonathan Jr., Asa, Thomas, and Abigail — were active Quakers.[352]

Jonathan was a cordwainer (shoemaker) by trade and initially lived in Providence. When his father's will was proved in March 1726/7, Jonathan returned to Smithfield to settle on a 350-acre farm he inherited, included a dwelling house, barns, a sawmill, and a potash mill. He also inherited 10 acres of meadowland near Providence "on the west side of the river."[353]

Jonathan made a number of property purchases, including land in Smithfield on 30 January 1741/2 from his brother Thomas Arnold Jr.; land in Smithfield on 25 June 1743 from his sister Sarah Turpin; two lots in Providence on 9 March 1746/7; land in Salt Water Cove in Providence on 1 November 1750; a lot on the west side of Providence Town Street on 18 January 1755; a house lot in

---

[349] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 209.
[350] Franklin Stuart Coyle, *Welcome Arnold (1745–1798), Providence Merchant: The Founding of an Enterprise,* June 1972 doctoral thesis, Brown University, published (Ann Arbor, Mich., 1980), 5.
[351] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Births, 244.
[352] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold,* 5, 18.
[353] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold,* 5.

Providence on 15 March 1756; two parcels in Smithfield on 31 May 1762; land in Smithfield on 4 December 1762; and land in Smithfield on 4 July 1768.[354]

On 1 December 1772, Jonathan deeded several lots of land in Providence, "for love and goodwill," to his sons, Welcome, Jonathan Jr., and Aza Arnold.[355]

In 1778, Jonathan was taxed on his farm in Smithfield, which included four buildings, one-fifth of a lime kiln, a tanyard, 24 ounces of plate, one chaise, three horses, six oxen, twenty horned cattle, forty-nine sheep/goats, one swine, 15 acres of pasture to keep four cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 108 bushels of grain and 40 barrels of cider, 5 acres of mowing land producing 20 tons of English hay and 20 tons of fresh hay, and 55 acres of wood and waste land, a total of 192 acres, personal estate of £178, and real estate of £1,374.[356]

According to his obituary in the *Providence Gazette* of 31 December 1796, Jonathan Arnold Esq. was a member of the Rhode Island General Assembly for many years.[357] He also served on several committees of the Town of Smithfield and on the Town Council.[358]

According to family papers cited in *Welcome Arnold,* Jonathan, Abigail, and their children were busy during the summer months with harvesting crops and with husbandry. The early spring and fall months and winter were spent collecting timber and firewood to be used in the fireplace at home, at the potash mill, for shipment to Providence, and in burning lime. The burning of limestone to make lime proved to be a lucrative activity for the

---

[354] Original deed for the first listed purchase in Thomas Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 14. Original deeds for the other purchases in Jonathan Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 13.

[355] Providence Deeds, 19:209.

[356] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 21.

[357] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131.

[358] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold.*

Arnolds and other Smithfield families; it was the initial basis of success of Jonathan's son Welcome as a merchant in Providence.[359]

Jonathan died at Smithfield 28 12th month [December] 1796.[360] His will, dated 13 October 1786, was proved 7 February 1797. He provided that his wife Abigail was to receive one-third of his movable estate and half the profits of his real estate during her natural life. He mentioned seven children: Welcome, Jonathan, Aza, Thomas, Marcy Dexter (widow), Elizabeth (wife of Samuel Arnold), and Abigail. They were to receive all of his real estate, his homestead farm of 100 acres, land he purchased of Jeremiah Mowry, and three pews in the old meetinghouse. Jonathan noted, "I have duly considered the education help and advantages which I have given my seven children . . . and all the money from them due to me [should] be included in the division of my moveable estate." The inventory of his estate, taken 28 12th month [December] 1797, was valued at $4,208. It included one "very old house," notes receivable, a yoke of oxen, cattle, sheep, hay, a clock, desk, looking glass, beds and bedding, thirty-two cords of wood for the lime kiln, and fourteen casks of lime.[361]

Abigail died at Smithfield 29 6th month [June] 1801.[362] Her death was noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 11 July 1801.[363]

---

[359] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold,* 6, citing papers of the Brown family of Providence that show transactions with the Arnolds.

[360] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 535. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Deaths," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.

[361] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book):534. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 132.

[362] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

[363] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 132.

Children of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold, presumably born at Smithfield:[364]

137 i. **Marcy Arnold**, born 7 January 1739.

ii. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born 21 5th month [July] 1740;[365] married her cousin **Samuel Arnold** (#64).

iii. **Richard Arnold**, born 1 August 1741; died of smallpox at Port Louis, Canada, 19 October 1759.[366]

iv. **Benjamin Arnold**, born 4 December 1742; died 23 March 1743.

138 v. **Welcome Arnold**, born 25 March 1745.[367]

139 vi. **Jonathan Arnold**, born 28 August 1746.

140 vii. **Aza Arnold**, born 18d 4th month (called April) 1748.[368]

141 viii. **Thomas Arnold**, born at Smithfield 10 11th month [January] 1751.[369]

142 ix. **Abigail Arnold**, born at Smithfield 7 5th month [May] 1754.[370]

---

[364] All children except Richard and Benjamin were named in Jonathan's will. The full list and most birth dates (except as otherwise referenced) are from William Waterman Chapin, "Genealogy of the Family of Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield, R.I.," 1910 typescript at Rhode Island Historical Society, FHL microfilm # 22323, Item 7. Leonard Wilson Arnold and Ethel Zwick Luckey, in *Arnold Luckey Family Ties* (New York, 1931), 18 and 43, claimed that there was a son Samuel Arnold, born 1738, who married an Elizabeth and lived at Somerset County, Pennsylvania. No documentation is given for this claim, and it seems unlikely. Perhaps there was confusion since Jonathan's will names his son-in-law Samuel Arnold, husband of daughter Elizabeth.

[365] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births, 181.

[366] Charles William Farnham, "John Smith the Miller," *Rhode Island History* 20 (1961), 109–118, reprinted in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals*, 2:18.

[367] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 435.

[368] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Births, 245.

[369] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Births, 245; 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.

41. **MARY[4] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 28 October 1710, a daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Burlingame) Arnold.[371]

On 18 December 1732, Mary Arnold, singlewoman of Smithfield, and her brother Jonathan sold 30 acres of land in Smithfield that had belonged to their father.[372]

Mary married **JOSEPH NEWELL** in 1734. He was born at Roxbury, Massachusetts, 19 January 1707, a son of Jacob and Joyce (Gleason) Newell.[373] Mary and Joseph posted banns at Attleborough, Massachusetts, 29 June 1734. The marriage was objected to by the widow Rebeckah Peck on 3 July 1734. The possible reason was that Joseph was somehow mentally handicapped. His father died when he was 10 years old,[374] and his mother died when he was 16.[375] After Joseph's mother died, 19 January 1724/5, John Ide of Attleborough was appointed Joseph's guardian.[376] Presumably that guardianship ended when Joseph became 21 years old, six years before he married Mary Arnold. However, on 7 August 1740, after he had fathered three children, Jacob Newell, Joseph's elder brother, and Obediah Fuller were appointed guardians of Joseph Newell of Attleborough, "who is non compus mentis" (not of sound mind). Nine years later, on 28 March 1749, Joseph was released from the guardianship, "he no longer being non compus mentis."[377]

---

[370] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 182.

[371] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209.

[372] Smithfield Deeds, 1:77.

[373] *Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849,* 2 vols. (Salem, Mass., 1925), 257.

[374] *Attleborough Vital Records,* 698.

[375] Administration of the estate of Joyce Newell granted on 20 October 1724, Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate Records,* 108.

[376] Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate Records,* 114, citing Bristol County Probate, 5:13.

[377] Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County Massachusetts Probate Records,* 57, citing Bristol County Probate, 11:668.

Mary died in March 17[5_].[378] In December 1757 Joseph married, second, Mary Hicks of Rehoboth, Massachusetts.[379]

A few months after this second marriage, on 25 May 1758, Jacob Newell and Stephen Fuller were appointed guardians because Joseph was again said to be "non compus mentis."[380] They filed an inventory of his estate on 23 July 1758 showing personal estate of £17 and real estate of £150.[381] A year later, on 8 February 1759, the court dismissed his guardians since Joseph "has recovered the use of his reason." His guardians filed an accounting the next day, which included payment for "shoes for Benjamin, his son."[382]

Children of Joseph and Mary (Arnold) Newell, born at Attleborough:[383]

i. **Sibelah (Sybil?) Newell**, born 10 January 1734/5.

ii. **Jonathan Newell**, born 14 January 1736/7.

iii. **Thomas Newell**, born 3 March 1739.

iv. **Elizabeth Newell**, born 8 April 1741.

v. **Joseph Newell**, born 26 March 1744.

vi. **Jason Newell**, born 13 November 1746.

vii. **Benjamin Newell**, born 4 April 1750.

---

[378] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 698.
[379] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 503.
[380] Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County Massachusetts Probate Records*, 219, citing Bristol County Probate, 16:60.
[381] Bristol County Probate, 16:130.
[382] Bristol County Probate, 16:209, 210.
[383] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 186, 187.

42. **THOMAS[4] ARNOLD** (*Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 4 November 1713, a son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Burlingame) Arnold.[384]

He married **AMY SMITH** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 9 November 1737.[385] She was a daughter of Edward and Mercy (Mowry) Smith.[386]

Thomas sold land in Smithfield to his brother Jonathan on 20 September 1736.[387] On 20 December 1738, Thomas and Amy sold their rights to the estate of Amy's father, Edward Smith.[388] Thomas and his brother Job, both of Smithfield, sold 180 acres of land in the northern part of Glocester on 14 April 1740. They sold 96 acres of land in Smithfield on 21 August 1740.[389] On 30 January 1741/2, Thomas sold his brother Jonathan land in Smithfield near the dwelling house of their late father, Thomas Arnold.[390]

Thomas purchased one-fourth of a 180-acre parcel of land in Glocester from his sister and brother-in-law, Sarah and John Turpin, on 1 February 1743.[391] He sold two 57-acre parcels of land in Smithfield on 29 January 1741/2 and 60 acres of land on 29 January 1747/8.[392]

---

384 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209. However, the day is shown as the 11th at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends, 143.

385 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

386 Amy Arnold and her husband, Thomas, gave receipt for a payment from Edward Smith's estate according to *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 379.

387 Original deed in Thomas Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 14.

388 Smithfield Deeds, 2:73.

389 Glocester Deeds, 1:427, 482.

390 Original deed in Thomas Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 14.

391 Glocester Deeds, 3:220.

392 Smithfield Deeds, 2:68, 69. Original deed for the 1747/8 sale in Thomas Arnold file.

He was a lieutenant in the Smithfield Second Militia Company from 1745 through May 1749.[393] He was called Lieut. Thos. Arnold on a 1748 road tax list.[394]

Thomas died at Smithfield 31 July 1749.[395] The will of Thomas Arnold Jr. of Smithfield, dated 18 July 1749, was proved the next month, on 21 August 1749. He mentioned a dwelling house and barn in Providence. His wife Amy received half his personal estate "for the upkeep and education of my children" and the profit on half of his real estate until his sons Luke and Nathaniel reached age 21. His four daughters, Amy, Huldah, Phebe, and Alice, were mentioned.[396]

Thomas was a merchant. His will provided that his navigation and trading stock be sold. The inventory of his estate, taken 16 August 1749, was valued at £5,813. It included a case of bottles of rum, sundry books, two Negroes (£450), one-sixteenth and one-half of the schooner *Smithfield,* and one-half of one-sixteenth of the brig *Warrin,* notes receivable, and 2,421 gallons of "malases."[397]

Amy married second Daniel Mowry Jr. at Smithfield 19 August 1756.[398]

In December 1767, Amy and Daniel entered into arbitration with her children over their father's estate. One issue was that Daniel was claiming compensation for food, clothing, and other necessities he provided when daughters Phebe and Alice were still under age, offset by work they did for him. Also at issue were Thomas's farm; a Negro man named Cosa, a girl Jenny, and another girl named Rik; and four oxen and four old cows, as well as a legacy left to Phebe and Alice by their grandmother Elizabeth (Burlingame) (Arnold) Spencer. Phebe and Alice were represented

---

[393] Smith, *Civil and Military List of R.I.*, 106, 113, 120, 127, 134.

[394] Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield*, 30.

[395] Smithfield Probate, 2:6. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," 345.

[396] Smithfield Probate, 2:1. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 328.

[397] Smithfield Probate, 2:3.

[398] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.

by their guardian, Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield. Daughter Huldah was of lawful age. The verdict of the arbitration included an award to guardian Jonathan Arnold of £2,480 and to Huldah of £1,240.[399]

Children of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold, recorded at Smithfield:[400]

143 i. **Luke[5] Arnold**, born 17 August 1738.

144 ii. **Amie Arnold**, born 22 September 1740.

145 iii. **Huldah Arnold**, born 14 November 1742.

146 iv. **Nathaniel Arnold**, born 24 January 1744.

147 v. **Phebe Ann Arnold**, born 15 December 1746.

148 vi. **Alice Arnold**, born 30 May 1748.

---

[399] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 5:606.

[400] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.

43. **SARAH[4] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 10 April 1722, a daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Burlingame) Arnold.[401]

She married **JOHN TURPIN** before 1 February 1743, when they signed a deed together. She was called Sarah Turpin in her mother's will of 22 November 1749. John was a son of William and Catharine (Jenckes) Turpin of Providence. In his father's will of 12 March 1744, John inherited lands on the westerly side of the Seven Mile Line and rights in certain land held in partnership with Nathaniel Jenckes.[402]

On 30 January 1743, Sarah and John were living in Providence when they purchased 100 acres of land in Providence from Sarah's brothers Jonathan and Thomas.[403] Two days later, on 1 February 1743, Sarah and John sold their rights to one-fourth of a 180-acre plot of land in Glocester, Rhode Island, inherited from Sarah's father, to Sarah's brother Thomas Jr.[404] On 25 June 1743, they sold land in Smithfield to Sarah's brother Jonathan.[405] They sold another parcel in Smithfield on 6 October 1743. John sold a parcel of land in Providence on 27 November 1744.[406]

John may have realized he was having mental problems by 16 September 1745, when he appointed his "loving wife Sarah my attorney for me and in my name."[407] On 22 January 1747[/8?], John purchased land and a dwelling house in Providence next to land of Joseph Turpin from Gideon and Ruth Comstock.[408] On the last Wednesday in October 1748, Sarah petitioned the Rhode Island General Assembly. She mentioned that soon after purchasing the land from Gideon Comstock, "John fell into a state

---

401 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209.
402 *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 209.
403 Smithfield Deeds, 2:171.
404 Glocester Deeds, 3:220.
405 Deed in Jonathan Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 13.
406 Smithfield Deeds, 2:182. Providence Deeds, 11:270.
407 Providence Deeds, 12:53.
408 Providence Deeds, 12:162.

of lunacy and distraction, with no hopes of his being restored to good mind."[409] The land was sold back to Gideon on 20 March 1748[/9?].[410]

On 23 August 1750, the Rhode Island General Assembly authorized Sarah to sell as much of her husband's land as should be needed for maintenance of herself and him with the approval of the Providence Town Council.[411] On 14 May 1752, Sarah sold various parcels of land that had belonged to her father-in-law, William Turpin.[412] In December 1752, Sarah Turpin of Providence, wife and guardian of John Turpin, "who is adjug'd to be a man not in his right mind," brought suit to receive a debt from Jeremiah Arnold of Cumberland, Rhode Island.[413]

John died before 16 July 1770, when Sarah Turpin of Providence, widow, purchased land from Job Arnold.[414] In 1774, Sarah Turpin was listed as a head of a household in Providence that included two males under age 16 and three females over age 16.[415]

A survey of Providence starting at Dr. Jonathan Arnold's shop taken on 21 10th month [October] 1784 mentioned "John Turpin's widow's house."[416]

On 5 April 1794, Sarah sold a parcel of land in Providence.[417]

The death of "Mrs. Sarah Turpin, widow of John, at an advanced age" was reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 18 June 1796.[418]

---

[409] Rhode Island General Assembly Petitions, 7:10.
[410] Providence Deeds, 12:363.
[411] Rhode Island General Assembly Petitions, 7:84.
[412] Providence Deeds, 13:205.
[413] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 3:161.
[414] Providence Deeds, 19:284.
[415] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 51.
[416] *Providence, Town Records*, 18:19.
[417] Providence Deeds, 23:332.
[418] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 15: Providence Gazette Deaths, 362.

Children of John and Sarah (Arnold) Turpin, born probably in Providence:[419]

i. **Elizabeth Turpin**, mentioned in her grandmother's will of 22 November 1749.[420]

ii. **Catharine Turpin**, died young.

iii. **Sarah Turpin**, born 17 June 1754.

iv. **Benjamin Turpin**, born 12 October 1762.

---

[419] Greene, "Arnold Family," 74.
[420] Smithfield Probate, 2:78.

44. **JOHN[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold, who married at Providence, Rhode Island, in 1724.[421]

John is said to have lived at Johnston, Rhode Island.[422] He may have been one of the three males over age 16 in his father's household listed in the 1774 census of Johnston. He does not appear in the published vital records or deed indices of that town.

Son of John and (_____) (_____) Arnold:[423]

149 i. **Eleazer Arnold,** born about 1755; married in 1780.

---

[421] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.
[422] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.
[423] Greene, "Arnold Family," 86.

45. **DAVID[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold, who married at Providence, Rhode Island, in 1724.[424]

David married, as her second husband, **MERCY (WESTCOTT) LUET** at Providence 29 April 1762. Before that, on 26 April 1756, Mercy had married Peter Luet at Providence.[425] She was born about 1737, figuring from her reported age at death.

David is said to have served in the American Revolution.[426]

David died in 1799.[427] Captain David Arnold's death "in this town" was reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 16 March 1799 and the *U.S. Chronicle* of 14 March 1799.[428]

"Mercy Arnold, widow of Captain David Arnold," died at the age of 68, as reported in the *Providence Phenix* of 9 March 1805.[429]

David and Mercy (Wescott) (Luet) Arnold are said to have had the following children, who were born probably at Providence:[430]

i. **William[5] Arnold**, born 1763; died at sea with no children.

ii. **Mary Arnold**, born 1765; died 1852. Married **Samuel James**, no children. Samuel may have been the Samuel James who died in a shipwreck at sea 22 February 1823.[431] Mary was listed

---

[424] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 32.

[425] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 114.

[426] *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,* 1:23, primary source not identified.

[427] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.

[428] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131, 14: U.S. Chronicle Deaths, 472..

[429] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 234.

[430] *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,* 1:23. Also listed was a Sally Arnold born 29 August 1791 and died 27 July 1795. She is not included in this list since Mercy would have been in her fifties, not a likely age to have another child. Information on marriages and children from Greene, "Arnold Family," 86.

[431] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazetteer Deaths, 526.

in the 1850 census of Providence as age 84, born in Rhode Island, living with her sister Lydia.[432]

iii. **Betsey Arnold**, born 2 June 1769; died 26 November 1825, no children.

iv. **Sally Arnold**, born 18 October 1773; died 19 August 1778.

v. **Lydia Arnold**, born 15 November 1771. Married **Christopher Bentley** 31 August 1808,[433] who was born 4 March 1754, a son of William and Mary (_____) Bentley.[434] His first wife, Elizabeth, died at Woodstock, Connecticut, 24 July 1807.[435] Christopher was a sea captain and in 1799 sailed the ship *Ann & Hope* from Providence to Canton, China.[436] He died 4 July 1818 and is buried at East Greenwich, Rhode Island.[437] Lydia and Christopher had no children. As noted earlier, Lydia was living with her sister Mary in Providence in 1850. She died 11 August 1862.[438]

150 vi. **Welcome Arnold**, born 16 November 1777.

---

[432] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence, Ward 3, 173.

[433] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Rev. Stephen Gano's Marriages, 479.

[434] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 1: East Greenwich Births and Deaths, 99.

[435] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 178.

[436] The Rhode Island Historical Source, *http://rihs.org/mssinv/Nss 967.htm.*

[437] "Greenwich, R.I. Marriages from Grave and Death Records," *Rhode Island Vital Records, New Series*, 7:13.

[438] "Greenwich, R.I. Marriages from Grave and Death Records," 7:13.

46. **WILLIAM[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold, who married at Providence, Rhode Island, in 1724.[439]

He may have been the William Arnold who married **ANNE HOPKINS** at Providence 21 August 1763.[440]

It is possible the family briefly moved to Hoosick [now Adams], Berkshire County, Massachusetts.[441] William moved to Keene, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, by 1767, when his son Abraham was born there. He is then said to have moved to "Black River country" of New York.[442] The Black River runs through several New York counties, including Jefferson, Lewis, and Oneida. However, he may have moved further west to Ontario County, where his sons settled as early as 1814.[443]

William is said to have been a surveyor.[444]

Reputed children of William and Anne (Hopkins) Arnold:

151 i. **Abraham[5] Arnold**, born at Keene, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, 6 August 1767.[445] No further record.

152 ii. **Jonathan Arnold**, born at Keene about 1771.[446]

153 iii. **William Arnold**, born at Keene 28 March 1774.[447]

---

[439] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.
[440] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8.
[441] Greene, "Arnold Family," 28.
[442] "One Line of the Arnold Family," 432.
[443] *History of Ontario County, New York,* 2 vols. (Syracuse, N.Y., 1893), 2:262.
[444] Greene, "Arnold Family," 28.
[445] *History of Ontario County, New York,* 2:262.
[446] Age 79 in 1850, U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham, 271.
[447] William Richard Cutter, *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York* (New York, 1912), 659, lists Abraham and William with the birth date indicated for William, although it calls William a son of Abraham.

47. **JAMES[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold, who married at Providence, Rhode Island, in 1724.[448]

James Arnold, "son of Jonathan," married **RUTH SAYLES** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 22 August 1771. A daughter of Daniel and Susannah (Jillson) Sayles,[449] she was probably born about 1751 as her parents were married in 1750.[450]

James is said to have "moved West."[451] In the period after the Revolution, this usually meant somewhere in upstate New York.

---

[448] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.

[449] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12. Dorothy Higson White, *Descendants of Roger Williams, Book III – The Sayles Line* (East Greenwich, R.I., 2002), 67. Judith A. Hurst, *Sayles Country II* (Baltimore, 1990), 123.

[450] David Jillson, *Genealogy of the Gillson and Jillson Family* (Central Falls, R.I., 1876), 31.

[451] Greene, "Arnold Family," 29; "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.

48. **ALICE[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born about 1742 (married about 1762), a daughter of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold, who married at Providence, Rhode Island, in 1724.[452]

Alice is said to have married **AMOS MANN** about 1762.[453] He was probably the son of that name of Thomas and Rebecca (_____) Man born at Wrentham, Massachusetts, 18 September 1739.[454]

According to the pension file of Alice and Amos's son Jesse, Jesse was born in Johnston, Rhode Island, in 1763. The family was living in Smithfield during the American Revolution when Jesse enlisted there as a substitute for his father. In his pension file, Jesse stated that he lived in Massachusetts for two years and about 1795 moved to Greenfield, Saratoga County, New York, where Alice and Amos were living in 1800.[455]

Amos was listed in Smithfield in 1774 with a household of one male above age 16, three males under 16, one female above 16, and three females under 16.[456] In the 1777 military census he was listed as age 16–50, able to serve, and a resident, from Wrentham.[457] In 1778, he was taxed in Smithfield on a modest estate that included no land, three horned cattle, two swine, and personal estate valued at £18.[458]

Son Arnold Mann was living across the border in Douglas, Massachusetts, in 1785 when he married a girl from Glocester, Rhode Island.[459] His brother Jesse was living in Douglas in 1790.[460]

---

[452] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.
[453] "One Line of the Arnold Family," 432. Also Greene, "Arnold Family," 29. Date of marriage estimated from birth date of son Jesse in 1763.
[454] *Vital Records of Wrentham, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850,* 2 vols. (Boston, 1910), 1:137.
[455] Revolutionary War pension file #S11025.
[456] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 108.
[457] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 94.
[458] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 22 (1996): 123.
[459] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Marriages, 26.
[460] *Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Massachusetts* (Washington, D.C., 1908), 217.

Amos and his son Arnold Mann were found next to each other in Glocester, Rhode Island, in the 1790 census. Amos headed a household of one male age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and four females.[461]

Amos Mann was listed next to Jesse Mann in Greenfield, Saratoga County, New York, in 1800. His household included one male over age 45 and one female over age 45.[462] In 1810, Amos was not listed as head of a household, but the household of Jesse Mann included two males over age 45 and two females over age 45, suggesting that his parents were living with him. Close nearby were sons and son-in-law Arnold Mann, Thomas Mann, and Nebediah Hammond.[463]

Children of Amos and Alice (Arnold) Mann:[464]

i. **Jesse Mann**, born Johnston, Rhode Island, June 1763.[465]

ii. **Arnold Mann**, born about 1765.[466]

iii. **Asa Mann** said to have been a New York City alderman. Probably moved to Illinois.

iv. **Mercy or Aimy Mann**, married Nebediah Hammond.

v. **Rebecca Mann**, married Laban Keich.

---

[461] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 31.

[462] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Saratoga County, Greenfield, 58.

[463] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Saratoga County, Greenfield, 211.

[464] Greene, "Arnold Family," 29, 87, 88.

[465] Revolutionary War pension file #S11025, in which he identified his father as Amos Mann.

[466] Age 67 on 16 February 1833 in deposition in Jesse Mann's Revolutionary War pension file #S11025. Identified himself as brother of Jesse and son of Amos.

49. **JONATHAN[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* is said to have been born in 1743, a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold.[467]

He married **ELIZABETH PEARCE** of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, who was born about 1751.[468] Perhaps they were married just before the 1774 census, as their household in Johnston, Rhode Island, included just one male age 16 or more and one female age 16 or more.[469]

Jonathan and Elizabeth lived at Johnston. In the 1777 military census Jonathan was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[470] In 1790, his household included one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and two females.[471]

On 20 October 1768, Jonathan Arnold Jr. of Johnston purchased a half-acre lot in Johnston on the south side of the Killingly Road. The deed was witnessed by his parents, Jonathan and Elizabeth Arnold.[472] Jonathan and his wife Elizabeth sold this land on 19 September 1778.[473] The next month, on 28 October 1778, Jonathan Jr. purchased 23 acres of land in Johnston.[474] Jonathan and Elizabeth sold 3 acres of land on 12 April 1783.[475]

On 12 September 1801, Jonathan and his son Joseph (who was then 22 years old) purchased a 30-acre farm with a dwelling house in Johnston.[476] On 14 April 1810, Jonathan and his wife Elizabeth

---

[467] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432. The year is calculated from the age at death, 76 years, in 1819.

[468] James Arnold Collection at the Knight Memorial Library, Providence, Rhode Island, citing correspondence with Martin B. Arnold of Central Falls, Rhode Island, regarding Pearce Arnold Bible, FHL microfilm #1839088.

[469] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 227.

[470] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 52.

[471] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 31.

[472] Johnston Deeds, 1:432.

[473] Johnston Deeds, 2:611.

[474] Johnston Deeds, 2:138.

[475] Johnston Deeds, 2:158.

[476] Johnston Deeds, 2:336.

sold a part of the farm to Joseph, and Joseph and his wife Mary sold a part to Jonathan.[477]

On 10 June 1813, when Jonathan was about 70 years old, he and Elizabeth sold their son Pearce all of their land on the east side of the Killingly Road in Johnston "where I now live" for $1,500 and a lease on the land to be voided after both died.[478]

Jonathan Arnold of Johnston, yeoman, wrote his will 1 June 1819, and it was proved 21 August 1819. He mentioned his unnamed wife, sons Joseph and Pearce, daughter Elizabeth Hawkins, and granddaughter Katharine Coather.[479]

Elizabeth Arnold, widow of Jonathan, died at Johnston, age 70 years, 22 October 1821, as reported in the *Providence Phenix and Patriot* of 31 October 1821 and the *Rhode Island American* of 2 November 1821.[480]

Children of Jonathan Arnold, as named in their father's will:[481]

154 i. **Elizabeth[5] Arnold**, born 24 October 1777.

155 ii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 19 April 1779.

156 iii. **Pearce Arnold**, born 2 October 1786.[482]

---

[477] Johnston Deeds, 4, 163, 195,

[478] Johnston Deeds, 4:232, 233.

[479] "Johnston Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 311. Catherine received a portion of the land originally purchased by Jonathan and Joseph. On 25 June 1822, Catherine, wife of James Congdon Burlingame, both of Smithfield, sold her undivided interest in that land to her uncle, Pearce Arnold (Johnston Deeds, 7:410).

[480] Specific dates from Pearce Arnold Bible (see note above), newspaper accounts, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix and Patriot, 237, and 20: Rhode Island American Deaths, 536.

[481] Pearce Arnold Bible (see note above).

[482] Age 73 in U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, 4th District of Smithfield, 61; Tombstone at *www.rootsweb.com/~rigenweb/cemetery.*

50. **THOMAS[4] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born about 1749, a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Mathews) Arnold, who married at Providence, Rhode Island, in 1724.[483]

He married **ANSTIS THORNTON** in 1776.[484] She was born in 1759, a daughter of Daniel and Susanna (Pearce) Thornton of Johnston, Rhode Island.[485] Anstis Arnold was mentioned as a daughter in the 1793 will of Daniel Thornton.[486]

On 7 February 1787, Daniel Thornton deeded 91 rods of land in Johnston ("part of my homestead farm where I now dwell") to "my son-in-law, Thomas Arnold of Johnston, labourer, and my daughter Anstes Arnold, his wife."[487]

In 1790, Thomas headed a household in Johnston consisting of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and two females.[488]

Thomas died 12 April 1799.[489] His death at Johnston, in his 50th year, was reported in the *Providence Journal* 24 April 1799.[490]

Anstis Arnold, widow, and Harding Harris were appointed administrators of Thomas's estate on 26 April 1799. The inventory, appraised on 27 April at $232, included beds and bedding, a maple desk, a woolen wheel, and an old horsecart. Claims of creditors included funeral charges, George Arnold, "the doctor in the last sickness," and Nathan Arnold.[491]

---

[483] "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.
[484] Teel Bible Record, printed in 1815, manuscript A 5053 at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Boston.
[485] Year of birth from Teel Bible Record.
[486] "Johnston Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 314.
[487] Johnston Deeds, 3:42.
[488] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 32.
[489] Johnston Wills, FHL microfilm #915260.
[490] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 16: Providence Journal Deaths, 156.
[491] Johnston Wills, FHL microfilm #915260.

In 1800, Anstis headed a household in Johnston of one male age 10–15, one male age 16–44, three females under age 10, two females ages 16–25, and two females ages 26–44.[492]

In 1802, Anstis considered buying a farm in Otsego County, New York, perhaps as an investment; Her eldest son, George W., had moved there in 1800. A letter to her in Johnston from Otsego dated 18 September 1802 says: "Dear Madam. Sorry to hear of your sickness. Glad you are coming here. I have found you a farm, 100 acres; it has been leased."[493] No record of a purchase has been found, however.

On 27 November 1802, Anstis Arnold of Johnston, widow, sold two lots in Johnston for $1,000, one of 91 rods, "the same lot my honored father Daniel Thornton conveyed to my husband and myself 12 February 1787," and another lot of 29 acres "set off to me out of the homestead farm of my honored father Daniel Thornton." On the same date, Susanna Thornton, widow, released her right of dower "in the two lots sold by my daughter, Anstis Arnold.[494]

"Anstress" Arnold, widow the late Thomas of Johnston, died at Smithfield 16 January 1832, age 75 years.[495] The will of "Anstis Arnold of Smithfield, Rhode Island, widow," written 28 April 1828, was proved 31 March 1832. In it, Anstis mentioned her son George E.; daughter Catherine Barton, wife of John Barton Jr.; and grandson Benjamin Gustavus Teel.[496]

It is likely that most of the children of Thomas and Anstis died young since the 1815 Bible record of daughter Betsey's son, Benjamin Gustavus Teel, shows the births of only four children and the 1828 will of Anstis lists only George, Catherine, and a son of Betsey.

---

[492] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston.
[493] Anstis Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 11.
[494] Johnston Deeds, 3:411, 412.
[495] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 240.
[496] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 8 (1985): 240.

Children of Thomas and Anstis (Thornton) Arnold, born probably at Johnston:[497]

157 i. **George[5] Arnold**, born 29 November 1778.[498]

ii. **Anne Arnold**, no children.

iii. **Welcome Arnold.** Perhaps he was the Welcome Arnold of Johnston who sold an undivided quarter of land in Johnston on 2 March 1819 and the Welcome Arnold of North Providence who sold an undivided quarter of land in Johnston and North Providence on 12 July 1821.[499] A Welcome Arnold, born in 1798 and died 27 November 1842, is buried in the Rhodes Lot at North Providence.[500] No children.

iv. **Anstis Arnold**, no children

158 v. **Moses Arnold**, born March 1782.[501]

vi. **Susan Arnold**, no children.

vii. **Charles Arnold**, no children.

159 viii. **Betsey Arnold**, born 15 October 1792.[502]

ix. **Sally Arnold**, no children.

x. **Catherine Arnold**, presumably died young.

160 xi. **Catherine Arnold**, born 13 August 1798.[503]

---

[497] Greene, "Arnold Family," 89, 90. Those listed by Greene as having "no children" probably died young.
[498] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Johnston Births, 21.
[499] Johnston Deeds, 5:648, 7:39.
[500] Rhode Island Cemeteries Project at *Rootsweb.com.*
[501] Teel Bible Record.
[502] Teel Bible Record.
[503] Teel Bible Record.

51. **ELEAZER[4] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Eleazer and Sarah (Hawkins) Arnold.[504]

He married **MIRIAM ALLEN** at Trinity Church in Newport, Rhode Island, 1 September 1726.[505]

Eleazer's father died 18 December 1712, when Eleazer was probably a young boy. When his grandfather's will of 25 August 1722 was proved 14 January 1722/3, Eleazer and his brother David inherited parcels of land. In 1727, Eleazer and his new wife, Miriam, sold to his brother David two parcels of land in Providence that he inherited from his grandfather.[506]

Eleazer Arnold of Newport was described as a blacksmith in the records of the Rhode Island Superior Court, where he appeared several times as both a plaintiff and a defendant from 1726 through 1747. Most of the cases were for collection of debts. Some cases, however, give us further clues into his life. One case in 1742 involved Comfort, the widow of Benjamin Bull, late of Newport, and the possession of his homestead. In another case Eleazer successfully sued Caleb Carr of Newport, innkeeper, to recover a feather bed, two pillows, one bolster, one bedstead, and twelve "flagg bottomed chairs."[507] In June 1747, John Appleby of Smithfield, Rhode Island, blacksmith, brought suit at the Providence County Court of Common Appeals to recover a debt from Eleazer Arnold of Newport, blacksmith.[508]

Miriam witnessed a deed of Isaac Martindale of Newport, mariner, and Mercy his wife on 18 October 1731.[509]

---

[504] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.

[505] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 10: Trinity Church Newport – Marriages, 434.

[506] Providence Deeds, 7:225.

[507] Rhode Island Superior Court, FHL microfilms 945807, 945808 and 945809, cases, B:194, 213, 417, 63, 343, 410, 549, C:39, 48, 75, 89, 267, 308, 328, 396, 414, D:61, 62.

[508] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 2:414.

[509] "South Kingston Land Evidences," *RIGR* 11 (1988): 268.

Children of Eleazer and Miriam (Allen) Arnold, buried at Newport, Rhode Island:[510]

i. **Mary[5] Arnold**, born 1727; died 15 July 1727, age 3 weeks.

ii. **Jireh Arnold**, born 1728; died 9 September 1729, age 10 months.

iii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 1732; died 13 August 1732, age 4 months, 9 days.

[510] "Common Burial Ground, Newport," *Vital Records: Rhode Island, New Series*, 11:15.

52. **DAVID[4] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Eleazer and Sarah (Hawkins) Arnold.[511]

He married **ALICE SMITH** at Providence, Rhode Island, 17 July 1726.[512] She was born at Providence 25 January 1699/1700, a daughter of Joseph and Lydia (Gardiner) Smith.[513]

David's grandfather, Eleazer Arnold, left a parcel of land to him in his will, dated 25 August 1722 and proved 14 January 1722/3. When the will was proved, David claimed that the will did not correctly describe the northern boundary of the land he was given, noting, "Through a mistake in the writeing of my said Grandfather's will, there is one clause which seems to give som Lands to mee which I am well assured was his reail Intention to Give to my afore said two uncles . . . Joseph Arnold and Jeremiah Arnold." He wrote that he had agreed on the correct boundary with his uncles.[514]

David was named one of the surveyors of highways in Providence on 3 June 1723.[515]

On 5 November 1731, David and Alice sold their homestead farm of 100 acres in Smithfield, with their dwelling house, orchard, fences, and other buildings. They also sold a 12-acre parcel, half a sawmill, and three-fifths acre of land next to the mill.[516]

---

[511] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.

[512] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8.

[513] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 245; Joseph and Lydia (Gardiner) Smith also had a son Joseph born 18 December 1695. In a deed dated 10 November 1762, David and Alice's daughter, Lydia Arnold, was called a daughter of Alice, sister of Joseph Smith, deceased (Providence Deeds, 16:214). This is the basis for the conclusion that the Alice Smith who married David Arnold was a daughter of Joseph and Lydia (Gardiner) Smith.

[514] *Providence Town Records,* 16:223.

[515] *Providence Town Records,* 13:62.

[516] Smithfield Deeds, 1:27.

On 26 February 1735/6, about a month before David died, he sold his 9-acre "homestead where I now dwell" in Smithfield for £340. The deed was acknowledged by Alice Arnold, widow, on 22 April 1736.[517]

David died at Smithfield 31 March 1736. The inventory of his estate, taken 3 April 1736, was valued at £380. It included carpenter's and joiner's tools, furniture, pewter, iron and brass pots and kettles, one looking glass, a spinning wheel, "hoggs and turkey," and a bond receivable.[518]

Alice married second Captain Richard Sayles at Smithfield 14 May 1738.[519] Alice's father called her Alice Sayles in his will written 26 October 1742.[520] Alice died before Richard married, third, Susanna (Ballou) Inman on 10 January 1742[/3?]. On 25 September 1744, Maturin Ballou [David's stepfather] was made guardian of the two Arnold children and their property.[521]

Children of David and Alice (Smith) Arnold:[522]

i. **Lydia[5] Arnold**, born 29 October 1728;[523] married her cousin **Jeremiah Arnold** (#70).

ii. **William Arnold**. No further record.

---

[517] Smithfield Deeds, 2:479.

[518] Smithfield Probate, 1:71. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345, citing 3:71–74 of Smithfield Probate.

[519] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

[520] "Abstracts of Providence Wills," *RIGR* 4 (1981): 156.

[521] Ballou, *Ballous in America*, 60.

[522] Listed in Ballou, *Ballous in America*, 60. That genealogy claims that Alice was Alice Ballou, daughter of Maturin Ballou. It notes that Maturin Ballou was appointed guardian of the two children on 25 September 1744, citing Smithfield Council B1:71.

[523] Date of birth on her gravestone, Alden Gamaliel Beaman, *Washington County Rhode Island Marriages from Gravestones*, Vital Record of Rhode Island, New Series, Vol. 3 (Princeton, Mass., 1977), 10.

53. **SUSANNA[4] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a daughter of Eleazer and Sarah (Hawkins) Arnold.[524] She was born probably about 1702, figuring from her 1722 marriage date.

She married **SAMUEL BALLOU** at Providence, Rhode Island, 16 December 1722.[525] He was born 23 June 1692, a son of James and Susannah (Whitman) Ballou.[526]

Samuel's father James deeded to Samuel "all my homestead farm where I now dwell" on 27 June 1726.[527]

Susanna died before 25 July 1761, when Samuel married second Mary (_____) Smith, widow of Elias, at Smithfield.[528]

Samuel died 25 January 1765. "Samuel Ballou of Smithfield, yeoman, far advanced in age," wrote his will 14 December 1764, and it was proved 8 February 1765. He mentioned his wife, Mary, who received all the estate that she had when they were married; sons Jonathan, Eleazer, Samuel, David, Aaron, and Moses, the last three under age 21; daughters Patience Sayles, Susannah Arnold, and Jemima Ballou; and grandchildren Stephen Whipple, Phebe Whipple, and Mary Lapham.[529]

Children of Samuel and Susanna (Arnold) Ballou, born at Smithfield:[530]

i. **Jonathan Ballou**, born 10 November 1723.

ii. **Lydia Ballou**, born 6 December 1725.

iii. **Phebe Ballou**, born 9 May 1728.

---

[524] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.
[525] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 7.
[526] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.
[527] Providence Deeds, 7:85. Ballou, *Ballous in America,* 49.
[528] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 15.
[529] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982):301.
[530] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 90, 91.

iv. **Eleazer Ballou**, born 12 June 1730.

v. **Patience Ballou**, born 15 July 1732.

vi. **Samuel Ballou**, born 24 May 1735; died 1 July 1735.

vii. **Samuel Ballou**, born 4 February 1736.

viii. **Sussanah Ballou**, born 28 June 1739; married her cousin **Jacob Arnold** (#78).

ix. **Jemima Ballou**, born 14 May 1742; married her cousin **William Arnold** (#79).

x. **David Ballou**, born 23 August 1734.

xi. **Aaron Ballou** (twin), born 30 January 1748.

xii. **Moses Ballou** (twin), born 30 January 1748.

54. **PATIENCE[4] ARNOLD** *(Eleazer[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a daughter of Eleazer and Sarah (Hawkins) Arnold.[531] She was born probably about 1708, based on her 1728 marriage date.

She married **WILLIAM BROWN,** probably at Providence, Rhode Island, about 1728.[532] He was born at Providence about 1708, a son of Jabez and Ann (_____) Brown.[533]

Until 1733, William and Patience resided on his father's land at Westquadomset Hill (now known as Sayles Hill). On 14 January 1734/5, William bought a farm of Peter Ballou on the Moshassuck River in what is now Saylesville. The house Ballou had built there in 1714 was still standing in 1926. All but two of the children of William and Patience moved to East Hoosick (Adams), Massachusetts.[534]

William died at Smithfield 27 January 1757.[535] As "William Brown of Smithfield, yeoman," he had written his will 16 January 1757; it was proved 19 February 1757. In it, he mentioned his wife Patience; sons Eleazer and Jeremiah, under age 21; and daughters Amey Smith, Patience Arnold, and Sarah, Jerusha, Mary, and Phebe, the last four under 18.[536]

Children of William and Patience (Arnold) Brown, born at Smithfield:[537]

i. **Patience Brown**, born 3 July 1729; married her cousin **Caleb Arnold** (#58).

ii. **William Brown**, born 10 April 1731.

---

[531] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield,"1:66.
[532] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.
[533] Browne, "Chad Brown and His Descendants," *Register* 80 (1926): 183.
[534] Browne, "Chad Brown and His Descendants," 183.
[535] Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 346.
[536] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980); 333.
[537] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 92. Children without birth dates were listed in their father's will.

iii. **Susanna Brown**, born 19 May 1733.

iv. **Amie Brown**, born 2 March 1734.

v. **Eleazer Brown**, born 31 December 1736.

vi. **David Brown**, born 27 April 1739.

vii. **Jeremiah Brown.**

viii. **Sarah Brown.**

ix. **Jerusha Brown.**

x. **Mary Brown**, born about 1750;[538] married her cousin **Comfort Arnold** (#66).

xi. **Phebe Brown.**

---

[538] Died 7 September 1818, age 68 years. Inscription at Arnold-Comfort Cemetery, Fleming, New York, *www.rootsweb.com/~nycayuga/cem/cem51.htm.*

55. **JOSEPH[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 30 April 1717, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[539]

He married **AMY BUCKLIN** of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, 8 July 1746, at Providence, Rhode Island.[540] They had posted intentions at Rehoboth 21 June 1746.[541] She may have been the Amy Bucklin born 7 January 1722/3 at Rehoboth, a daughter of Isaac and Sarah (Whipple) Bucklin.[542]

Joseph became a freeman at Smithfield in May 1739.[543]

He was of Smithfield when on 17 November 1744 he sailed as second lieutenant on the *Reprisal*, a privateer sloop of 90 tons, mounted with twelve carriage guns and sixteen swivel guns. It was the first privateer to sail from Providence during King George's War against Spain, just after France had joined with Spain. (Privateers were private vessels granted official authority to attack and capture enemy vessels.) On 28 December 1744, the *Reprisal* attacked a French vessel near Bermuda and after a five-hour battle captured the vessel and its cargo of sugar, cocoa, cotton, and coffee bound from Martinique to France.[544]

Joseph sailed on another cruise with the *Reprisal* in June 1745, again as second lieutenant. They recaptured an American vessel that had been taken by a French privateer. They then sailed with another privateer and attacked a large thirty-six-gun Spanish vessel. After a long battle, the Spanish vessel escaped. The captain of the *Reprisal* was killed in that battle.[545]

The *Reprisal* was refitted in Rhode Island and sailed again with nine months' worth of provisions on 11 August 1746, this time with Joseph as first lieutenant. This was just one month after

---

[539] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births, 209.
[540] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Marriages, 8.
[541] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, 420.
[542] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, 561.
[543] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 4:555.
[544] Howard M. Chapin, *Rhode Island Privateers in King George's War 1739–1748* (Providence, 1926), 176.
[545] Chapin, *Rhode Island Privateers in King George's War*, 177.

Joseph and Amy married. During this voyage, the crew captured several enemy vessels.[546]

In November 1747, Joseph was made captain of the *Reprisal.* They touched at Tortola in the Virgin Islands and, finding that the governor of Tortola was sailing to Santa Cruz, offered to convoy him. After they arrived at Santa Cruz, they discovered that five enemy privateers were hovering off the port. The *Reprisal* went out to fight them, first attacking the largest vessel, a Spanish privateer that had a crew of 120 men. After a three-hour battle, the *Reprisal* sank the Spanish vessel. All but nineteen of the Spanish crew were lost. The *Reprisal* lost seven men and received thirty-six shots "under her whale." She had four feet of water in her hold when she reached Tortola. The other four vessels were small French privateers, two of which they took to Tortola. One they drove ashore, and the fourth escaped.[547]

"Captain Joseph Arnold" died at Boston 11 December 1750.[548] He was just 33 years old. His widow, Amy, was appointed administratrix of his estate. The inventory was taken 31 January 1750/1 and was valued at £2,722. It included £306 worth of wearing apparel, cash, bonds, demand notes, a walking "cain," a "libera" of books, two dozen beer and wine glasses, "three cases of bottles with sum lickor," furniture, and 120 gallons of rum![549]

Amy married, second, Joseph's brother Joshua Arnold (#60), at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 30 August 1752.[550]

Son of Joseph and Amy (Bucklin) Arnold:[551]

i. **James**[5] ? or **Joseph Arnold.** No further record.

---

[546] Chapin, *Rhode Island Privateers in King George's War,* 179–184.
[547] Chapin, *Rhode Island Privateers in King George's War,* 184–185.
[548] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[549] Smithfield Probate, 2:46, 47.
[550] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[551] Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy,* 2:117, lists a son as James. However, in "Arnold Family," Greene calls him Joseph.

56. **BENJAMIN[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 16 March 1719, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[552]

He married **ANNA DEXTER** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 14 or 15 February 1740/1.[553] She was born in 1722, a daughter of John and Mary (Brown) Dexter of Smithfield.[554] John Dexter named Benjamin Arnold Esq. as a son-in-law in his will dated 20 June 1769.[555]

Shortly after his marriage, on 26 May 1741, Benjamin's father deeded him three parcels of land in Smithfield.[556] On 3 March 1753, Benjamin and his cousin Job Arnold (#39) purchased the right to set up a lime kiln on land "next to the Pawtucket River at the head of the Island," for ninety-nine years, paying one shilling for each load of limestone processed.[557] On 29 5th month [May] 1788, Benjamin and his son Levi sold one-third of the rights to that lime kiln, in a deed that referred to the 1753 agreement.[558]

Benjamin's farm was taxed in 1778 on four houses, one-third of a lime kiln, a tanyard, two horses, two oxen, ten horned cattle, fifteen sheep/goats, nine swine, 35 acres of pasture to keep eight cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 60 bushels of grain, 4 acres of orchard producing 15 barrels of cider, 23 acres of mowing land producing 25 tons of English hay and 25 tons of fresh hay, and 23 acres of wood and waste land, with a total of 90 acres. His personal estate was valued at £72 and his real estate at £881.[559]

Benjamin arranged for land for his sons Levi and Simeon by deeding Levi half of his homestead farm in Smithfield with the provision that Levi deed to Simeon 60 acres of land in Scituate, Rhode Island, they had owned jointly.[560]

---

[552] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209.
[553] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.
[554] S. C. Newman, *Dexter Genealogy* (Providence, 1859), 22.
[555] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 33.
[556] Smithfield Deeds, 2:27.
[557] Smithfield Deeds, 7:270.
[558] Smithfield Deeds, 8:94.
[559] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 18.
[560] Smithfield Deeds, 7:398, Scituate Deeds, 7:393.

Benjamin maintained account books and diaries for much of his life. His earliest entries were in 1766 and were mostly accounts of money due to or from various people. In 1793, he noted that he sent one dollar by Comfort Arnold to (his daughter) Lavina Arnold in Adams (Massachusetts). Starting in 1802, when Benjamin was in his eighties, the diaries mention visits of relatives and frequent visits to Quaker meetings in several towns. In 1802, he cut his "ancl" with an ax while hooping a cask. On 16 November 1802, he noted, "I am 83 years 8 mo. today. Wrote this by candlelight without spectacles, in good health." On 4 9th month [September] 1803, he noted that he received a letter from Levi [his son] at Hartford dated the 28th of last month. On 3 9th month [September] 1804, "Simeon [another son] his wife and child set off for Scituate in a sleigh." That day he and Lydia [daughter] left for Swansea [Massachusetts] for the Yearly Meeting of the Society of Friends. The last entries were in 1804.[561]

Benjamin Arnold "of Joseph and Mercy, aged 90 years, 10 months, 22 days," died 19 2nd month [February] 1810.[562] He had written his will at Smithfield 25 August 1799, and it was proved 10 March 1810. Benjamin had a large library. He left his "Great Bible" to his son Simeon, and his son Levi received William Penn's *Selected Works.* His daughter Lavina, wife of Isaac Arnold, and his daughters Lydia and Deborah also received specific books. All children were to divide "the remainder of my printed books and pamphlets." He also mentioned granddaughters Mary, Anna, Sarah, Lydia, and Phebe, daughters of Simeon; Anna, Freelove, and Mary, daughters of Lavina; and Lydia and Amey, daughters of Levi, all under 18. He also mentioned his lime rock and a lime kiln.[563]

Benjamin's daughters Lydia and Deborah were executors of his estate. Their account included payments of $71 to Dr. Stephen Rundall and $5 to purchase a coffin.[564]

---

[561] Benjamin Arnold Diaries, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 11.

[562] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

[563] Smithfield Probate, 3:356. Also "Smithfield Wills," 89.

[564] Smithfield Probate, 3:489.

Children of Benjamin and Anna (Dexter) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[565]

161 i. **Mary[5] Arnold**, born 23 April 1741.

ii. **Martha Arnold**, born 17 November 1743; died 21 3rd month [March] 1795, unmarried.

iii. **Lavina Arnold**, born 4 or 14 April 1746; married her cousin **Isaac Arnold** (#132).

162 iv. **Simeon Arnold**, born 7 March 1748/9.

163 v. **Levi Arnold**, born 16 11th month [January] 1751.

vi. **Lydia Arnold**, born 2 5th month [May] 1754; died 13 11th month [November] 1837, aged 84 years, unmarried.

vii. **Deborah Arnold**, born 26d 3m 1760; died 14 4th month [April] 1850, aged 90 years, 0 months, 18 days, unmarried.

---

[565]Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88; 7: Providence Friends Births, 245 (says born in Smithfield), 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

57. **AMOS[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 29 March 1721, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[566]

He married first **SARAH WILKINSON** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 23 February 1745/6.[567] She was born 27 June 1727, a daughter of John and Rebecca Wilkinson.[568] In John Wilkinson's 1753 will, he named his daughter "Sarah Arnold."[569]

The records show that Amos married second **DEBORAH (COMSTOCK) ARNOLD** 8 May 1761, at Smithfield.[570] She was the widow of Enoch[5] Arnold (#109) and had married him 23 June 1747 at Smithfield.[571]

On 20 June 1744, Amos purchased 6 acres of land in Smithfield on both sides of the Moshassuck River from his father.[572]

Amos was a freeman in Smithfield in 1749.[573] On 15 December 1750, Amos Arnold of Smithfield purchased land in Providence from John Arnold Jr., Jeremiah Arnold, and Caleb Arnold.[574] Amos Arnold, cordwainer (shoemaker) of Smithfield, purchased 10 acres of land from his brother Benjamin on 4 November 1762.[575]

Amos and Deborah moved to Cumberland, Rhode Island. Amos was called "of Cumberland," in a deed dated 4 December 1764.[576] However, he was called "of Smithfield" when he purchased 56 acres of land in Cumberland, one-quarter of a sawmill and half of

---

566 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209. Mentioned in his father's will and in his own will Amos mentioned his grandfather, Amos Statford, deceased.
567 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
568 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 121.
569 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 333.
570 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 333.
571 Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 201.
572 Smithfield Deeds, 2:280.
573 MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen,* 12.
574 Providence Deeds, 12:412.
575 Smithfield Deeds, 6:44.
576 Cumberland Deeds, 4:104.

a grist mill on 6 March 1765.[577] He was called "of Cumberland" a few weeks later, on 14 May 1765.[578] Amos was listed at Cumberland in 1774 with a household of two males ages 16 or more, three males under age 16, two females ages 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[579] He was listed in the 1777 military census as age 50–60, unable to bear arms.[580] In 1782, his household included two males under age 16, one female under age 16, two males ages 16–21, one female age 27–49, and one male age 50 or more.[581] In 1790, the household had three males age 16 or more and two females age 16 or more.[582]

A probate record of 27 February 1775 for Enoch Arnold included the report of Amos Arnold, cordwainer, and Deborah Arnold, his wife, who was administrator of the estate of her former husband, Enoch Arnold of Cumberland, deceased.[583] In his will, Amos called himself Amos Arnold of Cumberland, Rhode Island, "cordwainer, alias miller."[584]

Amos died 28 November 1792, "in his 72nd year."[585] His will, dated 10 January 1792, was proved 25 February 1793. He mentioned his grandfather Amos Stafford, deceased; his wife, Deborah Arnold; sons Rufus, Ahab, Enoch, Amos, Stafford (under 21), and Eleazer Arnold (late of Cumberland, deceased); daughters Susannah Brown and Sarah Sweetland and his wife's daughter, Amey Aldrich, wife of Laben Aldrich; and grandchildren Joseph Arnold, Lydia Scott, and Susannah Arnold, children of Eleazer Arnold, late of Cumberland, deceased. His wife, Deborah, was left the profit of half his land and buildings and all of his personal estate. He mentioned a grist or corn mill, a sawmill, and a blacksmith's shop, which was left to son Enoch. Son Amos was left land in

---

577 Cumberland Deeds, 4:200.
578 Cumberland Deeds, 4:201.
579 *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 203.
580 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 27.
581 Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.
582 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 27.
583 Cumberland Probate, 5:211.
584 "Cumberland Wills," 79.
585 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

Cumberland and Massachusetts provided he pay £60 to Stafford Arnold and provide for Lucretia Arnold as long as she was unmarried. Grandson Joshua was left land in Warwick, Kent County, Rhode Island, which had been given to Amos by his grandfather Amos Stafford. The inventory of Amos's estate included clothing, furniture, pewter, a brass kettle, two barrels of cider, 200 pounds of pork, milk, butter, 100 bushels of Indian corn, shoe leather, and shoemaker's tools.[586]

Children of Amos and Sarah (Wilkinson) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[587]

i. _____[5] **Arnold**, born 17 May 1746; died six days later.

164 ii. **Eleazer Arnold**, possibly born about 1747.

165 iii. **Susannah Arnold**, born 26 December 1749.

166 iv. **Rufus Arnold**, born 8 February 1752.

v. **Lydia Arnold**, born 25 February 1754; died 24 October 1754.[588]

vi. _____ **Arnold**, born 10 September 1756; died 26 September.

vii. **John Arnold**, born 28 January 1758; died 11 June 1758.

Children of Amos and Deborah (Comstock) Arnold, the first three born at Smithfield, the next three at Cumberland:[589]

167 viii. **Enoch Arnold** (twin), born 6 March 1762.

168 ix. **Sarah Arnold** (twin), born 6 March 1762.

169 x. **Ahab Arnold**, born 26 June 1764.

---

[586] Cumberland Probate, 6:322.
[587] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[588] Greene, "Arnold Family," 94.
[589] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89; 3: Cumberland Births, 75.

170 xi. **Amos Arnold**, born 27 January 1767.

xii. **Lucinda (Lucretia?) Arnold**, born 15 August 1769. No children.[590]

xiii. **Stafford Arnold,** born 1771 or later (under age 21 in 1792, according to his father's will). No children.[591]

---

[590] Greene, "Arnold Family," 96.

[591] Greene, "Arnold Family," 96. No date of birth is shown at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births, 75. Greene shows a date of birth of 9 June 1790, but this must be a typing error, as his mother would have been too old and Stafford witnessed a deed in 1790 (Cumberland Deeds, 7:321).

58. **CALEB[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 26 May 1725, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[592]

He married first **PATIENCE BROWN** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 26 January 1745.[593] She was born at Smithfield 3 July 1729, a daughter of William and Patience (Arnold) Brown.[594]

He married second **ANNE ARNOLD** 2 June 1773. [595] She was born at Smithfield 17 February 1733/4, a daughter of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold.[596]

Caleb's father deeded him 28 acres of land in Smithfield on 13 May 1746.[597] Caleb was made a freeman at Smithfield 1748.[598] He was in Smithfield in August 1757 when he marched on an alarm during the French and Indian War. One-sixth of the militia of the colony was mobilized for the relief of Fort William Henry, but the fort fell before the troops could reach it.[599] On 24 March 1759, Caleb and Patience sold their 13-acre farm in Smithfield together with a small parcel of land "on which said Caleb's house standethe."[600]

Caleb moved to Glocester, Rhode Island, on what was known as Arnold's Hill, overlooking many miles of Connecticut. He purchased the 150-acre farm of James King Jr. on 9 March 1759 and was described as "of Glocester, but late of Smithfield."[601] He purchased 5 acres of Cedar Swamp south of Punhunganset Pond on the west side of the river on 6 February 1762.[602] On 13 May

---

[592] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 209. Mentioned in his father's will.
[593] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[594] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 92.
[595] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[596] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[597] Smithfield Deeds, 2:432.
[598] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen,* 12.
[599] Howard M. Chapin, *Rhode Island in the Colonial Wars,* 2 vols. (Providence, 1918, 1920; repr. in one vol., Baltimore, 1994), 10, 28.
[600] Smithfield Deeds, 4:327.
[601] Glocester Deeds, 6:388.
[602] Glocester Deeds, 7:144.

1763, he purchased 35 acres of land in Glocester adjoining his other land.[603] On 1 June 1770, Caleb sold 34 acres of land in Glocester "where I now dwell with dwelling house" to his son Esek Arnold, "for love and goodwill."[604] The next year, on 18 November 1771, he sold to "my son Nehemiah Arnold" 45 acres of land in Glocester, "part of my homestead farm where I now dwell."[605] On 7 September 1774, Caleb and his wife, Anne (whom he had married the previous year), sold 8 acres of land in Glocester that he had purchased at a sheriff's sale in 1772.[606] On 3 June 1776, he and "Anna" sold a 4-acre portion of the "homestead farm where I now dwell."[607] He sold 5 acres of swamp on 14 February 1777.[608] On 16 April 1783, he and Anne sold 40 acres and "the house in which he now lives," to their son Jabez. On the same day he sold 33 acres, "the southerly part of the farm where I now dwell," to "my beloved son Caleb Arnold Jr." [609]

Caleb was granted a license to operate a tavern in Glocester in 1770. He served as a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly from Glocester in 1773 and 1778.[610]

Caleb served as a corporal in Colonel Robert Elliot's Regiment in the American Revolution in 1776.[611] In May 1778, he was appointed to pay the bounties allowed by the state to men serving in the army from Glocester. In 1780, he was on a committee to furnish troops and supplies in support of the French fleet, which had arrived in Rhode Island. It has been said that he and eight sons and three sons-in-law all served in the American Revolution.[612]

---

[603] Glocester Deeds, 7:247.
[604] Glocester Deeds, 8:447.
[605] Glocester Deeds, 9:181.
[606] Glocester Deeds, 9:302.
[607] Glocester Deeds, 9:353.
[608] Glocester Deeds, 9:455.
[609] Glocester Deeds, 10:148, 157.
[610] Perry, *Brief History of the Town of Glocester*, 91, A1.
[611] Benjamin Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island* (Boston, 1850), 84.
[612] "Revolutionary Heroes, Caleb Arnold the Patriot," *Narragansett Historical Register* 9 (1891):145. See also Perry, *Brief History of the Town of Glocester*, 17, 19, 97, A1. Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:119.

However, son-in-law Jonathan Brown, husband of Caleb's daughter Acsah, probably did not serve in the Revolution.

In 1774, Caleb's household in Glocester included five males ages 16 or more, two males under age 16, two females ages 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[613] In 1777, Caleb was listed as between age 16 and 60 and able to serve in the military.[614]

In 1778, Caleb was taxed on property that included three houses, one horse, fourteen horned cattle, eight sheep or goats, and nine swine; twenty acres of pasture to keep six cows, six acres of tillage producing 108 bushels of grain, two acres of orchard, and 114 acres of woodland with a total of 167 acres; debts owed of £15, personal estate valued at £57, and real estate valued at £800.[615]

In the 1782 census, Caleb's household included two males under age 16, one male over age 16, and one female under age 16.[616]

Caleb died at Glocester 5 February 1784.[617]

After Caleb's death, Anne married, second, Benjamin Wilkinson.[618]

---

[613] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 128.
[614] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 42.
[615] "The Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 49.
[616] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.
[617] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.
[618] Greene, "Arnold Family," 55.

Children of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold, born at Smithfield and Glocester:[619]

171 i. **Esek (Ezekiel)[5] Arnold**, born 23 May 1746.

ii. **Israel Arnold**, born about 1747; probably died before 1784, as he did not sign the agreement of the heirs of Caleb dated 4 February 1784.

172 iii. **Nehemiah Arnold**, born 15 March 1748.[620]

173 iv. **Lucy Arnold**, born 5 November 1748. (Date probably wrong; perhaps the correct year is 1749.)

174 v. **William Arnold**, born 31 May 1751.[621]

vi. **Othniel Arnold.** Critically wounded at the Battle of Bunker Hill; died a few months later at home in Glocester.[622]

175 vii. **Jabez Arnold**, born 1755.[623]

176 viii. **Caleb Arnold**, born 5 July 1757 at Smithfield.[624]

177 ix. **Edward Arnold**, born 26 October 1759.[625]

178 x. **Oliver Arnold**, born about 1762.[626]

---

[619] Most are listed in the agreement of heirs dated 4 February 1784, Glocester Deeds, 11:189. Israel from Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:119. Othniel, Joseph, and Arba from a manuscript by Anna Clough Sherman, a great-granddaughter of Jonathan and Acsah Brown, written about 1900, present location unknown. Some dates of birth are from secondary sources, and some have not been verified in primary sources.

[620] Birth date from *Boston Evening Transcript*, 18 August 1920, #8205, citing a family Bible.

[621] Date of birth from Revolutionary War pension file S17243.

[622] Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.

[623] Revolutionary War pension file W20630.

[624] Date of birth from Revolutionary War pension file S12003.

[625] Year of birth supported by Revolutionary War pension file W20631, stating he was age 58 on 25 April 1818.

[626] Year of birth stated in Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:210.

179 xi. **Patience Arnold**, born about 1763.[627]

180 xii. **Acsah Arnold**, born 27 May 1767.[628]

Children of Caleb and Anne (Arnold) Arnold, presumably born at Glocester:[629]

181 xiii. **Arba Arnold**, said to have been born 1774.

182 xiv. **Joseph Arnold**, said to have been born 1776.

---

[627] Age 80 in 1843, according to Revolutionary War pension file W26021.
[628] Date of birth from Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.
[629] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 201. Years of birth from *Boston Evening Transcript*, 13 September 1920, #8205.

59. **DEBORAH[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 15 May 1727, a daughter of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[630]

She married **WILLIAM BENSLEY** or **BENCHLEY** 25 December 1744. He was born in 1725, a son of William and Elizabeth (Ellison) Bensley.[631]

William was listed on the list of Smithfield residents of 1748 close to some of his brothers-in-law.[632] The town's population was then 450.

That same year, on 9 February 1748, he signed a power of attorney with other "officers, seamen and those who have purchased shares together with the owners of the sloop *Reprisal*, a private sloop of war." [633] The *Reprisal*, a 90-ton ship with twelve carriage guns and sixteen swivel guns,[634] was the first privateer to sail from Providence. William's brother-in-law, Joseph Arnold, became captain of the *Reprisal* in 1747. In a 1756 deed, William's father described him as a mariner of Providence.[635]

At the time of the American Revolution, William was probably the William "Bentley" listed on the Smithfield alarm list drafted 1 August 1778.[636] He was called "Captain William Benchley" earlier that year, when he and two others inventoried the estate of Captain Christopher Brown.[637] He was about 50 years old when the war broke out, and it is not known if he actually served in combat.

---

630 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births, 209.

631 Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:121. The name was spelled "Bensley" in the 1790 census and the newspaper notice of his death. The Smithfield records of his children and his will spell it "Benchley."

632 Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield*, 78.

633 *Providence Town Records*, 9:97.

634 Chapin, *Rhode Island Privateers in King George's War*, 176.

635 Roger D. Joslyn, "The Benchley-Bensley Family," *Register* 142 (1988): 11.

636 Military Papers, Rhode Island Historical Society, Mss. 673, subgroup 2, box 3, folder 85.

637 Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 13, citing Smithfield Probate, 1(1769–1797): 161.

Deborah may have been a midwife, for the Smithfield town council on 19 November 1781 voted to pay her 6 shillings "for Waiting Upon the widow Cross man In Time of Her Labour."[638] Other evidence that Deborah proved some sort of nursing care is a letter of 2 2nd month [February] 1789 from William to "friend Moses Brown," asking that he "settle our affairs" before leaving on a journey:[639]

> If you Do not I shall put it in the power of the Councel for I think that nine years is a Long time to wate. I shall put you in mind that the five and twenty doller that they promise to pay to my wife is nothing towards the last Six Weeks nursing mother which was Agreed to be three Dollars p[r] week. I Expect Interest from the time the money become Due until it is pad and then to be as good as Silver money.

He was probably the William "Benely" listed at Smithfield in 1774 with a household of two males ages 16 or more, three males under age 16, two females ages 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[640] He was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve in the 1777 military census.[641] He was taxed in Smithfield in 1778 with one house, two horned cattle, two sheep/goats, four swine, £10 in debt, personal estate of £6, and real estate of £20.[642]

Benchley worked for Elisha Olney of Smithfield. On 27 January 1778, Olney paid William 12 shillings for "four oxen half a day to cart wood." Later entries in Olney's account book through 20 March 1780 show additional payments to Benchley for labor.[643]

Years later, on 15 April 1811, only a few months before William's death, Elisha Olney of Smithfield, leased to Benchley, for "the love

---

[638] Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 13, citing Smithfield Town Council and Probate, 1.

[639] Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 13, citing Moses Brown Papers, 6:57, at the Rhode Island Historical Society.

[640] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 104.

[641] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census* (Baltimore, 1985), 92.

[642] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," 21(1995): 60.

[643] Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 12, citing Fenner Papers, Series I, Vol. 39C, no. 17726 at Rhode Island Historical Society.

and good will I have for the said William Benchley," some farmland in Smithfield. By an indenture of the same date, Olney deeded land in Smithfield to William Benchley, cordwainer (shoemaker). This last deed is the only record that William was a cordwainer.[644]

William "Bensley" was in Smithfield in 1790 with a household of two males over age 16 and two females.[645]

William "Bensley" died at Smithfield 30 September 1811, at the age of 86.[646] William "Benchley" of Smithfield, yeoman, "far advanced in age," had written his will 7 June 1809; it was proved 9 November 1811. He left his wife, Deborah, everything for the term of her natural life or until remarriage. He mentioned his sons, Arnold, David, Joseph, Samuel, Isaac, and Stafford, and his daughter Lydia Angell and son-in-law Benjamin Angell. The inventory of William's estate, taken 7 March 1812 ,included a desk, chest, clock, half a ton of hay, and one cow.[647]

As executors of William's estate, Deborah Benchley and Benjamin Angell sold for $200 to Elisha Olney on 8 January 1812 a small dwelling house in Smithfield on the northwest corner of Olney's homestead where William had lived and died. On the same day, Deborah sold her right of dower in the house to Olney for $200.[648]

Children of William and Deborah (Arnold) Benchley, probably all born in Smithfield:[649]

i. **Benjamin[5] Benchley**, born 27 May 1748.

---

[644] Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 12, citing Smithfield Deeds, 12:146, 540.

[645] U.S. Census, 1790, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 213.

[646] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 173.

[647] Smithfield Probate, 3:407, 420. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 91.

[648] Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 12, citing Smithfield Deeds, 12:227–228.

[649] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 91. Stafford and Mercy are not in the Smithfield records. Stafford is mentioned in the will. Greene, in "Arnold Family," 102, lists Mercy, with a note that she left no children. Perhaps she died young. See also Joslyn, "Benchley-Bensley Family," 15.

ii. **Arnold Benchley**, born 25 January 1751.

iii. **Nathan Benchley**, born 9 November 1753.

iv. **David Benchley**, born 11 May 1755.

v. **Joseph Benchley**, born 23 August 1757.

vi. **Lydia Benchley**, born 14 January 1760.

vii. **Samuel Benchley,** born 1 May 1764.

viii. **Isaac Benchley,** born 1 August 1766.

ix. **Stafford Stuckely Benchley**, born 26 July 1773.

x. **Mercy Benchley**.

60. **JOSHUA[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 14 July 1729, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[650]

He married **AMY (BUCKLIN) ARNOLD** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 30 August 1752.[651] She was the widow of Joshua's older brother, Joseph (#55), whom she had married in 1746.

Joshua was a freeman in Smithfield in 1752.[652] In 1767, Joshua purchased his brother Stukely's interest in their father's farm.[653]

In 1774, he headed a household of two males ages 16 or more, one male under age 16, three females age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[654] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 50–60 and able to serve.[655]

He was taxed at Smithfield in 1778 on a farm with four houses; 4 ounces of plate; two oxen, eight horned cattle, twenty sheep/goats, and four swine; 14 acres of pasture to keep four cows, 3 acres under tillage producing 36 bushels of grain, 3 acres of orchard producing 20 barrels of cider, 12 acres mowing land producing 3 tons of English hay and 2 tons of fresh hay, 32 acres of wood and wasteland, with a total of 65 acres; and debt of £15, personal estate of £48, and real estate of £440.[656]

In 1790, Joshua's household in Smithfield included one male age 16 or more and two females.[657]

At some point, Joshua purchased 200 acres of land in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. He sold that land to his son Israel on 22 November 1790.[658]

---

650 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births, 209.
651 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
652 MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen*, 12.
653 Smithfield Deeds, 6:205.
654 *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
655 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.
656 "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," 21 (1995): 21.
657 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
658 Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, 1:429.

Joshua died 1 July 1818, "in his 90th year," as noted in the three Providence newspapers.[659] His will, written at Smithfield 22 April 1815, was proved 29 August 1818. He left his son Israel two lots in the south part of Providence with farming and lime rock tools and his rights in the Providence Library. His daughter Ruth Arnold received household furniture. Joshua directed that his right in Meadow Hollow Farm in North Providence be sold. He also mentioned daughters Amey Bucklin, Mercy Jenckes, and Sarah Jenckes and "son" (son-in-law) Stephen Jenckes.[660]

Children of Joshua and Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold) Arnold, born presumably at Smithfield:[661]

183 i. **Amey[5] Arnold**, born about 1753.

184 ii. **Israel Arnold**, born 5 November 1754.

185 iii. **Marcy Arnold**, born 23 November 1757.

186 iv. **Sarah Arnold**, born 23 December 1762.[662]

187 v. **Ruth Arnold**, born about 1766; died 1861, age 95.[663]

vi. **George Arnold**, no further record.

---

[659] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135; 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 236; 20: Rhode Island American Deaths, 534.
[660] Smithfield Probate, 4:5. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 206.
[661] Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:118.
[662] Browne, *Genealogy of the Jenks Family*, 111.
[663] Browne, *Genealogy of the Jenks Family*, 111.

61. **NATHAN[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born about 1731, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[664]

He married **SARAH BROWN** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 7 June 1757.[665] She was a daughter of Nathan and Sarah (Brown) Brown. In Nathan Brown's will written 6 October 1783, he named one daughter, Sarah Arnold.[666]

Nathan was in Providence in 1774 with a household of two males ages 16 or more and one female age 16 or more.[667] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[668] In 1782, his household in Providence included two males ages 50 or more and one female 22–49.[669] In 1790, his household included one male age 16 or more and one female.[670] He may have been the Nathan Arnold living in West Providence in 1800, presumably with another family, as there were six in the household.[671]

On 20 March 1797, Nathan Arnold of Providence, with consent of his wife, Sarah, sold Samuel Arnold one-half of a farm in Smithfield. This land was formerly owned by their father, Joseph Arnold, and was a parcel set off to Nathan and Samuel 19 March 1760.[672]

It is said that Nathan married a second time, but he had no children by either wife.[673]

He was probably the Captain Nathan Arnold, formerly of Providence, who died at Scituate, Rhode Island, 30 December 1819, in his 89th year.[674]

---

[664] Listed as under age 21 in his father's will dated 13 May 1746. Date of birth and other information from Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:123.
[665] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[666] Brown, "Chad Brown of Providence," 170.
[667] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 38.
[668] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 74.
[669] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6.
[670] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 36.
[671] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, West Providence, 561.
[672] Smithfield Deeds, 9:369.
[673] Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*, 2:123. Also Greene, "Arnold Family," 33.

62. **MERCY[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 22 April 1734, a daughter of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[675]

She married **JABEZ HARRIS** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 13 October 1757.[676] He was a son of Jonathan Harris of Smithfield, who named him in his will of 29 September 1784.[677]

On 22 February 1759, Jonathan Harris of Smithfield deeded 23 acres of land from the westerly part of his homestead to his son Jabez Harris "for fatherly love and affection."[678]

Jabez headed a household in Smithfield in 1774 of two males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, two females ages 16 or more, and three females under age 16.[679]

In 1778, he was taxed in Smithfield on three houses, one horse, two oxen, six horned cattle, twenty sheep/goats, seven swine, 20 acres of pasture to keep eight cows, 6 acres under tillage producing 90 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 4 barrels of cider, 35 acres mowing land producing 10 tons of English hay and 10 tons of fresh hay, and 103 acres of wood and wasteland, with a total of 160 acres, £4 of debt, personal estate of £69, and real estate of £1,060.[680]

In 1790, Jabez's Smithfield household included two males ages 16 or more and four females.[681]

Mercy died 8 December 1823.[682]

---

[674] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 236; 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 136.
[675] Listed in her father's will dated 13 May 1746. Date of birth and other information from Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy,* 2:123.
[676] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[677] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 36.
[678] Smithfield Deeds, 4:323.
[679] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 106.
[680] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots,* 22 (1996): 27.
[681] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 39.
[682] Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy,* 2:123.

Children of Jabez and Mercy (Arnold) Harris, born presumably in Smithfield:[683]

i. **Stephen Harris**, born 24 October 1758.

ii. **Mary Harris**, born 11 December 1760; died 10 November 1778.

iii. **Benjamin Harris,** born 4 February 1763.

iv. **Anna Harris**, born 14 September 1764.

v. **Mercy Harris**, born 8 December 1767.

vi. **Jabez Harris**, born 17 October 1771; died 17 November 1778.

vii. **Joseph Harris**, born 6 March 1776.

---

[683]Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 99.

63. **STUKELY[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 22 September 1735, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[684]

He married first **LYDIA EDMUNDS** at Smithfield 17 December 1758.[685] He married second **LYDIA BURLINGAME.**[686] and third **FAITHFUL HOWARD** 13 March 1801, at Danby, Vermont.[687]

Stukely was in Glocester, Rhode Island, on 20 November 1767 when he sold his interest in his father's homestead to his brother Joshua.[688] He was there 12 April 1768 when he purchased 40 acres of land in Dudley, Massachusetts.[689]

He was an early settler of East Hoosick, now Adams, Massachusetts. His daughter Elizabeth was married there by early 1781, as her first child was born 30 December 1781. His son Nathan enlisted at Adams on 31 October 1781 in the American Revolution, at the age of 19.

Stukely was listed as a head of household there in 1790 with three males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and three females.[690]

He purchased 100 acres of land there from his nephew Israel Arnold on 8 June 1793.[691]

Stukely died at Adams, Massachusetts, 19 November 1803.[692] He did not leave a will, but probate records show the following heirs on 2 July 1804: Elizabeth, wife of Nathan Lapham; Mary, wife of

---

[684] Date from Etta Mary Arnold Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield, R.I.," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 335, citing "old manuscript in possession of J. O. Austin in 1896." Listed as under age 21 in his father's will dated 13 May 1746.

[685] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.

[686] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," citing an 1896 letter from J. O. Austin.

[687] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield,"336.

[688] Smithfield Deeds, 6:205.

[689] Worcester County Deeds, 60:323.

[690] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts,* 22.

[691] Berkshire County Deeds, North District, 3:421.

[692] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," 336, citing William B. Brown of North Adams, Mass.

Cornelius Hurlburt; Nathan Arnold; Jerusha, wife of Jonathan Miller; Elisha Arnold; Lydia, wife of Daniel Fenner; Matilda, daughter of Stukely Arnold Jr., deceased; Joseph Arnold; Mercy, wife of Charles Walker Jr.; Silas Arnold; and George Arnold.[693]

Children of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold:[694]

188 i. **Elizabeth[5] Arnold**, born 30 December 1759.

189 ii. **Mary Arnold**, born 30 October 1761.

190 iii. **Nathan Arnold**, born 31 May 1763.

191 iv. **Jerusha Arnold**, born 1765.

192 v. **Elisha Arnold**, born 29 January 1768.

193 vi. **Lydia Arnold**, born 29 June 1770.

194 vii. **Stukely Arnold**, born 1772.

195 viii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 6 May 1774.

196 ix. **Mercy Arnold**, born 6 May 1776.

197 x. **Silas Arnold**, born 11 May 1779.

198 xi. **George Arnold**, born Adams, Massachusetts, 1783.

---

[693] Berkshire County Probate, 12:428.
[694] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," 336.

64. **SAMUEL[4] ARNOLD** (*Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 12 5th month [July] 1736, a son of Joseph and Mercy (Stafford) Arnold.[695]

He married **ELIZABETH ARNOLD** 10 November 1757.[696] She was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 21 2nd month [April] 1740, a daughter of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[697]

Samuel became a freeman in Smithfield in May 1759.[698]

Samuel and Elizabeth's family was recorded in the records of the Smithfield Society of Friends. Samuel evidently strayed from the decorum expected by the Society for a period. On 26 11th month [November] 1772, he delivered a written statement to the Society condemning his "former conduct where he deviated from the truth particularly in his outgoings in marriage [not clear what this means since Elizabeth was a member], language and apparel." His statement was accepted.[699]

In 1774, Samuel headed a household in Smithfield of one male age 16 or more, three males under age 16, two females ages 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[700] In the military census of 1777, Samuel was listed as having an exemption from service from the Society of Friends.[701]

In 1778, Samuel was taxed on a farm in Smithfield that included four houses, 20 ounces of silver plate, one chaise, one horse, two oxen, six horned cattle, twenty-four sheep/goats, and eight swine, 22 acres of pasture to keep six cows, 18 acres under tillage producing 60 bushels of grain, 4 acres of orchard producing 15

---

[695] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1312. Also at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.
[696] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[697] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1312. Also at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.
[698] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 6:203.
[699] Smithfield Society of Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[700] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[701] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.

barrels of cider, 20 acres of mowing land producing 6 tons of English hay and 4 tons of fresh hay, and 28 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 92 acres with values of £20 of debt, £52 for his personal estate, and £510 for real estate.[702]

In 1790, his Smithfield household included two males ages 16 or more, one male under age 16, five females and one slave.[703]

Samuel died 16 1st month [January] 1813.[704] His death notice in the *Providence Gazette* noted that he died at Smithfield in his 77th year after an illness of sixteen hours and that he was a member of the Society of Friends.[705] His will, dated 19 December 1781, was proved 16 February 1813. He mentioned his wife Elizabeth and nine children: Benjamin, John, Abigail, Anna, Richard, Samuel, Elizabeth, Jonathan, and Marcy, who were to receive all the estate when the youngest child became of age. He noted that "my will is that my children be learned some useful trades if suitable places can be had for them." The inventory of his estate was taken 18 February 1813 and was valued at $1,542. It included farm animals, hay, pork, beef, "cyder, cyder beer," furniture, curtains, woolen and linen cloth, nineteen wine glasses, a silver watch, and a note of Samuel Arnold for $600.[706] A distribution from the estate was made on 15 April 1814. Out of a total of $913, $304 was paid to Elizabeth for her "widow's third," and eight portions of $76 each were paid to Benjamin, Abigail, and Anna Arnold; Elizabeth Brown, George Smith's wife; Jonathan Arnold; Samuel Arnold; and the heirs of John Arnold.[707]

Elizabeth died 11 6th month [June] 1815.[708] Her death notice in the *Providence Gazette* noted, "Mrs. Elizabeth Arnold, widow of

---

[702] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 19.
[703] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[704] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.
[705] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 134.
[706] Smithfield Probate, 3:476, 477. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 15 (1992): 93.
[707] Smithfield Probate, 3:540.
[708] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

Samuel, died at Smithfield in her 76th year, of the Society of Friends, 11 June 1815."[709]

She wrote her will as Elizabeth Arnold of Smithfield, widow, on 18 February 1813; it was proved 19 August 1815. She left her rights to the homestead farm of her father, Jonathan Arnold, late of Smithfield, deceased, to her sons Samuel and Jonathan. They were to pay her daughters Abigail and Anna Arnold $300 each and daughters Elizabeth Brown and Mary Smith and granddaughter Louisa Mary Arnold $150 each. She mentioned her horse and riding chair. Her eldest son Benjamin and son Samuel were named executors. Witnesses included Richard A. Brown and Nathan A. Brown.[710]

Children of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[711]

199 i. **Benjamin[5] Arnold**, born 4 3rd month [March] 1758.

200 ii. **John Arnold**, born 28 2nd month [February] 1760.

iii. **Abigail Arnold**, born 29 10th month [October] 1763, died 29 9th month [September] 1840, presumably unmarried, since her death record calls her "Abigail Arnold."[712]

iv. **Son,** born 17 12th month [December] 1765. Presumably died young.

v. **Anna Arnold**, born 12 7th month [July] 1767; died unmarried 14 October 1856. In her will dated 26 September 1856, Anna gave the heirs of her brother Benjamin — Asa, Thomas, Rachel Gurney, and Isabella Kenyon — $50 each. The remainder was to be divided into five parts with one part to sister Elizabeth Brown and her heirs; one part to niece Louisa M. Pearson, sole heir of brother John Arnold; one part to nephews and nieces, heirs of her late brother Jonathan, namely James M. Arnold,

---

[709] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135.
[710] Smithfield Probate, 3:574. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 15 (1992): 73.
[711] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1312. Also at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.
[712] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

Maria Arnold, Elizabeth Cooks, Louisa Greene, and Marcy Raymond; and one part to nieces Anna E. Arnold and Susan J. Weeden, heirs of her brother Samuel.[713]

vi. **Richard Arnold**, born 21 April 1770. He was a sea captain and died on the ship *Rebecca* at Havana, as reported 27 August 1796, at the age of 26. No evidence of marriage.[714]

201 vii. **Samuel Arnold**, born 4 3rd month [March] 1773.

202 viii. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born 29 3rd month [March] 1775.

203 ix. **Mercy Arnold** (twin), born 16 8th month [August] 1777.

204 x. **Jonathan Arnold** (twin), born 16 8th month [August] 1777.

---

[713] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."

[714] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold"; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*,13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131.

65. **ENOCH[4] ARNOLD** (*John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1734, a son of John and Sarah Arnold.[715]

Enoch married **MARY BRIGGS** at Smithfield 24 February 1763.[716] Her age at death indicates that she was born about 1736.

On 27 February 1767, Enoch sold a half-acre of land at the southwest end of the Great Pond in Smithfield, where works were erected for making potash.[717] Enoch was in Smithfield in 1774 with a household of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and three females under age 16.[718] In the 1777 military census he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[719]

In 1778, Enoch was taxed on a farm with one house, two oxen, three horned cattle, three swine, 4 acres of pasture, 6 acres under tillage producing 60 bushels of grain, one barrel of cider, 4 acres of mowing land producing 4 tons of fresh hay and 21 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 35 acres.[720] He was at Smithfield in the 1790 census with a household of two males ages 16 or more, two males under age 16, and three females.[721]

On 28 September 1795, Enoch and Mary sold land in Smithfield inherited from his father, John, and grandfather Eleazer. Four days later they sold "the homestead farm where I now dwell."[722]

That is probably when they moved to Herkimer County, New York, where their son John had moved in March 1793. Enoch

---

[715] Named in his father's will dated 1 October 1751. According to "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171, he was in his 81st year when he died 22 March 1815, and thus was born about 1734.

[716] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12. Some have suggested this was a second marriage of Enoch, a son of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold. However, Richardson, in *History of Woonsocket,* claims his first wife remarried in 1761, suggesting he had died.

[717] Smithfield Deeds, 7:66.

[718] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 102.

[719] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 95.

[720] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 19.

[721] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.

[722] Smithfield Deeds, 9:444, 263.

headed a household in Fairfield, Herkimer County, in 1800 with two males ages 16–26, one male over age 45, one female under age 10, one female age 16–26, and one female over age 45. Next to them were their sons John and George.[723] In 1810, their household in Fairfield included two males ages 26–45, one male age 45 or more, and one female age 45 or more.[724]

According to the Bible of their son, John B. Arnold, Enoch died 22 March 1815, in the 81st year of his age and Mary Arnold, wife of Enoch, died 29 June 1822 in the 86th year of her age.[725]

Enoch Arnold of Fairfield wrote his will 14 September 1802; it was proved 28 March 1815. He named his wife, Mary; eldest son, John; son George; daughters Phebe Wood, Patience Dexter, and Lydia Grey; and sons Enoch and William.[726]

Children of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold, presumably born at Smithfield:[727]

205 i. **John B.[5] Arnold**, born 4 April 1763.

206 ii. **Patience Arnold**, born 5 May 1767.

207 iii. **George Arnold**, born 17 January 1770.

208 iv. **Enoch Arnold**, born about 1771.[728]

209 v. **Phebe Arnold**.

210 vi. **Lydia Arnold**.

211 vii. **William Arnold**, born abut 1780; died 1856, age 76.

---

[723] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 574.
[724] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 212.
[725] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.
[726] Herkimer County Wills, B:377.
[727] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.
[728] The Bible record states that Enoch died 13 December 1834, age 67, which has him born about 1767. However, his probate record, which is probably more reliable, shows he died 3 December 1838. If he was age 67 at his death, he would have been born about 1771.

66. **COMFORT[4] ARNOLD** (*John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1743, a son of John and Sarah (_____) Arnold.[729]

The name of his first wife, whom he married by 1769 (before the birth of his son Joseph in 1770), is not known.

He married second his cousin **MARY BROWN** at Smithfield 22 December 1786.[730] She was born at Smithfield about 1750, a daughter of William and Patience (Arnold) Brown (#54).[731] She died at Fleming, Cayuga County, New York, 7 September 1818, age 68 years.[732]

On 19 December 1819, Comfort Arnold "of Aurelius" married third **JUDITH (BOWEN) FREEMAN** "of Brutus, New York,"[733] who was born at Cheshire, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, 22 February 1779, a daughter of John and Sarah (Briggs) Bowen.[734] At their marriage, Comfort was about 76 years old and Judith 40 years old. She had married Warren Freeman 24 December 1801 and Judith was separated or divorced from (or had been abandoned by) Warren, as he was still alive when she married Comfort. Warren and Judith together sold land in Cayuga County on 25 September 1818.[735]

---

[729] Based on age at death on gravestone inscription. He was under age 21 when he was named in his father's will, dated 1 October 1751.

[730] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[731] She was under age 18 when she was named in her father's will, dated 16 January 1757. "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 333.

[732] Buried at Arnold-Comfort Cemetery, Fleming, New York; *www.rootsweb.com/~nycayuga/cem/cem51.htm.*

[733] William B. Saxbe, Jr., "Historical 'Truth' Clothed and Naked: The 'Peculiar Ways' of Judith (Bowen) Freeman Arnold," *National Genealogical Society Quarterly* 90 (2002): 100, citing *Cayuga Republican,* Auburn, N.Y., 29 December 1819, as abstracted in Mable L. Crosby and Louise Coulson, "A Collection of Newspaper Abstracts from Early Newspapers of Cayuga County, N.Y.," 7 vols. (typescript, 1973), 3:6; copy at Seymour Library, Auburn.

[734] Saxbe, "Historical 'Truth'," citing Juliette Freeman Lafferty, *History of the Freeman Family* (Passaic, N.J., 1914).

[735] Saxbe, "Historical 'Truth'."

On 11 August 1819 Warren was living at Richmond, Ontario County, New York, when he reported that he had lost in Brutus a bond from the land they sold. On 8 April 1837, Judith signed an indenture with children of Warren Freeman calling herself "Judith Arnold, widow of Comfort Arnold and formerly wife of Warren Freeman, late of Canadice in the county of Ontario, deceased." Warren was not deceased, however, and it appears that Judith returned to live with him. In 1838, Warren Freeman Sr. purchased two tracts of land in Goshen Township, Champaign County, Ohio. In 1841, Warren Freeman "and Judith his wife" sold one of those parcels. On 11 February 1845, Warren sold the remaining farm to "Judith Arnold." Warren died 11 July 1845, according to his tombstone in Goshen, Ohio. The next stone reads, "Judith wife of Warren Freeman Sr. died 1 August 1853, age 74Y 5M 4D.[736]

Comfort sold the farm where he was living in Smithfield on 22 May 1771 to his brothers Zebedee and Christopher.[737]

Comfort moved from Rhode Island to Adams, Massachusetts, where many of Mary Brown's siblings settled. He was there before 24 February 1773, when he was "of East Hoosuck" (now Adams) and purchased 100 acres of land.[738] He purchased additional land there on 23 April 1777.[739] In 1786, he and Gideon Hinman and Jonathan Richardson Jr. were appointed in the Christ Church of Adams "to inspect and regulate our Society as to setting and behaveyor." He witnessed a deed of land to the church on 22 May 1779.[740] He and Mary sold a parcel of land on 5 January 1787.[741] On 2 April 1793, he purchased two parcels of land in Cheshire, which had been formed the previous month just south of Adams, and included a portion that was previously in Adams.[742]

---

[736] Saxbe, "Historical 'Truth'."
[737] Smithfield Deeds, 7:58.
[738] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, C:13.
[739] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, C:5.
[740] Microfilm #4 of the Berkshire Atheneum manuscript, "William B. Brown Collection," microfilm at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Cheshire Church, 16, 137.
[741] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, C:410.
[742] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, 3:210, 444.

Comfort was listed at Adams in 1790 heading a household of three males ages 16 or more, two males under age 16, and five females.[743] He remained in Adams in 1800 with a household of three males and two females and in 1810 with a household of three males and three females.[744]

Comfort was of Aurelius, Cayuga County, New York, by 12 September 1814, when he purchased a parcel of land for $3,000.[745] He bought additional land in Aurelius on 16 September 1816.[746] On 14 March 1818, Benjamin Arnold of Brutus, Cayuga County, and his wife Susan deeded land in Brutus to Comfort Arnold of Aurelius and on the same day deeded land to John Haskins of Brutus, "next to land deeded this day to Comfort Arnold."[747] On 12 October 1819, John Haskins sold property in lot 79 or Brutus to Comfort Arnold of Aurelius for $2,025.[748]

In 1820 Comfort was in the part of Aurelius, Cayuga County, that became Fleming, New York, in 1823.[749] On 13 December 1822 Comfort sold 50 acres of land in Brutus and 35 acres of land in the old township of Aurelius, now Brutus, to his son-in-law Seth Comstock of Aurelius.[750] On the same day, Seth sold the 50 acres of land to Judeth Arnold (relationship not known) and the 35-acre parcel back to Comfort.[751]

Comfort died at Fleming, Cayuga County, New York, 23 March 1827, "in his 84th year".[752] His will, dated 17 November 1825, was proved 17 May 1827. He provided that his youngest son, Comfort

---

[743] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts*, 22.
[744] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 133, 1810, Adams, 161.
[745] Cayuga County Deeds, P:403.
[746] Cayuga County Deeds, S:320.
[747] Cayuga County Deeds, T:409, 410.
[748] Cayuga County Deeds, V:493.
[749] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cayuga County, Aurelius, 56.
[750] Cayuga County Deeds, Z:103, 104.
[751] Cayuga County Deeds, Z:106, 107.
[752] Buried at Arnold-Comfort Cemetery, Fleming, New York, *www.rootsweb.com/~nycayuga/cem/cem51.htm*.

Arnold Jr., would have the use of one-third of the farm "on which I now live in Fleming and one half the buildings on the east side of the road." He provided for Mary Brown Arnold, "daughter of Comfort Jr., living with said Comfort and wife Chloe on my premises." Daughters Mary Comstock and Belinda Arnold received the remaining two-thirds of the farm. Daughter Amarilla Haskins received use of property in Brutus then in the possession of John Haskins. Polly M. Haskins, daughter of Amarilla, was to receive $50 when she reached the age of 18. Eldest son Joseph Arnold was to receive $30, and his "beloved wife Judith," $15. Executors were Joseph Arnold, Seth Comstock, and Silas Arnold. The inventory of the estate included notes receivable from twelve payees totaling about $650, fifty-two sheep, 11 bushels of wheat, and 6 bushels of potatoes.[753]

Children of Comfort Arnold and his first wife, the second and third presumably born at Adams:

212 i. **Joseph[5] Arnold**, born Rhode Island 11 February 1770.[754]

213 ii. **Mary (Polly) Arnold**, born about 1777 (age 73 in 1850).

iii. **Belinda (Lynda) Arnold,** born about 1781 (age 69 in 1850); married her cousin **Silas Arnold** (#197).

Children of Comfort and Mary (Brown) Arnold, presumably born at Adams:

214 iv. **Comfort Arnold Jr.** , born about 1787.[755]

215 v. **Amarilla Arnold**, born perhaps about 1789.

---

[753] Cayuga County Wills, C1:229, also box 5 (FHL microfilm #861025), for the inventory of the estate.

[754] Date of birth, calculated from age at death on tombstone inscription, is 13 April 1770. The February date is from Microfilm #4 of the Berkshire Atheneum manuscript, "William B. Brown Collection," microfilm at New England Historic Genealogical Society.

[755] Calculated from his parents' marriage in 1786 and his marriage about 1807.

67. **ZEBEDEE[4] ARNOLD** (*John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, after 1743 (under age 21 in 1764), a son of John and Sarah Arnold.[756]

He married **LYDIA WHIPPLE** after 1766.[757] She was born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 7 September 1748, a daughter of David and Martha (_____) Whipple.[758]

Zebedee was living at Smithfield on 22 May 1771, when he and his brother Christopher purchased the 68-acre farm of their brother Comfort.[759] Zebedee purchased several small parcels of land in 1780.[760]

Zebedee was listed in Smithfield with one female, presumably Lydia, in the Rhode Island census of 1774.[761] He was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve in the military census of 1777.[762]

He was a soldier in the American Revolution. He received a land warrant for his service, lot 11 in the original township of Cincinnatus, now part of Cortland County, New York.[763]

On 17 October 1777, Zebedee Arnold of Smithfield purchased 48 acres of land in Douglas, Massachusetts.[764] On 13 February 1779, Zebedee Arnold of Douglas purchased 22 acres of land in Douglas.[765] Four days later, on 17 February 1779, Zebedee Arnold

---

[756] Under age 21 when he was named in litigation in June 1764. Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 5:57.

[757] George Norbury Mackenzie, *Colonial Families of the United States* (New York, 1907), 6:467. She was married after 31 May 1766, when her father called her Lydia Whipple in his will: "Cumberland Wills," 177.

[758] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 129.

[759] Smithfield Deeds, 7:58.

[760] Smithfield Deeds, 7:316, 317.

[761] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.

[762] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 93.

[763] John C. Churchill and others, *Landmarks of Oswego County, New York* (Syracuse, N.Y., 1895), 182.

[764] Worcester County Deeds, 18:448.

[765] Worcester County Deeds, 85:43.

of Douglas, tailor, sold 12 acres of land in Douglas.[766] On 25 May 1778, he was called "of Smithfield" when he sold his brother Christopher his interest in the 68-acre farm where Christopher lived.[767] However, he was still called "of Douglas" on 13 April 1780, when he sold parcels of 24 and 21 acres in Douglas.[768]

A few weeks later, on 21 August 1780, he purchased parcels of 11 acres, three-quarters acre, and 2 acres in Smithfield.[769] On 4 November 1780, Zebedee Arnold, now of Smithfield, tailor, purchased two lots in Smithfield, one with a dwelling house and well water and the other opposite on the east side of the highway with a shop.[770] He sold his three-quarter-acre and 2-acre parcels of meadowland on 24 July 1786.[771] Zebedee (called Zebediah) was listed at Smithfield in the 1790 census with a household of one male age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and three females.[772]

On 17 October 1799, "Zebedee Arnold of Smithfield, tailor, and Lydia his wife," who was called "Lydia Whipple, daughter of David Whipple, late of Cumberland, deceased," sold land set off to "my mother Martha Whipple" to Samuel Whipple.[773]

By the next year, when the 1800 census was taken, the family had moved to Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, where their household included one male age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 45 or over, two females ages 16–25, and one female age 45 or over.[774] They were living in Fairfield on the Mohawk River, a few miles above the Little Falls.[775]

---

[766] Worcester County Deeds, 81:545,
[767] Smithfield Deeds, 7:536.
[768] Worcester County Deeds, 95:329.
[769] Smithfield Deeds, 7:312.
[770] Smithfield Deeds, 7:316.
[771] Smithfield Deeds, 8:28.
[772] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.
[773] Cumberland Deeds, 9:86.
[774] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 571.
[775] Greene, "Arnold Family," 35.

Children of Zebedee and Lydia (Whipple) Arnold, no further records found:[776]

i. **George[5] Arnold.**

ii. **Sally Arnold.**

iii. **Daniel Arnold.**

iv. **Whipple Arnold.**

v. **Lydia Arnold.**

[776] Greene, "Arnold Family," 35.

68. **MARY[4] ARNOLD** (*John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of John and Sarah (_____) Arnold.[777]

She married **SAMUEL TUCKER** between 1751 and 1761.[778] Perhaps he was the Samuel Tucker, son of John Tucker of Glocester, Rhode Island, who was mentioned in John's will dated 13 April 1746.[779]

Samuel Tucker headed a household in Smithfield in 1774 of one male over age 16, three males under age 16, one female over age 16, and one female under age 16.[780] In the 1777 military census, he was listed at Smithfield as age 16–50, able to serve.[781] In 1790, his household included three males age 16 or more and three females.[782]

Children of Samuel and Mary (Arnold) Tucker:[783]

i. **Benjamin Tucker**, born Smithfield 21 June 1762.[784]

ii. **Loami Tucker.**

iii. **Joseph Tucker.**

iv. **Mary Tucker.**

v. **Lydia Tucker.**

---

[777] Under age 21 when named in her father's will dated 1 October 1751.
[778] Greene, "Arnold Family," 34.
[779] "Abstracts of Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 2 (1986): 174.
[780] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 112.
[781] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.
[782] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[783] Greene, "Arnold Family," 34.
[784] Revolutionary War Pension File No. W15444.

69. **CHRISTOPHER[4] ARNOLD** (*John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, in 1751 (figured from his age at death), before 1 October, when his father wrote his will, a son of John and Sarah (_____) Arnold.[785]

He married **MARTHA WILKINSON,** who was his widow in 1817.[786] She was a daughter of John and Ruth (Angell) Wilkinson.[787]

On 22 May 1771, Christopher and his brother Zebedee Arnold purchased the 68-acre farm in Smithfield of their brother Comfort Arnold.[788] On 25 May 1778, Zebedee sold Christopher his interest in the 68-acre farm where Christopher lived.[789]

Christopher was listed in Smithfield in the 1774 census with a household of two males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and one female age 16 or more.[790] In the 1777 military census he was listed in Smithfield as age 16–50 and able to serve.[791]

Christopher was taxed in Smithfield in 1778 on a farm with one house, one horse, two oxen, two horned cattle, one sheep/goat, two swine, 7 acres of pasture to keep three cows, 7 acres under tillage producing 70 bushels of grain, 10 acres of mowing land producing 3 tons of English hay and 3 tons of fresh hay, and 31 acres of woodland and wasteland, for a total of 55 acres, with debt of £7, personal estate of £33, and real estate of £220.[792]

---

[785] Under age 21 when he was named in his father's will, dated 1 October 1751. He should not be confused with the unrelated Christopher Arnold of Providence who was born about 1711 and died 6 January 1791 in his 81st year (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130).

[786] Greene, "Arnold Family," 35; Smithfield Probate, 3:687.

[787] Israel Wilkinson, *Memoirs of the Wilkinson Family in America* (Jacksonville, Ill., 1869), 159.

[788] Smithfield Deeds, 7:58.

[789] Smithfield Deeds, 7:536.

[790] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 103.

[791] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 93.

[792] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 19.

He was living in Smithfield near his brother Zebedee at the time of the 1790 census, with a household of one male and one female.[793] His household continued to have just one male and one female in 1800 and 1810.[794]

Christopher died at Smithfield in October 1817, aged about 66 years.[795] Nathaniel Mowry was named guardian of his personal estate 30 September 1817. A portion of his inventory valued at $149 was set off to the widow Martha Arnold, and a $50 allowance was provided to support the widow for six months after the decease of her husband.[796]

Martha Arnold wrote her will at North Providence 1 April 1820, and it was proved 22 April 1820. She named her sister Susan Hopkins, her niece Deborah (Hopkins) Arnold, and her niece's daughters Joanna Peck, Susan F. Arnold, and Ann M. Arnold.[797]

Christopher and Martha (Wilkinson) Arnold had no children.[798]

---

[793] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.

[794] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence, Smithfield, 514; 1810, Rhode Island, Providence, Smithfield, 186.

[795] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 235, issue of 25 October 1817; 20: Rhode Island American, 533, issue of 24 October 1817.

[796] Smithfield Probate, 3:685, 687.

[797] Wilkinson, *Wilkinson Family in America*, 159.

[798] Greene, "Arnold Family,"35.

70. **JEREMIAH[4] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born in 1725, a son of Jeremiah and Freelove Arnold.[799]

He married first **LYDIA ARNOLD** 12 February 1744, when he was 19 and she was 16.[800] She was born 29 October 1728, a daughter of David and Alice (Smith) Arnold (#52).[801]

He is said to have married second **ELIZABETH _____**, a widow, in about 1775, if the birth year of their first son is correct.[802]

On 11 November 1748, Jeremiah's father deeded him 70 acres of land in Smithfield, including "one half my homestead farm where I now dwell."[803] Jeremiah Arnold Jr. was listed on a 1748 road list of Smithfield, Rhode Island.[804] He was listed as a freeman in Smithfield in 1749.[805]

---

[799] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66. This source says he was born in 1725. *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240, says he was born 12 May 1735, but he would have been too young to be married in 1744 and he had a sister born less than nine months later; thus the 1725 year is more likely.

[800] James Arnold Collection at the Knight Memorial Library, Providence, R.I., FHL microfilm #1839088. The name Lydia is in the birth records of their first two children. In a deed dated 10 November 1762 (Providence Deeds, 16:214), Lydia was called a daughter of Alice, sister of Joseph Smith, deceased. Alice (Smith) Arnold, a sister of Joseph, was Lydia Arnold's mother.

[801] Her gravestone inscription gives her date of birth and parents. Alden Gamaliel Beaman, *Washington County, Rhode Island Marriages from Gravestones,* Vital Record of Rhode Island, New Series (Princeton, Mass., 1977), 3:10. She was listed as a daughter of David in Ballou, *Ballous in America*, 60. It notes that Maturin Ballou was appointed guardian of Lydia and her brother on 25 September 1744, citing Smithfield Council B1:71.

[802] In "Arnold Family," Greene calls her "Kittie, a widow." She is called Elizabeth Knight in *Compendium of American Genealogy,* vol. 6, an unreliable source. No primary record has been found. However, there were several Knight families in Cranston, Rhode Island, where Jeremiah was buried in 1796.

[803] Smithfield Deeds, 3:168.

[804] Steere, *History of Smithfield*, 28.

[805] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen*, 12.

Jeremiah and Lydia entered into several real estate transactions in Providence in 1762.[806] On 5 May 1764, Jeremiah Jr. and Lydia of Smithfield sold 12 acres of land in Smithfield to Benjamin Arnold, "being 2/5 of the land given by Eleazer Arnold to his two grandsons, David Arnold and Eleazer Arnold."[807]

Lydia died 23 September 1771 and is buried at North Kingston, Rhode Island.[808] An inventory of the estate of Lydia Arnold, late of Smithfield, was taken 14 12th month [December] 1771. It included furniture, bedding, 11¾ yards of cloth, cotton and linen yarn, old pewter, teacups, a teapot, a punch bowl, a linen wheel, and a chest of drawers.[809]

A grandson of Jeremiah wrote that Jeremiah studied and practiced law, and that he was a captain in the British Army during the French and Indian War.[810] He was listed at Smithfield as age 16–50 and able to serve in the 1777 military census.[811] It is said he remained a Loyalist during the American Revolution, but his eldest son served as a lieutenant in the U. S. Navy and Rhode Island militia.[812]

He died 16 November 1796 and is buried at the Friends Burial Yard at Cranston, Rhode Island.[813]

---

[806] Providence Deeds, 16:186, 208, 209, 212, 213; 17:233, 235, 227.

[807] Smithfield Deeds, 6:45.

[808] Beaman, *Washington County, Rhode Island, Marriages from Gravestones*, 3:10.

[809] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book):37.

[810] Letter from Joseph[6] Arnold (Ichabod[5]) dated August 1885 when Joseph was age 84. Transcript provided by Lewis Arnold (lparnold@verizon.net) in 2004. Service in the war was also noted in the James Arnold Collection at the Knight Memorial Library, Providence, Rhode Island, FHL microfilm #1839088.

[811] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.

[812] 1885 letter referenced earlier. Also James Arnold Collection at the Knight Memorial Library, Providence, Rhode Island, FHL microfilm #1839088.

[813] James Arnold Collection, FHL microfilm #1839088. Also Greene, "Arnold Family," 36.

Children of Jeremiah and Lydia (Arnold) Arnold, recorded at Smithfield, Rhode Island:[814]

216 i. **David[5] Arnold**, born 8 March 1745.

217 ii. **Alice Arnold**, born 4 April 1747.

Children of Jeremiah and Elizabeth (_____) (_____) Arnold:[815]

218 iii. **Ichabod Arnold**, said to have been born April 1776.

219 iv. **Jeremiah Arnold.**

v. **Daughter.**

---

[814] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[815] James Arnold Collection, FHL microfilm #1839088.

71. **LAVINA[4] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born 11 November 1727, a daughter of Jeremiah and Freelove Arnold.[816]

She married **CALEB RAYMOND** at Smithfield in November 1750.[817] He may have been the Caleb Raymond born at Middleborough, Massachusetts, 29 September 1728, a son of Thomas and Sarah (Hoskins) Raymond.[818]

Caleb may have returned to Middleborough and then to Plymouth, Massachusetts. Three brothers named Caleb, Lemuel, and Stephen served in the American Revolution from Plymouth County, Massachusetts; they may have been sons of Caleb and Lavina. Each had a pension file, but none named parents.[819]

Alternatively, Caleb may have moved to Dutchess County, New York. A Caleb Raymond headed a household in Amenia, Dutchess County, New York, in 1790, with one male age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and one female.[820]

---

[816] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66; *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.

[817] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11. She is called Lorana and Larana in the marriage record but Lavina in the record of her children's births.

[818] Samuel Edward Raymond, *Raymond Genealogy, Vol. II* (Seattle, 1972), 24, 30. Birth at *Middleborough, Massachusetts Vital Records*, 2 vols. (Boston, 1986), 2:53. We lack direct proof that these were his parents; we have only the name and an appropriate date of birth.

[819] Raymond, *Raymond Genealogy*. On the other hand, a Caleb Raymond was a private in Colonel Topham's Regiment in 1776 during the American Revolution. In September 1776 he was a corporal in Captain David Dexter's Company of Corporal Christopher Lippitt's Regiment. (Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island*, 33. 76.)

[820] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: New York*, 73.

Possible children of Caleb and Lavina (Arnold) Raymond, the first two recorded at Smithfield:[821]

i. **Phebe Raymond**, born Smithfield 10 December 1753.

ii. **Caleb Raymond**, born Smithfield 2 September 1757. If the following three brothers were children of Caleb and Lavina, this Caleb probably died young.

iii. **Caleb Raymond**, born Middleborough, Massachusetts, 1760 .[822]

iv. **Stephen Raymond**, born about 1762.[823]

v. **Lemuel Raymond**, born 1763.[824]

---

[821] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 111. The next two are from Raymond, *Raymond Genealogy*, 2:24, 30.

[822] Revolutionary War Pension File W22028.

[823] Age 16 in 1778 according to *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 17 vols. (Boston, 1896), 12:1010. Died 15 March 1843, age 80, according to *Vital Records of Rochester, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 2 vols. (Boston, 1914), 2:424.

[824] Year of birth in Revolutionary War Pension File W22027.

72. **JAMES[4] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[3], Elezxzzer[2], Thomas[1])* was born 4 August 1733, a son of Jeremiah and Freelove Arnold of Smithfield, Rhode Island.[825]

He married **MARY BRIGGS** at Smithfield in September 1752.[826] She was a daughter of James and Rebeckah (Davis) Briggs, named as Mary Arnold in her father's 1757 will.[827]

On 1 March 1764, James's father, Jeremiah, deeded him 12 acres of land in Smithfield, describing him as James Arnold of Smithfield, cordwainer (shoemaker). This land had been owned by James's grandfather Eleazer Arnold. James and Mary sold this land on 5 May 1764.[828]

James sold a house and land in Smithfield on the highway leading to the Friends Meeting House in Smithfield to Dr. Ichabod Comstock on 29 June 1771.[829]

In 1774, James Arnold was listed in Smithfield with a household of one male age 16 or more, one male under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[830] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[831]

We have found no record of James and Mary having children or of their whereabouts after 1777.

---

[825] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66; *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.
[826] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[827] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 238.
[828] Smithfield Deeds, 5:409, 6:46.
[829] Greene, "Arnold Family," 37.
[830] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[831] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 95.

73. **SARAH[4] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born 1 February 1736, a daughter of Jeremiah and Freelove (_____) Arnold of Smithfield, Rhode Island.[832]

She was probably the Sarah Arnold who married **NATHAN SHIPPEE** at Smithfield 3 December 1758 (called Nathaniel in the marriage record), as his second wife[833] He was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 5 September 1714, a son of Thomas and Sarah (Place) Shippee.[834]

Nathan Shippee "of Smithfield" first married Mary White of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, 22 January 1743/4, after recording intentions at Uxbridge 12 December 1743.[835]

By 3 February 1771, Nathan had a third wife, Mary _____, who signed a deed with him.[836] As Mary Shippee, widow of Smithfield, she died a few months after Nathan, on 8 December 1775. The inventory of her estate was taken 18 December 1775.[837]

Nathan's father, Thomas Shippee of Smithfield, deeded half of his homestead farm to Nathan on 4 August 1744, just a few months after Nathan's first marriage.[838] Just before his second marriage, Nathan purchased adjoining land on 9 March 1758.[839] He purchased other land on 3 May 1766 and 20 January 1767.[840]

Thomas Shippee wrote his will 27 July 1765; it was proved 16 September 1765. He provided that his son Nathan was to inherit his lands upon the death of his mother. Nathan's mother died a

---

[832] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66; *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240.
[833] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[834] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births, 244.
[835] *Uxbridge Vital Records*, 304.
[836] Smithfield Deeds, 6:269.
[837] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769–1797):125.
[838] Smithfield Deeds, 2:282.
[839] Smithfield Deeds, 4:236.
[840] Smithfield Deeds, 6:135, 136.

few weeks later, on 29 November 1765.[841] On 3 February 1771, Nathan sold 124 acres of land in Smithfield that was the homestead farm of his father.[842]

In 1774, Nathan headed a household in Smithfield of three males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, four females age 16 or more, and five females under age 16.[843]

Nathan died at Smithfield 8 January 1775.[844]

Daughter of Nathan and Sarah (Arnold) Shippee:

i. **Keziah Shippee,** born Rhode Island about 1764–65; died Adams, Massachusetts, 4 February 1859.[845]

---

[841] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982); 302.

[842] Smithfield Deeds, 6:269.

[843] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 111.

[844] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769–1797):95. Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 349.

[845] Massachusetts Vital Records, 1859, 129:19, note her death, indicating she was born in Rhode Island and died at age 94 years, and that her father was Nathan Shippee.

74. **CHARLES[4] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born in 1743, a son of Jeremiah and Freelove (_____) Arnold.[846]

Charles was probably the Charles Arnold "late of Smithfield, now a resident of East Hoosuck" (now Adams), Massachusetts, who married **MERIBAH RUSSELL** of Dartmouth, Massachusetts, at Dartmouth 20 January 1774.[847] She was born at Dartmouth 30 January 1740, a daughter of William and Elizabeth (Wilbar) Russell.[848] William's will, dated 24 September 1756 and probated 12 December 1756, mentions his daughter Meribah, under age 18.[849]

Charles was back in Smithfield, described as a cooper (barrel maker), on 20 December 1781, when he sold 100 acres of land in East Hoosuck to his distant cousins Abraham and Oliver Arnold of Smithfield (#131, #134).[850]

Charles and Meribah (Russell) Arnold had no children.[851]

Charles and Meribah have not been found in the 1790 census, nor in obituaries or records of tombstones in Rhode Island.

---

[846] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 240. Charles and his siblings are listed in the author's own copy in the rare book room of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, in a note on page 240 in the 1978 reprint.

[847] *Dartmouth Vital Records*, 2:42.

[848] Barrett Beard Russell, "The Descendants of John Russell of Dartmouth, Mass.," *Register* 58 (1904): 367.

[849] H. L. Peter Rounds, *Abstracts of Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate Records, Book 2, 1745–1762* (Baltimore, 1988), 194.

[850] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, B:117.

[851] Greene, "Arnold Family,"38.

75. **ELIZABETH[4] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a daughter of Jeremiah and Freelove (_____) Arnold.[852]

She recorded intentions to marry **DAVID BUCKLIN** of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, at Rehoboth 25 August 1759.[853] They were married at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 20 September 1759.[854] He was born at Rehoboth 2 January 1733/4, a son of Nehemiah and Beriah (Read) Bucklin.[855]

David was at Rehoboth in 1790 with a household of two males over age 16, one male under age 16, and one female.[856] He owned property in Rehoboth in 1798.[857]

David was deceased when his son David was married on 22 October 1799, according to that son's marriage record.[858] (A David Bucklin headed a household of five males and one female in Rehoboth in 1800, but the family was too large to match other records of David Bucklin Jr.)

Children of David and Elizabeth (Arnold) Bucklin, at least the first two born at Rehoboth:[859]

i. **Sarah Bucklin**, born 17 June 1760.

ii. **George Bucklin**, born 6 March 1762,

iii. **David Bucklin**.[860]

---

[852] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.
[853] *Rehoboth Vital Record,* 433.
[854] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11, 22.
[855] *Rehoboth Vital Record,* 561; Hattie B. Cooper, "Squier Bucklin of Foster, R.I." (1944), manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Ms A4941.
[856] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts,* 52.
[857] Richard LeBaron Bowen, *Early Rehoboth,* 4 vols. (Concord, N.H., 1945–1950), 4:146.
[858] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 17, notes that "David Bucklin Waterman of David deceased of Rehoboth" married Dorcas Waterman of Cumberland 22 October 1799.
[859] *Rehoboth Vital Record,* 562.
[860] Called son David in Cumberland marriage record noted earlier.

THE FIFTH GENERATION

76. **MERCY**[5] **ARNOLD** *(Joseph*[4]*, Richard*[3]*, Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 19 April 1727, a daughter of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[1]

She married **OLIVER MAN** at Smithfield 1 or 18 November 1747.[2] He was born at Wrentham, Massachusetts, 30 November 1718, a son of Thomas and Mary (Whiting) Man.[3]

In 1774, Oliver headed a household in Smithfield of two males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[4] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 50–60 and able to serve.[5] His 1790 household included two males age 16 or more and three females.[6]

In 1778, Oliver was taxed on a small farm in Smithfield that included two houses, three ounces of silver plate, one horse, two horned cattle, one swine, 10 acres of pasture to keep one cow, 2 acres under tillage producing 30 bushels of grain and 2 barrels of cider, 8 acres of meadowland producing one ton of English hay and 4 tons of fresh hay for a total of 20 acres, valued at £15 of debt, £18 for his personal estate, and £70 for real estate.[7]

---

[1] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[2] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[3] *Wrentham Vital Records*, 1:140.
[4] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 108.
[5] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.
[6] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[7] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 22 (1996): 21.

Oliver died at Smithfield 13 May 1802, "in his 85th year."[8] He had written his will 2 March 1802; it was proved 28 May 1802. He named his wife "Marcy" ; sons Joseph and Alfred; and daughters Anna Aldrich, wife of Israel Aldrich, and Lucy Allen, wife of Ezra Allen.[9]

Children of Oliver and Mercy (Arnold) Man, presumably born at Smithfield:[10]

i. **Anna Man**, born 1748.

ii. **Lucy Man**, born 1749.

iii. **Joseph Man**, born 1754.

iv. **Alfred Man**, born 1762; died 29 March 1820, in his 58th year.[11]

v. **Sophia Man**, born 1764.

---

[8] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 569.
[9] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 136.
[10] Mann, *Mann Memorial*, 30. The first four were named in Oliver's will.
[11] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 77.

77. **PHEBE**[5] **ARNOLD** *(Joseph*[4]*, Richard*[3]*, Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 18 November 1729, a daughter of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[12]

She married first **JEREMIAH COMSTOCK** at Smithfield 25 October 1747.[13] Just before the marriage, on 7 July 1747, Jeremiah's father, John Comstock, deeded him 150 acres of land, "for love and affection."[14]

Her second husband was probably **JOHN HILLIARD,** whom she probably married between 1791, when Jeremiah died, and 1793, when John died. In 1795, she signed a power of attorney as Phebe Hilliard.[15] John Hilliard came to Danby, Vermont, in 1790; his first wife died there in 1791.[16]

Jeremiah was taxed in Smithfield in 1748 and was there 8 October 1751, when he and Phebe deeded 150 acres of land in Smithfield. He was admitted to vote in Glocester, Rhode Island, 30 April 1754.[17] He was in Glocester with a household of two males over age 16 and two females at the time of the 1774 census.[18] That year, he was granted a license to operate a tavern in Glocester.[19] He was listed at Glocester in the 1777 military census as age 50–60 and

---

[12] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[13] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[14] John A. Comstock, *History and Genealogy of the Comstock Family in America* (Los Angeles, 1949), 31. *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, 281.
[15] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 31.
[16] J. C. Williams, *History and Map of Danby, Vermont* (Rutland, Vt., 1869), 164. No record has been found of Phebe and John's marriage. They were both born in 1729, and John was the only Hilliard of the right age to marry a woman who became a widow at age 62.
[17] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 31.
[18] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 130.
[19] Perry, *Brief History of the Town of Glocester*, A3.

able to serve.[20] He deeded 1 acre of land in Glocester on 28 October 1778.[21]

Jeremiah's son David was in Danby, Vermont, in 1782.[22] Jeremiah may have arrived there soon after. On 4 October 1787, he deeded his 40-acre farm in Glocester " where Esek now lives" to his son Esek.[23] He was listed in Danby as a head of household in the 1790 census (taken in 1791 in Vermont) with one male age 16 or more and one female.[24]

Jeremiah's will was written 5 August 1791 and was probated 4 February 1792. He left Phebe "all my cattle, two cows and one calf, ten sheep, goods and chattels, household stuff." He left to his eldest son, Esek, his wearing apparel, and 10 shillings to daughter Levina and 5 shillings to daughter Europa as well as to youngest son David. The inventory of the estate, taken 23 December 1791, was valued at £50, 6 shillings, 7 pence. It included two cows, one calf, nine sheep, two feather beds, a pewter plate and platter, one small silver spoon, earthenware, glass bottles, warming pan, woolen wheel, carpenters' tools, corn, wheat butter, and notes receivable from David Comstock (£12) and Daniel Kelly (£2).[25]

John Hilliard died before 4 November 1793, when his estate inventory was filed, valued at £205, including a horse, sheep, a feather bed, house, barn, 224 acres of land in Middleton, and the use of the farm in Danby hired to Miner Hilliard. The estate papers do not name Phebe.[26]

On 26 January 1795, Phebe Hilliard of Danby named her son David Comstock, also of Danby, her attorney, to collect amounts

---

[20] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 84.
[21] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 31.
[22] Williams, *History and Map of Danby, Vermont*, 130.
[23] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 31.
[24] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Vermont*, 38.
[25] Rutland County, Vermont, Probate, 3:3, 9.
[26] Rutland County, Vermont, Probate, 3:49, 154, 179.

due from the estate of her father, Joseph Arnold, and her mother, Patience Arnold of Smithfield, Rhode Island.[27]

Children of Jeremiah and Phebe (Arnold) Comstock:[28]

i. **Esek Comstock**, called eldest son in will.

ii. **Levina Comstock,** born about 1752.[29]

iii. **Europa Comstock**, probably born about 1755.[30]

iv. **David Comstock**, born Glocester 1757; called youngest son in will.

---

[27] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 31.

[28] Named in Jeremiah's will.

[29] Died in 1813, age 61, according to Williams in *History and Map of Danby, Vermont*, 115.

[30] Europa's sister Levina married Amos Brown in Glocester in 1780 and moved to Danby. When Levina died, Amos married second Europa, widow of John Hunt, who died in 1841, age 86 (born about 1755) (Williams, *History and Map of Danby, Vermont*, 115). With the family and geographical connections and the unusual name of Europa, it seems likely she was Europa, daughter of Jeremiah and Phebe.

78. **JACOB[5] ARNOLD** *(Joseph[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 7 July 1732, a son of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[31]

He married **SUSANNAH BALLOU** at Smithfield 25 November 1756.[32] She was born at Smithfield 28 June 1739, a daughter of Samuel and Susannah (Arnold) Ballou.[33] In his will of 14 December 1764, Samuel Ballou of Smithfield mentioned his daughter, Susannah Arnold.[34] Susannah's sister Jemima married Jacob's brother William (#79) in 1767.

In 1754, before he was married, Jacob was admitted as a freeman of Smithfield.[35]

In 1774, Jacob headed a household in Smithfield of two males above age 16, six males under age 16, two females above age 16, and one female under age 16.[36] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50, able to serve.[37]

Jacob was taxed at Smithfield in 1778 on a farm of four houses, one horse, four oxen, nine horned cattle, twenty-two sheep/goats, four swine, 50 acres of pasture to keep thirteen cows, 7 acres under tillage producing 140 bushels of grain, 25 acres of mowing land producing 9 tons of English hay and 9 tons of fresh hay, and 45 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 127 acres.[38]

Jacob sold 18 acres of land in Smithfield on 17 12th month [December] 1782 and 22 additional acres on the same day. Jacob

---

[31] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[32] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[33] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 90.
[34] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 301.
[35] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen*, 12.
[36] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[37] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 90.
[38] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 19.

and Susannah sold "my homestead farm where I now dwell," of 60 acres to Jacob's brother William on 6 4th month [April] 1784.[39]

Jacob and Susannah received a certificate to transfer from the Smithfield Society of Friends to the Oblong Monthly Meeting of Dutchess County, New York, on 27 May 1784.[40] He and Susannah gave a mortgage to Daniel Merritt of Pawling, New York, and Edmund Prior of New York City on 1 September 1789 for a 259-acre farm in lot 34 of the Oblong (an area in the eastern part of Dutchess County) for 1,500 Spanish milled dollars.[41]

In 1790, Jacob headed a household in Pawling Town, Dutchess County, New York, of four males age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and four females.[42]

Jacob died before 24 May 1793, when letters of administration were granted to Susannah and their son Silas. Susannah died at Pawling, 25 May 1832, "age 93."[43]

Children of Jacob and Susannah (Ballou) Arnold, at least the first eight born at Smithfield, others perhaps at Pawling, New York:[44]

i. **Robe[6] Arnold**, born 22 February 1758.

ii. **Jesse Arnold**, born 2 April 1759.

iii. **Ahab Arnold**, born 17 November 1760.

iv. **Phebe Arnold**, born 15 January 1763.

---

[39] Smithfield Deeds, 7:493, 405, 451.
[40] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[41] Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent*, 2:220.
[42] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census of the United States: New York*, 87.
[43] Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent*, 2:220.
[44] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89. The last six are from Willis Arnold Boughton, *Arnold, Redway and Earl Families* (Fort Lauderdale, Fla., 1948), 55, citing information provided by Mrs. John Gilchrist, granddaughter of David Arnold, born 1769.

v. **Silas Arnold**, born 21 May 1765.

vi. **William Arnold**, born 27 May 1767.

vii. **David Arnold**, born 25 April 1769.

viii. **Jacob Arnold**, born 18 February 1771.

ix. **Joseph Arnold.**

x. **Esick Arnold.**

xi. **Caleb Arnold.**

xii. **Rholey Arnold.**

xiii. **Sylvia Arnold.**

xiv. **Susan Arnold.**

79. **WILLIAM[5] ARNOLD** *(Joseph[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 30 November 1733. a son of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[45]

He married **JEMIMA BALLOU** about 1767 (first child born in 1768).[46] She was born at Smithfield, a daughter of Samuel and Susannah (Arnold) Ballou.[47] In his will of 14 December 1764, Samuel Ballou of Smithfield mentioned his daughter, Jemima Ballou.[48] Jemima's sister Susannah married William's brother Jacob (#78) in 1756.

On 13 April 1763, William Arnold of Smithfield, physician, purchased from his brother Caleb half of the 80-acre homestead where his mother "Patience Arnold now dwells."[49]

In 1774, William headed a household of three males over age 16, one male under age 16, two females over age 16, one female under age 16, and one African-American.[50] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[51]

William was a physician (called "Dr. William" in death notice). According to *History of Woonsocket,* "He was a celebrated man in his day — a deep student and a skilful physician. But he doubted his own powers and practiced his profession but little, devoting his time to scientific pursuits."[52]

William was engaged in farming as well as medicine. In 1778, he was taxed on a farm in Smithfield with five houses, one horse, two oxen, six horned cattle, twenty-one sheep/goats, two swine, 20 acres of pasture to keep five cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 75 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 8 barrels of cider,

---

[45] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[46] First name from probate and birth records, Ballou from Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 198.
[47] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 90.
[48] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 301.
[49] Smithfield Deeds, 5:299.
[50] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[51] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 91.
[52] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 198.

20 acres of mowing land producing 4½ tons of English hay and 15½ tons of fresh hay, and 44 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 91 acres.[53]

Dr. William Arnold, a member of the Society of Friends, died 24 March 1817, in his 84th year.[54] His will, written at Smithfield 15 July 1810, was proved 1 April 1817. His wife Jemima Arnold was left "the homestead farm where I now live." The will mentions his daughter Lydia Steere, wife of Richard Steere; three grandsons, Arnold, Richard and Franklin Steere, all under age 21, who each received a parcel of land; his granddaughters, Jemima, Lydia, Elmira, and Julian Steere, all under age 18, who were left eighteen shares in the Smithfield Union Bank, and his grandson, Arnold Steere, who received William's share and rights in the Providence Library.[55]

Jemima died 25 July 1825.[56] Jemima Arnold, of Smithfield, "widow of Dr. William Arnold," had written her will 13 June 1821; it was proved 8 October 1825. She mentioned her grandsons Richard, Franklin, George William, and Arnold Steere, who were to receive all her real estate when they reached age 21. Granddaughters Jemima Steere, Lydia Arnold Steere, and Elmira Steere were to receive twenty shares in Smithfield Union Bank.[57] The inventory of her estate, valued at $2,762, included notes signed by Richard Steere and thirty shares in the Smithfield Union Bank (founded in 1805 with a capital of $50,000).[58]

Children of William and Jemima (Ballou) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[59]

i. **David[6] Arnold**, born 20 October 1768; died Smithfield 21 January 1769.

ii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 9 January 1774.

---

[53] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 19.
[54] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135.
[55] Smithfield Probate, 3:638. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 15 (1992): 77.
[56] Smithfield Probate, 4:531.
[57] Smithfield Probate, 4:526. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 211.
[58] Smithfield Probate, 4:218.
[59] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.

80. **CALEB[5] ARNOLD** *(Joseph[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 21 March 1735, a son of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[60]

He married a cousin, **MARTHA ARNOLD,** sometime about 1785. Martha was born about 1753 (based on age at death), a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold (#23). She was the widow of another cousin, Seth Arnold (#118), whom she had married in 1768; Seth died in 1778.

On 24 2nd month [February] 1785, the Smithfield Friends reported that

> Caleb Arnold has married out of the order of the Friends at that same was arrived at in a very precipitous manner at nearer his kin than the Friends approve of, near as first cousin.

At the next meeting, on 31 3rd month [March] 1785, he was disowned.[61]

Caleb's father died when Caleb was 10 years old. His father's will provided that his wife, Patience, should "put out his son Caleb to some profitable trade that he inclines to when he shall attain the age of fourteen years."[62] Patience sold the family homestead in June 1752 but purchased it back on behalf of her son Caleb, then 17, in November. On 13 April 1763, Caleb sold his brother William " one half of the homestead farm where my mother Patience Arnold now dwells."[63]

In the 1777 military census, Caleb was listed at Smithfield as age 16–50 and unable to serve.[64] In 1778, before he was married, Caleb was taxed in Smithfield on one-third of a house, one-third of a

---

[60] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[61] Smithfield Friends Records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[62] Smithfield Probate, 1:269. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 71.
[63] Smithfield Deeds, 5:93, 119, 299.
[64] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 90.

lime kiln, a tanyard, £60 in money, one horse, two oxen, four horned cattle, fifteen sheep/goats, and one acre under tillage.[65]

In 1790, Caleb headed a household in Smithfield of two males over age 16 and three females.[66]

On 4 February 1792, Caleb and Martha sold Arnold Paine one-half of 80 acres of land in Woonsocket owned equally by Caleb and his brother, William, "where Caleb now lives."[67]

Caleb died at Smithfield 16 February 1795.[68] His death at the age of 60 was noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 21 March 1795.[69] His will, written 30 December 1794, was proved 12 March 1795. His wife, Martha, was named sole executrix. He left a nephew, Caleb Wall, his wearing apparel. His inventory was valued at £422 and included a note from Arnold Paine for £153, a yoke of oxen, three feather beds, a desk, furniture, a chest, a warming pan, a woolen wheel, three books, and farming tools.[70]

On 25 June 1795, four months after her husband's death, Martha sold Arnold Paine her rights to the homestead of Caleb's father, Joseph Arnold.[71]

"Martha Arnold, widow of Caleb," died at Smithfield 11 February 1798, "in her 45th year."[72] The inventory of her estate was taken 19 February 1798 and was valued at $1,028. It included several notes, including one signed by Arnold Paine, farm animals, hay, furniture, three feather beds, a woolen wheel, 10 yards of cotton and linen cloth, kitchen and dining utensils, a desk, four books,

---

[65] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 20.
[66] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[67] Smithfield Deeds, 9:87.
[68] Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Deaths," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.
[69] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[70] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 449. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 130.
[71] Smithfield Deeds, 8:409.
[72] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131.

and a looking glass.[73] On 15 September 1798, the probate records listed several claims against the estate of Martha Arnold, including a $1,050 judgment in arbitration due to Arnold Paine.[74]

Martha and Caleb had no children; they probably raised Martha's family of six young children by her first husband.[75]

---

[73] Smithfield Probate, 3:12.
[74] Smithfield Probate, 3:32.
[75] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.

81. **PATIENCE[5] ARNOLD** *(Joseph[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island 14 May 1738, a daughter of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[76]

She is said to have married **THOMAS WALL** in 1770 or earlier.[77]

Thomas Wall of Smithfield, tailor, purchased one acre of land in Glocester, Rhode Island, near the northeast corner on 30 April 1772.[78]

Thomas was living in Glocester at the time of the 1774 Rhode Island census with a household of one male over age 16, two males under age 16, one female over age 16, and one female under age 16.[79]

In 1778, Thomas was taxed on a small farm in Glocester with one house, one horse, four horned cattle, six sheep/goats, one swine, 2 acres under tillage producing 14 bushels of grain, 5 acres of meadow producing 2½ tons of English hay and 18 acres of wood or wasteland for a total of 25 acres. The personal estate was valued at £30 and real estate at £75.[80]

Thomas Wall of Glocester, tailor, purchased 54 acres of land in Glocester on 22 4th month [April] 1782. He purchased an additional 7 acres of land on the road from Glocester to Uxbridge next to his land at a corner of Benedict Arnold's land on 16 June 1788.[81]

---

[76] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[77] Richard, *History of Woonsocket*, 198. Greene, in "Arnold Family," 60, normally a reliable source, says Patience married a Thomas Williams and had a son Caleb. However, the deed of Caleb Wall cited below in which he referred to his grandfather, Joseph Arnold, supports the Thomas Wall marriage. Greene may have been confused with Patience's brother-in-law, Thomas Wall (#82).
[78] Glocester Deeds, 9:300.
[79] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 140.
[80] "Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 20 (1994): 120.
[81] Glocester Deeds, 11:280, 539.

At the time of the 1782 Rhode Island census he headed a household in Glocester with three males under age 16, four females under age 16, one female age 22–49, and one male age 50 or more.[82] In 1790, he was listed with a household of three males under age 16, three males over age 16, and five females.[83]

Patience had died and Thomas had a wife named Phebe on 24 January 1793 when he sold 70 acres of land in Glocester, on the road to Uxbridge near Benedict Arnold's land, to Daniel Wall of Glocester (perhaps a son?).[84]

Children of Thomas and Patience (Arnold) Wall:[85]

i. **Patience Wall**, born 24 2nd month [February] 1771.[86]

ii. **Caleb Wall.**[87]

iii. **Daniel Wall**, possible son (see 1793 deed mentioned above).

---

[82] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 130.

[83] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 30.

[84] Glocester Deeds, 12:259.

[85] Census records suggest they had a large family, and a number of children are listed on the undocumented International Genealogical Index. These have not been verified with primary sources or even early secondary sources.

[86] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7:Smithfield Friends Births, 200.

[87] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 198. In a deed of 30 12th month [December] 1794, Caleb Wall of Smithfield, blacksmith, sold one undivided seventh part of the farm that had belonged to his "grandfather, Joseph Arnold." Smithfield Deeds, 8:391. Caleb's uncle, Caleb Arnold, left his wearing apparel to Caleb in his will dated 30 December 1794.

82. **PHILADELPHIA[5] ARNOLD** *(Joseph[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 12 January 1740 at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Joseph and Patience (Wilkinson) Arnold.[88]

She is said to have married **THOMAS WILLIAMS** by whom she had a daughter, Philadelphia Williams, who was born about 1772. Thomas was said to have been a "straggler" in the Old French War.[89] A Thomas Williams served from Rhode Island in Captain Jencke's Company in 1757 and 1758.[90] A Thomas Williams, age 27, born in Rhode Island, enlisted in Captain Lobdel's Company in New York 7 May 1760 [born about 1733], 5 feet 11 inches tall.[91]

Further information is not found on Thomas Williams. It is not known if he died soon after the marriage or abandoned Philadelphia. Perhaps they were never actually married. What is known is that Philadelphia appeared in the records frequently, under her maiden name; she was known as "Miss Philadelphia Arnold."

Philadelphia's father died in 1745 when she was small; she is mentioned in his will. Her mother died in 1787. The administrator of her mother's estate listed four disbursements to Philadelphia Arnold in 1793, totaling £66.[92]

"Miss Phila" Arnold was listed in the 1790 census at Smithfield with a household of two females, one of whom was likely her daughter Philadelphia, who was married later that year.[93]

---

[88] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[89] Greene, "Arnold Family," 61; Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 198.
[90] Chapin, *Rhode Island in the Colonial Wars*, 152.
[91] Jane Fletcher Fiske, "Rhode Island Men Who Served from New York in the Old French War 1755–1764," *Rhode Island Roots* 9 (1983): 86.
[92] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 447.
[93] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.

Moses Aldrich, of Caleb (no surname given), married Philadelphia Williams, of Philadelphia (no surname given), at Smithfield 4 November 1790.[94]

On 18 August 1794, son-in-law Moses Aldrich of Smithfield was appointed as attorney of Philadelphia Arnold to collect debts owed to her.[95] Perhaps she was living with Moses and Philadelphia Adrich in 1800, when his household included one female age 45 or more (his wife was only about 28).[96]

"Miss Philadelphia Arnold" died at Smithfield at the age of 64, as reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 31 August 1805.[97]

Presumed daughter of Philadelphia Arnold and Thomas Williams:[98]

i. **Philadelphia Williams**, born about 1772; died Smithfield 13 June 1816, in her 44th year.[99]

---

[94] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 7.
[95] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 477.
[96] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 515.
[97] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 133.
[98] Greene, "Arnold Family," 61.
[99] Listed as "Mrs. Philadelphia Aldrich," Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 108.

83. **RUTH[5] ARNOLD** *(Richard[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, in 1724, a daughter of Richard and Ruth (Aldrich) Arnold.[100]

Ruth married **GIDEON COMSTOCK** at Smithfield 3 March 1738/9. He was born 4 November 1709, a son of Hazediah and Catharine (Pray) Comstock.[101]

In December 1744, Gideon was appointed administrator of the estate of his father-in-law, Richard Arnold, who had left Rhode Island and was presumed dead.[102] He brought suit against Thomas Man "late of Smithfield," who had married Richard's widow in 1743 for "taking and carrying away the personal estate of the said Richard Arnold." The estate was awarded £275, which Man could not pay. Man ended up in jail.[103]

Ruth, the wife of Gideon, died after their fourth child was born in February 1745/6. Gideon married Amey (Phillips?) Arnold? before 2 June 1749 (see deed below). She died 7 October 1811, aged 88.[104]

---

[100] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190. Year of birth from Greene, "Arnold Family," 61.

[101] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 27. Marriage is at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

[102] Smithfield Probate, 1:256.

[103] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 2:278, 3:377. Rhode Island Superior Court, first Tuesday of September 1746, FHL microfilm #945808. Petitions to the Rhode Island General Assembly, 5:120, FHL microfilm #947779.

[104] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 27, says Gideon married, second, Freelove Arnold, widow of Josiah Arnold (#27) and, third, Amey _____. No primary source record has been found for the marriage to Freelove. Amey (Phillips) Arnold became the widow of Josiah Arnold of Smithfield 23 March 1747/8. It seems likely that she was the Amey whom Gideon married before 2 June 1749, and the Comstock genealogy author was confused.

Gideon lived in Smithfield, Providence, and Cranston, Rhode Island. He became a freeman at Smithfield in 1734. He was in the Rhode Island legislature several times from 1758 to 1780. He was an assistant in 1758, deputy from Cranston 1770-1771, justice in the Superior Court and in the Council of War 1777-78 and 1780, and member of the Committee of War in May 1781.[105]

Gideon was of Smithfield when he deeded land on 18 June 1742 and land in Glocester 18 April 1747.[106]

On 8 February 1747, Gideon Comstock, Richard Sayles, and John Aldrich were appointed to survey and lay out additional land on the north side of Providence for the public burying place.[107] Gideon and Amy were of Providence when they deeded land in Glocester on 2 June 1749 and land in Smithfield on 21 May 1775.[108] In December 1750 and December 1751, he was described as a merchant of Providence when he brought several suits in the Court of Common Pleas to recover debts.[109]

Gideon was in Cranston in June 1766 when he was named in litigation.[110] He headed a household there in 1774 that included three males age 16 or more and three females age 16 or more.[111] In the 1777 military census, he was listed at Cranston as age 60 or more.[112] In 1782, his household in Cranston included one female age 16–21, one male age 50 or more, and one female age 50 or more.[113]

---

[105] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 27.
[106] C. B. Comstock, *Some Descendants of Samuel Comstock* (New York, 1905), 15.
[107] *Providence Town Records*, 18:7.
[108] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 27.
[109] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 3:68, 135.
[110] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas5:399.
[111] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 211.
[112] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 23.
[113] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 34.

Gideon and his wife Amy were in Smithfield when they sold land on 13 June 1785.[114]

On 24 June 1791, Gideon of Smithfield deeded 160 acres in Smithfield "where Gideon now lives," but with life use to Gideon and his wife Amy. [115]

Gideon died at Smithfield in 1801, aged 92.[116]

Children of Gideon and Ruth (Arnold) Comstock, born at Smithfield:[117]

i. **Adam Comstock**, born 28 January 1739/40.

ii. **Alpha Comstock**, born 12 March 1741/2.

iii. **Ruth Comstock**, born 13 July 1744.

iv. **True Comstock**, born 14 February 1745/6.

v. **Freelove Comstock.**

vi. **Gideon Comstock.**

---

[114] Smithfield Deeds, 7:516.

[115] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 27.

[116] Comstock, *Genealogy of the Comstock Family*, 27.

[117] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 95, for the first four. The last two from Greene, "Arnold Family," 117. Greene calls True Comstock "Ina."

84. **JANE[5] ARNOLD** *(Richard[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Richard and Ruth (Aldrich) Arnold.[118]

Although her parents were not married until 1722, she was probably the Jane Arnold who married **HENRY BLACKMAR** 18 February 1739 or 29 September 1739 (two different records) at Smithfield.[119] He was probably the Henry Blackmar mentioned in the 5 November 1760 will of John Blackmar of Glocester, Rhode Island. He was not mentioned in the will of John's widow, Jemima Blackmar, written 1 August 1769, suggesting he either had received his inheritance or perhaps was deceased.[120] He does not appear in the Rhode Island 1774 census.

Children of Henry and Jane (Arnold) Blackmar, recorded at Glocester:[121]

i. **Levi Blackmar**, born 25 November 1741.

ii. **Adonijah Blackmar**, born 9 September 1743.

iii. **Stephen Blackmar**, born 2 January 1749.

iv. **Lucretia Blackmar**, born 27 January 1753.

v. **Cain Blackmar**, born 27 October 1755.

---

[118] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.
[119] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.
[120] "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 4 (1981): 63.
[121] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 92.

85. **STEPHEN[5] ARNOLD** *(Richard[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 23 April 1728, a son of Richard and Ruth (Aldrich) Arnold.[122]

He married his third cousin **RACHEL ARNOLD** at Smithfield 27 May 1749.[123] She was born at Smithfield 19 December 1730, a daughter of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold.[124]

On 1 June 1743, Stephen's mother Ruth Arnold, widow, deeded the 80-acre homestead on which she lived to 15-year-old Stephen and his brother, Richard.[125] On 4 April 1754, John Aldrich of Smithfield sold Stephen Arnold 40 acres of land that had been deeded to Richard Arnold by his mother, Ruth Arnold.[126]

He was referred to as Stephen Arnold in Smithfield, in contrast to the younger Stephen (#129), who was called Stephen Arnold Jr. The latter was probably a son of Job Arnold. Stephen was listed in the 1774 census with a household of two males above age 15, two females above age 15, and three females under age 16.[127]

In 1778, his farm in Smithfield was taxed on four houses, £37 in money, one horse, two oxen, six horned cattle, twenty-two sheep/goats, two swine, 18 acres of pasture to keep seven cows, 4 acres under tillage producing 60 bushels of grain, 5 acres of orchard producing 15 barrels of cider, 24 acres of mowing land producing nine tons of English hay and five tons of fresh hay, and 44 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total acreage of 95.[128]

---

[122] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[123] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[124] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[125] Smithfield Deeds, 2:319.
[126] Smithfield Deeds, 4:406.
[127] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[128] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 20.

On 8 May 1782, Stephen Arnold of Smithfield and his wife, Rachel, sold one-third of three lots in Providence "given to Rachel by her father, Daniel Arnold, late of Smithfield."[129]

According to his obituary in the *Providence Gazette* of 7 May 1796:

> His intellectual faculties were of a superior kind, that benevolence and humanity were prominent traits in his character, that he was frequently appointed to offices of trust by the town and by the State, and that held the office of justice of the peace for upwards of thirty years.[130]

Stephen died at Smithfield 2 May 1796.[131] His will, written 7 February 1785, was proved 30 May 1796. He mentioned his wife Rachel Arnold; his sons Elijah and Cyrus, under age 21; and daughters Alpha Arnold, Joanna Aldrich, Mary Aldrich, Dianna Aldrich, Bathsheba Aldrich, Rachel Arnold, and an unnamed daughter, wife of Elisha Bartlet. (The Aldrich boys certainly liked the Arnold girls! Elisha Bartlet married Ruth Arnold 5 September 1769.)He also named three grandchildren, children of Elisha Bartlet, Alpha Bartlet, Patience Bartlet, and Mary Bartlet. The youngest son, Cyrus, received the "remainder of his land," one- half at age 21 and the other half at his mother's death. The inventory of the estate was valued at $1,163 and included notes signed by Elijah Arnold for $116, other notes, a yoke of oxen, cows, a horse, sheep, hogs, furniture, and a dictionary and other books.[132]

Rachel was listed in the 1800 census as Rachel Arnold, widow, with a household of one female age 45 or more and one female age 26–44.[133]

---

[129] Original deed in Stephen Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001–A, Box 14.

[130] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette, 131. Richardson gives a more complete description in *History of Woonsocket*, 197.

[131] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 502.

[132] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 502. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 130.

[133] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 175.

Rachel died 12 September 1820.[134] She is buried in the Union Cemetery of North Smithfield.[135] Her will, written 23 January 1819, was proved 27 September 1820. She mentioned her sons Cyrus and Elijah Arnold; five daughters, Joanna Aldrich, Marcy Aldrich, Dianna Aldrich, Bathsheba Aldrich and Rachel Aldrich; two grandsons, Stephen and Richard Arnold, sons of Elijah; and four sons of her daughter Rachel: Caleb, Stephen, Oliver, and George Aldrich.[136]

Children of Stephen and Rachel (Arnold) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[137]

i. **Alpha[6] Arnold**, born 2 March 1750.

ii. **Elijah Arnold**, born 15 December 1751.

iii. **Ruth Arnold**, born 1 October 1753.

iv. **Joanna Arnold**, born 8 March 1755.

v. **Mary "Mercy" Arnold**, born 4 August 1757.

vi. **Dianna Arnold**, born 6 November 1762.

vii. **Bathsheba Arnold**, born 24 October 1764.

viii. **Mary Arnold**, born 4 August 1767.

ix. **Rachel Arnold**, born 9 February 1770.[138]

x. **Cyrus Arnold**, born 1 September 1774.[139]

---

[134] Smithfield Probate, 4:83.
[135] Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries list at *http://rootsweb.com*.
[136] Smithfield Probate, 4:72. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 206.
[137] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89. The last two named in their father's will.
[138] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 197; also named in father's will.
[139] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 197.

86. MARY[5] ARNOLD *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 2 October 1730, a daughter of Thomas and Susanna (Comstock) Arnold.[140]

She married **CALEB ALDRICH** at Smithfield 1 January 1747/8.[141] He was born at Mendon, Massachusetts, 14 January 1726, a son of Moses and Hannah (White) Aldrich. Moses was a Quaker preacher who traveled throughout the colonies and to England.[142] The 1765 will of Mary's father called her Mary Aldrich.[143]

Caleb served in the Rhode Island General Assembly from 1763 to 1769 and was a judge.[144]

He was listed at Smithfield in the 1774 census with a household of two males age 16 or more, four males under age 16, two females age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[145] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[146]

In 1778, Caleb's farm in Smithfield included seven buildings, £71 in money and trading stock, 10 ounces of plate, three horses, four oxen, thirty-one horned cattle, twenty sheep/goats, four swine, 80 acres of pasture to keep sixteen cows, 12 acres under tillage producing 204 bushels of grain, 7 acres of orchard producing 25 barrels of cider, 50 acres of mowing land producing 15 tons of English hay and 25 tons of fresh hay, and 171 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 320 acres. His personal estate was valued at £233 and his real estate at £1,600.[147]

---

[140] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[141] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[142] Aldrich, *George Aldrich Genealogy*, 47, 64. Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 195.
[143] Smithfield Probate, 2:481.
[144] Aldrich, *George Aldrich Genealogy*, 64.
[145] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[146] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 94.
[147] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 22.

In 1790, Caleb's household included three males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and four females.[148]

Caleb died at Smithfield 8 November 1809. His will, written at Smithfield 6 December 1807, was proved 25 November 1809. He mentioned his wife Mary Aldrich; sons, Thomas, William (deceased), Naaman, Joel, Augustus, Moses, Arnold, and Caleb Jr.; and daughters Hannah White, Mary Paine, Lydia Paine, and Susannah Mowry (deceased). He mentioned grandchildren Welcome Aldrich, William Aldrich, Joel Aldrich (under 21), and Margery Aldrich, wife of Dexter Aldrich. He also mentioned land he bought from Daniel, Hannah, and Isaac Phillips.[149]

Mary died in October 1816, probably at Smithfield.[150]

Children of Caleb and Mary (Arnold) Aldrich, the first four born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, the rest born at Smithfield:[151]

i. **Susanna Aldrich**, born 25 November 1749.

ii. **Thomas Aldrich**, born 7 April 1750.

iii. **William Aldrich**, born 3 April 1752.

iv. **Hannah Aldrich**, born 2 February 1752/3.

v. **Naaman Aldrich**, born 6 May 1756.

vi. **Joel Aldrich**, born 2 June 1758.

vii. **Augustus Aldrich**, born 9 May 1760.

---

[148] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 39.
[149] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 88.
[150] Aldrich, *Aldrich Genealogy*, 64.
[151] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 195. The births of Naaman (called "Naomi"), Joel, and Augustus also appear at *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 85. The *George Aldrich Genealogy* shows 1748 for the year of Susanna's birth and 1763 for Mary's.

viii. **Mary Aldrich**, born 8 September 1762.

ix. **Caleb Aldrich**, born 27 September 1764.

x. **Moses Aldrich**, born 15 March 1767.

xi. **Lydia Aldrich**, born 29 May 1769.

xii. **Arnold Aldrich**, born 1 August 1773.

87. **THOMAS[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 8 October 1733, a son of Thomas and Susanna (Comstock) Arnold.[152]

He is said to have married **RACHEL SMITH.**[153]

Thomas purchased 4 acres of land in Smithfield from Thomas Smith on 20 June 1767. Thomas and Rachel sold land in Smithfield on 1 October 1768. He purchased 100 acres of land there on 21 September 1770.[154] He sold 8 acres of land with one-fourth of a forge or iron mill on 1 January 1770, his 43-acre "homestead farm where I now dwell" in Smithfield on 14 October 1770, and four additional acres on 4 December 1770.[155] He sold the 107-acre farm "where I now dwell" on 4 9th month [September] 1772.[156] Thomas was listed at Smithfield in the 1774 census with a household of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, two females age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[157] He was listed in the 1777 military census as age 16–50 and able to serve.[158]

Thomas was taxed in Smithfield in 1778 on a personal estate of £12, including one horse.[159]

He was not listed in Smithfield at the time of the 1790 census. He was at Smithfield in 1794 when his daughter, Philadelphia, was married in Cumberland.[160]

---

[152] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[153] Greene, "Arnold Family," 62. Her first name is confirmed by the deed cited below.
[154] Smithfield Deeds, 5:378, 7:18. 6:267.
[155] Smithfield Deeds, 6:237, 294, 278.
[156] Smithfield Deeds, 6:349.
[157] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 102.
[158] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 94.
[159] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 59. Another Thomas Arnold, who married Anstis Thornton in 1776, may have been in Smithfield at the time, but he soon moved to Johnston, Rhode Island.
[160] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 18. Philadelphia was listed as of Smithfield, daughter of Thomas. The groom's father was listed as deceased, Thomas was not.

Children of Thomas and Rachel (Smith) Arnold:[161]

i. **Lucy[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Catherine Arnold**, born about 1757; married in 1777.[162]

iii. **Aaron Arnold**, born about 1759 (age 61 in 1820).[163]

iv. **Asa Arnold.**[164]

v. **Philadelphia Arnold.**[165]

vi. **Lavina Arnold**, possible daughter.[166]

---

[161] Greene, in "Arnold Family," 62, lists all except Lavina; Richardson, in *History of Woonsocket*, 195, lists Aaron and Asa.

[162] Called a daughter of Thomas of Smithfield when she married Joseph Razee III at Cumberland 16 May 1777 (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Marriages, 8). Named two of her children Asa and Aaron.

[163] Identified as a son of Thomas when he married his cousin Amy Eddy at Smithfield 19 February 1799 (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 13). Age in 1820 from Revolutionary War pension file #W2581.

[164] Asa Arnold, son of Thomas, was left 2 acres of land in Smithfield by his grandfather, Thomas Arnold, in his will of 16 April 1765 (Smithfield Probate, 2:481).

[165] Called "daughter of Thomas of Smithfield" when she married Hezekiel Caller at Cumberland 9 November 1794 (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Marriages, 18).

[166] On 27 11th month [November] 1777, Lavina Arnold, "daughter of Thomas," requested membership in the Smithfield Society of Friends. FHL microfilm #1310.

88. **CATHERINE[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 24 September 1735, a daughter of Thomas and Susanna (Comstock) Arnold.[167]

She married **GEORGE COMSTOCK** at Smithfield 9 March 1765.[168] He was born 6 12th month [February] 1740,[169] a son of David and Deborah (Brown) Comstock.[170]

Catherine and George initially lived in Smithfield and belonged to the Smithfield Society of Friends. In the 1774 census, their household had one male and two females above age 16, and one male and three females under age 16. In the 1777 military census, George was listed as able to serve but exempt as a member of the Society of Friends.[171] His farm in Smithfield in 1778 comprised of five houses, 8 ounces of silver plate, two oxen, eleven horned cattle, fourteen sheep/goats, six swine, 160 acres of pasture to keep twelve cows, 3 acres under tillage producing 45 bushels of grain, 6 acres of orchard producing 25 barrels of cider, 35 acres of mowing land producing 12 tons of English hay and 6 tons of fresh hay, and 6 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 150 acres, valued at £31 for his personal estate and £300 of real estate.[172] In 1790, George headed a household in Smithfield of two males age 16 or more and four females.[173]

The year 1788 was a tough year for the family since three of their five children died.

On 24 April 1793, George Comstock of Smithfield purchased 67 acres of land in Leicester, Massachusetts.[174] He was listed as head

---

[167] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[168] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[169] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 186.
[170] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 35.
[171] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 35.
[172] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 93.
[173] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.
[174] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 35.

of a household in Leicester in 1800 with a household of one male age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more. He was there in 1810 with a household of one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, and one female age 45 or more.[175]

On 17 October 1816 (shortly after his wife's death), "George Comstock of Mendon, late of Leicester," wrote his will. It was proved 1 February 1820. He made bequests to three grandchildren, Willard, Susanna, and George Smith, "children of my daughter Rowena, late wife of Zadoc Smith," and to Diana Comstock, only daughter of his deceased son George.[176]

Catherine died at Mendon, 27 July 1816. George died there 16 June 1820.[177]

Children of George and Catherine (Arnold) Comstock, probably born at Smithfield:[178]

i. **Rowena Comstock** (twin), born 12 11th month [November] 1766.

ii. **Susanna Comstock** (twin), born 12 11th month [November] 1766; died 21 5th month [May] 1788.

iii. **Naomi Comstock**, born 1768; died 1788.

iv. **George Comstock**, born 9 12th month [December] 1774.

v. **Brown Comstock**, born 1777; died 1788.

---

[175] U.S. Census, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Leicester, 1800, 488; 1810, 487.

[176] Worcester County Probate, cited at Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 35.

[177] *Mendon Vital Records,* 457.

[178] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 186, for Rowena, Susanna, and George. Naomi and Brown are from Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 35.

[178] *Mendon Vital Records,* 457.

89. **JOHN[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 22 January 1741, a son of Thomas and Mary (Man) Arnold.[179]

He married **MARTHA BUCKLIN** at Smithfield 15 October 1761.[180] She was born 21 February 1744, a daughter of Isaac and Sarah (Whipple) Bucklin.[181]

When John's father died 11 December 1765, John inherited a dwelling house in Cumberland, Rhode Island, and three-eighths of his forge.[182] "John Arnold Jr., bloomer" (iron worker), and his wife, Martha, sold these properties 21 April 1766.[183]

John and Martha became the second white settlers of what is now Saratoga Springs, New York, in 1774. The first settler, Dirick Schouten, came in 1771 and built a cabin. In 1773, after quarreling with the Indians, he was forced to leave. John Arnold provided himself with a few articles suitable for the Indian trade, mostly spirituous liquors, and with these and a few household goods traveled to High Rock Spring. Upon arrival, John took possession of Schouten's abandoned cabin, made some improvements, and opened a kind of rude tavern for the visitors to the Springs. This pioneer hotel had but a single room or two on the ground floor and a chamber overhead. In sight of it were sixteen Indian cabins. When Burgoyne's army invaded from the north, John was

---

[179] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[180] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[181] Date of birth calculates from age at death on tombstone, Bemis Point Cemetery, *www.rootsweb.com/~nychauta/CEMETERY/Bemus1.htm.* No record of her birth has been found. However, her parents are identified because she was named Martha Arnold in the 1816 will of her brother Sylvanus Bucklin of Smithfield along with other siblings, Isaac, Nathaniel, Ann, Joanna, and Mary. See *RIGR* 15 (1992): 75.
[182] Smithfield Probate, 2:481.
[183] Cumberland Probate, 4:291.

alarmed for the safety of his family and moved them away from the Springs to a less dangerous place.[184]

It is said that John died in Saratoga County 4 April 1804 and is buried near his farm, possibly in the Dunham Cemetery.[185] He has not been found in the 1790 or 1800 censuses.[186]

On 2 September 1811, John and Martha's son David traveled to the western part of New York and purchased land in Chautauqua County from the Holland Land Company.[187] In 1812, Martha moved to Bemis Point, Ellery, in Chautauqua County with David and his family and her daughter Amy (Arnold) Ferguson and family. They arrived 12 March 1812. En route, they stopped at the land office, where on 10 March 1812 Amy's husband, Amos Ferguson, purchased a parcel of land.[188] A few weeks later the War of 1812 broke out. This caused a great deal of anxiety, as they were close to the Canadian border.[189] Later in the war there were battles around Buffalo, New York, just a few miles north.
Martha died 19 November 1812 and is buried in the Bemis Point Cemetery.[190] Her gravestone says she was "age 68-8-29, widow of John."[191]

---

[184] Nathaniel Bartlett Sylvester, *History of Saratoga County* (Philadelphia, 1878), 150.

[185] Richard D. Arnold, *Arnold Families of Saratoga County, New York* (Schenectady, New York, 1992), 4. The 1804 year is substantiated in the 1859 letter described in footnote 189.

[186] A John Arnold was listed in Half Moon, New York, in 1790 and 1800. However, he was probably the John Arnold, born 20 June 1752, who died at Saratoga, New York, and had one son Joseph, according to Elisha Stephen Arnold in *The Arnold Memorial* (Rutland, Vt., 1935), 107, making him a descendant of William Arnold of Pawtuxet, Rhode Island.

[187] Karen E. Livsey, *Western New York Land Transactions, 1804–1825* (Baltimore, 1991), 87.

[188] Livsey, *Western New York Land Transactions*, 87.

[189] The 1812 arrival date and concerns about the war are in a letter written by Martha's grandson, Stephen Ferguson, on 24 November 1859, now in the Chautauqua County Historical Society in Westfield, New York, seen by Robert Swanson in 2000.

[190] Arnold, *Arnold Families of Saratoga County*, 4.

Children of John and Martha (Bucklin) Arnold:[192]

i. **Thomas[6] Arnold**, born Rhode Island 25 July 1766.

ii. **David Arnold**, born Schaghticoke, New York, 17 May 1779.[193]

iii. **Amy Arnold**, born 28 January 1782.[194]

iv. **Simeon Arnold**, possible son, born probably about 1790.[195]

v. **Catherine Arnold**, possible daughter.

---

[191] Bemis Point Cemetery, *www.rootsweb.com/~nychauta/CEMETERY/Bemus1.htm.*

[192] Arnold, *Arnold Families of Saratoga County*, 4. This source lists Thomas and David and says, "possibly Simeon and Catherine."

[193] Date and place from Bemis Point Cemetery, *www.rootsweb.com/~nychauta/CEMETERY/Bemus1.htm.*

[194] Birth date of Amy (Arnold) Ferguson from the letter written by her son, Stephen Ferguson, on 24 November 1859, described above. He said his grandmother [Martha (Bucklin) Arnold] was born in Rhode Island in 1744 and that his grandfather Arnold [John Arnold] died at Stillwater (Saratoga County) in 1804.

[195] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Saratoga County, Malton, 75, age 60.

90. **LYDIA[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 16 October 1749, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold.[196]

She married **WILLIAM BUFFUM** at Smithfield 1 October 1767.[197] He was born 20 12th month [February] 1741, a son of Joseph Buffum.[198]

William was listed at Smithfield in the 1774 census heading a household of one male age 16 or more, one female age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[199] He was listed as holding a certificate of exemption from the Society of Friends in the 1777 military census.[200] In 1790, his household included two males age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and eight females.[201]

In 1778, William's farm in Smithfield included four houses, £13 in money and trading stock, two horses, two oxen, four horned cattle, twelve sheep/goats, five swine, 25 acres of pasture to keep six cows, 4 acres under tillage growing 80 bushels of grain, 20 acres of mowing land producing 4 tons of English hay and 8 tons of fresh hay, and 96 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 145 acres, valued at £485 for the real estate and £87 for his personal estate.[202]

It is said that William built the sturdiest, most elegant two-story house in the village of Smithfield. He was the first to pipe spring water through log channels into the kitchen. He was thrifty, prosperous, and well read. He was an elder in the Society of Friends and director of Union Village Funds.[203]

---

[196] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[197] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 22.
[198] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 184.
[199] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 104.
[200] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 91.
[201] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[202] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 62.
[203] Owen A. Perkins, *Buffum Family Vol. II* (Smithtown, New York, 1983), 87.

Lydia died 10 7th month [July] 1828 and is buried "in Thomas Buffum's yard near Peleg Arnold's."[204]

William died at Smithfield 27 8th month [August] 1829.[205] His will, written at Smithfield 26 August 1829, was proved 3 October 1829. He mentioned his sons William, Thomas, and Arnold Buffum; daughters Patience Earle, an unnamed daughter (presumably the wife of Walter Allen), Waity Bartlet, deceased, Lydia B. Shrove, and Hannah Arnold; grandson David Buffum; and granddaughters Sarah Arnold and Ann Vernon Buffum.[206]

Children of William and Lydia (Arnold) Buffum, presumably born at Smithfield:[207]

i. **Patience Buffum**, born 9 5th month [May] 1770.

ii. **Lucy Buffum**, born 26 9th month [September] 1772.

iii. **Thomas Buffum**, born 2 6th month [June] 1776.

iv. **Hannah Buffum**, born 11 12th month [December] 1779.

v. **Arnold Buffum**, born 13 1st month [January] 1782.

vi. **Wait Buffum**, born 29 9th month [September] 1783.

vii. **Lydia Buffum**, born 17 10th month [October] 1787.

viii. **William Buffum**, born 10 11th month [November] 1789.

---

[204] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 184.

[205] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 184.

[206] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 8 (1985): 238.

[207] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 184. See also William Buffum Bible Record, published 1764, copy at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Manuscript C824.

91. **PELEG[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 10 June 1751, a son of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold.[208]

Peleg married **ALPHA ARNOLD** at Smithfield 18 September 1768.[209] She was born there 2 March 1750, a daughter of Stephen and Rachel (Arnold) Arnold.[210]

An incident from 1770, when Peleg was about eighteen years old, was related as follows:[211]

> The late Judge Peleg Arnold, when about 18 years of age, in going to mill, heard as he approached Friend's meeting house at Upper Smithfield, a great noise like the breaking in of windows, and being desirous of ascertaining the cause, rode up the hill to within about 20 rods of the house, when he discovered two young men on horseback each with a club, smashing in the front windows of the meeting house.
>
> Immediately on seeing him they wheeled and rode off at full speed. He being a vigorous young man and determined to ascertain who they were in order to bring them to justice, threw his bag of corn in the road and started in pursuit. The race was a sharp one and continued for six miles, when the Judge came up with and stopped them on Cumberland Hill. After learning their names and places of residence, he permitted them to proceed. One of the men proved to be a student in the college [Brown University]; and the President being informed of the circumstances, wrote to the Clerk of the Monthly Meeting.

The president required the student to pay for the damages and appear before the meeting to apologize.[212]

---

[208] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[209] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[210] Marriage record identifies parents. Birth at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[211] William R. Staples, *Annals of the Town of Providence* (Providence, 1843), 550, citing a letter from John Osborne of Smithfield.
[212] Staples, *Annals of the Town of Providence*, 550.

On 24 8th month [August] 1773, Peleg sold a small parcel of land to the Society of Friends near their meetinghouse in Woonsocket.[213]

In 1774, Peleg's household in Smithfield included two males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, three females age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[214] In the 1777 military census, Peleg was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[215]

On 26 June 1775, shortly after the Revolutionary War began, a town meeting was held at Peleg's home. A committee was chosen to select "one hundred fire arms *at once* and put them in proper shape fit for battle." They were to be stored at three houses, with one-third at Peleg's house.[216] Peleg was listed on the Smithfield militia alarm list dated 1 August 1778.[217] In March 1780, he was named Lieutenant Colonel Commandant of the Second Battalion of Providence County Militia.[218]

In 1778, Peleg's farm in Smithfield was taxed with nine houses, one lime kiln, a tanyard, two horses, two oxen, three horned cattle, thirteen sheep/goats, two swine, 20 acres of pasture to keep five cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 75 bushels of grain, 5 acres of orchard producing 25 barrels of cider, 24 acres of mowing land producing 6 tons of English hay and 9 tons of fresh hay, and 65 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 130 acres, valued at personal estate of £93 and real estate of £770.[219]

Peleg studied law at Brown University in Providence. He was admitted to the bar and practiced law. He served as a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly from October 1777 to October 1778 and from May 1782 to May 1783.

---

[213] Smithfield Deeds, 7:61.
[214] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[215] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 93.
[216] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 103.
[217] Military Papers, Rhode Island Historical Society, Mss. 673, subgroup 2, box 3, folder 85.
[218] Steere, *History of Smithfield*, 45.
[219] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 19.

He was elected a member of the Continental Congress in November 1786 and November 1787, serving through November 1788. In September 1787, the Continental Congress asked each state to consider adoption of the new United States constitution. Ratification took a long time. When Rhode Island held a vote of freemen in March 1788, the vote was 237 for and 2,708 against; many supporters of the constitution did not vote because they wanted modifications. Ratification came only after the adoption of the Bill of Rights. Rhode Island was the last state to approve the new constitution, on 20 May 1790.

During the prolonged ratification process, on 20 October 1788, Peleg wrote to the governor:[220]

> As it will be but a short time before a new form of government will take place in the United States, and as the State which I have the honor to represent have not thought proper to adopt that form of government, I submit, whether it is not expedient for the State to take the proposed Constitution under consideration and make their objections to the particular parts that are incompatible with a good system of government, and make known to the States of the Union on what terms the State would join them. This is a subject on which I have contemplated for a considerable time, and it appears of such importance as to require united wisdom and mature deliberation to enable the State to pursue prudent measures.

Because of his extended stay, he added:

> I am under the necessity of informing, that my situation renders it expedient for the State to make further provision for my support.

He kept the "Peleg Arnold Tavern" at Smithfield, Rhode Island. He was Assistant Governor of Rhode Island in 1790 and an incorporator of the Providence Society for the Abolition of Slavery in 1790. He was an unsuccessful Anti-Federalist candidate for

---

[220] William R. Staples, *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress 1765–1790* (Providence, 1870), 570, 585, 590, 614.

election to the Fourth Congress in 1794 and an unsuccessful Republican candidate to fill the vacancy created by the resignation of Benjamin Bourne in 1796. He was chief justice of the Rhode Island Supreme Court from June 1795 to June 1809 and again from May 1810 to May 1812. He was president of the Smithfield Union Bank in 1803. He again served as deputy to the General Assembly from October 1817 to May 1819.[221]

In February 1810, Peleg became president of the newly incorporated Trustees of the Smithfield Academy. The trustees were authorized to raise $1,500 by lottery for the erection of a building for the academy.[222]

Mrs. Alpha Arnold, "wife of Peleg Arnold Esq." died at Smithfield 11 July 1818.[223]

Peleg died 13 February 1820 and is buried at Union Cemetery, opposite the Friends Meeting House in Union Village, just west of Woonsocket, Rhode Island. His death was noted in the *Providence Gazette* and the *Providence Phenix*.[224]

The 1876 history of Woonsocket states that Peleg and Alpha had no children.[225]

---

[221] Biographical Directory of the United States Congress at *http://bioguide.congress.gov/scripts/biodisplay.pl?index=A000293*.
[222] Steere, *History of Smithfield*, 62.
[223] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 136.
[224] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 136; 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 236.
[225] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 196.

92. **NAOMI[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island about 1752, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold.[226]

She married **DAVID EDDY** at Smithfield 13 February 1772.[227] He was a son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Whipple) Eddy born at Smithfield 23 October 1747, but shown in the records as "Daniel" Eddy.[228]

David was listed at Smithfield in the 1777 military census as age 16–50 and able to serve.[229] He served in the American Revolution in Captain Stephen Whipple's Smithfield Company in Spencer's expedition against Rhode Island in October 1777, roll dated Smithfield, 14 November 1777. He was captain of the Second Militia Company of Smithfield in May 1776.[230]

In 1778, he was taxed at Smithfield on a farm with four buildings, six horned cattle, four swine, 20 acres of pasture to keep four cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 75 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 2 barrels of cider, 13 acres of meadow producing 10 tons of English hay, and 75 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 115 acres valued at £640. He also had debt of £6 and personal estate of £22.[231]

David was a tanner. He purchased land in Smithfield from his mother, who was then Hannah Arnold, having married William Arnold (#29), and in 1772 he sold to his brother Stephen land on Front Brook in Smithfield. In 1778, his wife, Naomi, joined him in selling 80 acres of his farm to Gideon Mowry and part of his homestead farm to Israel Aldrich. There were other sales of land

---

[226] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190. Her marriage record calls her a daughter of Thomas Arnold, deceased.

[227] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 212; 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 481.

[228] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 18.

[229] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.

[230] Ruth Eddy, *The Eddy Family in America* (Boston, 1930), 140.

[231] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 94.

through the years up to 1784.[232] In 1774, his household consisted of one male over 16, one male under 16, and one female over age 16.[233] In 1790, his household included two males over 16 and three females.[234]

"Naomi Eddy, wife of Capt. Daniel [*sic*] Eddy" died at Smithfield 27 June 1795.[235]

Children of David and Naomi (Arnold) Eddy:[236]

i. **George Eddy.**

ii. **Wate Eddy.**

iii. **Amie Eddy**, born about 1779 (age 76 in 1855 according to the pension file, #102588, of her husband, Aaron Arnold). Called Amie Eddy, daughter of David, in her 1799 marriage record.[237]

iv. **James Eddy.**

v. **David Eddy.**

vi. **Peleg Arnold Eddy**, born about 1785.[238]

vii. **Welcome Eddy.**

---

[232] Eddy, *Eddy Family in America*, 140.
[233] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 105.
[234] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 39.
[235] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 15: United States Chronicle Deaths, 499. Also called wife of Captain Daniel in 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 361.
[236] Greene, "Arnold Family," 64.
[237] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 13, as "Amie Eddy, daughter of David."
[238] Eddy, *Eddy Family in America*, 140.

93. **HANNAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1756, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold.[239]

She married first her cousin, **ELIJAH[6] ARNOLD**, at Smithfield 14 February 1771.[240] He was born there 15 December 1751, a son of Stephen and Rachel (Arnold) Arnold (#85).[241]

Elijah married second Dinah (Jenks) Read 5 February 1789.[242] She was born in July 1754, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Smith) Jenks.[243] She first married Oliver Read at Smithfield 12 March 1775.[244] Oliver died at Smithfield 23 July 1783.[245] As administrator of Oliver's estate, Dinah sold his 25-acre farm to Elijah on 26 April 1784 and sold her right of dower on 3 May 1784.[246] When she married Elijah, Dinah had an 11-year-old daughter, Patience Read, and a 9-year-old son, Ahab Read.[247]

In the 1774 census, Elijah headed a household in Smithfield of one male under 16, one male over 16, one female over 16, and two females under 16.[248] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[249]

---

[239] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,*190. Her marriage record calls her a daughter of Thomas Arnold. Her death record shows she died in her 31st year in 1787.

[240] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[241] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.

[242] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[243] Her marriage record calls her a daughter of Thomas Jenks. Browne, *Genealogy of the Jenks Family of America,* 72.

[244] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12, 61.

[245] Smithfield Probate, 2:214.

[246] Smithfield Deeds, 8:44, 45.

[247] Richard H. Benson, *The Read Family of Salem, Massachusetts* (Boston, 2005), 107–109.

[248] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 102.

[249] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 94.

According to her tombstone in the Union Cemetery of North Smithfield, Hannah died 10 October 1787.[250] "Hannah Arnold, wife of Elijah, died at Smithfield in her 31st year," as reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 20 October 1787.[251]

In 1790, Elijah was in Smithfield heading a household of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and six females.[252]

Both Elijah and his second wife, Dinah, died in November 1817 and are buried in the Union Cemetery of North Smithfield. According to her tombstone, she was born about 1758 and died 17 November 1817. According to his tombstone, he was born about 1752 and died 29 November 1817.[253]

Elijah wrote his will at Smithfield the day after Dinah died, 18 November 1817; it was proved 3 December 1817. He left his sons Stephen and Richard a 20-acre cedar swamp in Smithfield and other land in Smithfield and Mendon. His son Elijah inherited his homestead farm. He also mentioned daughters Joanna, Ruth, Sally, and Mary Buffum. The inventory of his estate was valued at $1,864.[254]

Children of Elijah and Hannah (Arnold) Arnold, presumably born at Smithfield:[255]

i. **Joanna[7] Arnold.**

ii. **Stephen Arnold.**

---

[250] Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project, at *http://www.rootsweb.com/~rigenweb/cemetery*.

[251] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.

[252] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island* (Washington D.C., 1908), 38.

[253] Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project, at *http://www.rootsweb.com/~rigenweb/cemetery*. The dates of death also appear in Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135.

[254] Smithfield Probate, 3:666. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 15 (1992): 78.

[255] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 196.

iii. **Sally Arnold.**[256]

iv. **Polly Arnold** (presumably the daughter Mary Buffum listed in Elijah's will).

v. **Richard Arnold.**

vi. **Ruth Arnold,** born about 1782.[257]

Children of Elijah and Dinah (Jenks) (Read) Arnold, presumably born at Smithfield:[258]

vii. **Dianna[7] Arnold.**

viii. **Julia Ann Arnold,** born about 1791; died 23 October 1817, in her 26th year.[259]

ix. **Thomas Jenckes Arnold,** born about 1795; died 10 August 1817, in his 22nd year.[260]

x. **Elijah Arnold.**

---

[256] Called Sally, daughter of Elijah, when she married Dutee Roberts, as noted in Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 482.

[257] Died 23 March 1838 as Ruth Read, wife of Ahab, in her 56th year, *Mendon Vital Records,* 493. See also Benson, *Read Family*, 261.

[258] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 209.

[259] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135.

[260] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135.

94. **SARAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1756, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold.[261]

She married **JOSEPH CAPRON** of Cumberland, Rhode Island, 22 February 1776 at Smithfield.[262] He was born at Cumberland 15 September 1750, a son of Charles and Mary (Scott) Capron.[263]

Joseph served as a private in the Rhode Island militia during the American Revolution. He was drafted from Cumberland for one month in December 1776 when the British took Newport, and served under Captain Reuben Ballou. His company was divided into three classes, each serving for one month. He served four months in 1777, four months in 1778, and three months in 1779, until the British evacuated the Island of Rhode Island (known as Aquidneck Island today), and the militias were released. He was generally stationed on the shore of Narragansett Bay guarding against enemy attacks.[264]

In 1782, Joseph's household in Cumberland included two males under age 16, three females under age 16, one female age 16–21 [in error?], and one male age 22–49.[265] In 1790, it included two males age 16 or more, five males under age 16, and six females.[266]

Sarah died 7 May 1813.[267] On 10 April 1814 Joseph married second, at Cumberland, Esther (Darling) Arnold, widow of

---

[261] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190. Her marriage record calls her a daughter of Thomas Arnold. Estimated date of birth based on marriage in 1776.

[262] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12, 24.

[263] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 87. His marriage record calls him a son of Charles of Cumberland.

[264] Revolutionary War pension file W638 and BLW #26170–160–55.

[265] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 25.

[266] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 27.

[267] Frederic A. Holden, *Genealogy of the Descendants of Banfield Capron* (Boston, 1859), 67.

Nathan Arnold (son of Nathan and Lucy [Cargill] Arnold, (#114) and daughter of Deacon Samuel Darling.[268]

He applied for a pension 27 May 1834, age 83, residing at Cumberland. On the 1840 pension roll he was residing with Elisha Capron at Cumberland and was age 89. His widow, Esther, (second wife) was living at Smithfield, age 87, when she applied for a pension on 22 March 1853 and a bounty land warrant 2 April 1855. She received a warrant for 160 acres of land. Joseph's son Elisha was age 53 in 1853 and lived in Smithfield.[269]

Joseph died at Cumberland 6 March 1843.[270] His will, written 6 June 1838, was proved 1 May 1843. He mentioned his wife Esther Capron; sons Joseph and Elisha; and daughters Fanny Capron (who was to be supported for life), Sylvia Jullson, Nabby Amidison, Patty Whipple, Sabra Kingman, Ruth Hendrick, and Betsey Arnold.[271]

Children of Joseph and Sarah (Arnold) Capron, recorded at Cumberland:[272]

i. **Asa Capron**, born 14 November, probably 1776.[273]

ii. **Ruth Capron**, born 5 August 1778.

iii. **Nabby Capron**, born 2 June 1780.

iv. **Silvia Capron**, born 7 April 1782.

---

[268] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Marriages, 19.

[269] Revolutionary War pension file W638 and BLW #26170-160-55. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 12: Pension Roll of 1835, 323; Pension Roll of 1840, 379.

[270] Revolutionary War pension file W638 and BLW #26170-160-55.

[271] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1983): 236.

[272] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 88. Arnold had trouble reading the years, but they are shown in Holden, *Descendants of Banfield Capron*, 67.

[273] Died 29 December 1827 "in his 52nd year," (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 320).

v. **Betsey Capron**, born 20 April 1784.

vi. **Otis Capron**, born 2 March 1786.

vii. **Joseph Capron**, born 15 June 1788.

viii. **Thomas Capron**, born 28 April 1790.

ix. **Lucy Capron**, born 9 October 1792.

x. **Patty Capron**, born 16 May 1794.

xi. **Sabra Capron**, born 3 March 1797.

xi. **Elisha Capron**, born 13 July 179[9].[274]

xii. **Fanny Capron**, born 23 May 1806.

---

[274] Revolutionary War pension file W638 and BLW #26170-160-55 says he was age 53 in 1853.

95. **PATIENCE[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1758, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold.[275]

She married **DANIEL BARTLETT**, probably about 1778 when she would have been 20 years old.[276] He was born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 11 April 1756, a son of John and Deborah (Phillips) Bartlett.[277]

Patience died within four years of her marriage, before 22 May 1782, when Daniel Bartlett of Cumberland married Phebe[6] Arnold, daughter of Jacob[5] and Susannah (Ballou) Arnold of Smithfield (#78). Cumberland records show that Daniel and Phebe had eight children born from 1782 through 1797.[278]

Daniel Bartlett was listed in the 1777 military census as living in Cumberland age 16–60, and able to serve.[279] He headed a household in Cumberland in 1790 with two males age 16 or more, four males under age 16, and seven females.[280]

Children of Daniel and Patience (Arnold) Bartlett:[281]

i. **Sally Bartlett.**

ii. **Alpha Bartlett.**

iii. **James Bartlett.**

---

[275] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190. Listed in her father's will.
[276] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190. This marriage is not shown in Thomas Edward Bartlett, *The Bartletts* (New Haven, Conn., 1892), 60.
[277] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 81.
[278] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 82.
[279] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 27.
[280] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 27.
[281] Greene, "Arnold Family," 65.

96. **PHILIP[5] ARNOLD** *(Woodward[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a son of Woodward and Ruth (Wilkinson) Arnold.[282]

He married **PATIENCE INMAN** at Glocester, Rhode Island, 21 September 1762.[283]

Philip Arnold of Smithfield marched on the alarm of August 1757, during the French and Indian War. When Fort William Henry in upstate New York was threatened, one-sixth of the militia of Rhode Island was drafted to go to their relief. Before they got there, however, word came that the fort had fallen and the men returned home.[284]

Philip Arnold of Smithfield, tanner, purchased 28 acres of land in Smithfield on 8 October 1760. On 14 February 1761, Philip sold 36 acres and 14 acres of land in Smithfield.[285]

In the 1781 will of his uncle, Edmund Arnold of Smithfield, Philip received all of Edmund's money and securities and his tanner's stock of hides, leather, and bark. These were to be "deposited with George Comstock to be dealt with and handed to Philip as his needs shall arise."[286]

Philip and Patience had no children.[287]

---

[282] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 191.
[283] *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Glocester Marriages, 7.
[284] Chapin, *Rhode Island in the Colonial Wars*, 10, 29.
[285] Smithfield Deeds, 5:42, 59, 147.
[286] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 193. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 34.
[287] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 191.

97. **NAOMI**[5] **ARNOLD** *(Woodward*[4]*, Richard*[3]*, Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 2 June 1735, a daughter of Woodward and Ruth (Wilkinson) Arnold.[288]

She married **ABRAHAM JOSLIN** at Smithfield 30 March 1758.[289] He was born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 9 February 1736, a son of Thomas and Mary (_____) Joslin.[290]

Naomi and Abraham first lived at Cumberland, where their daughter Thankful was born 11 August 1758.[291] In a list of Cumberland freeman dated 17 August 1762, Abraham Joslin was described as the eldest son of Thomas Joslin, owning "28 acres of good land with a dwelling house thereon standing, 19 acres of which is under improvement."[292]

Naomi, Abraham, and their children Thankful, Esech, and Patience were warned out of Uxbridge, Worcester County, Massachusetts, on 7 February 1764. They were in Smithfield, Rhode Island before April or May 1766, when they moved to Mendon, Massachusetts. On 12 May 1767, the selectmen of Mendon "cautioned Abraham Joslin and his wife Noami [*sic*] and their children Esech, Mary and Thankful" who had come from Smithfield in April or May 1766. These "warnings" were routine announcements that the towns would not support the family if they fell on hard times.[293]

In deeds, Abraham is described as a carpenter and housewright, which would explain why the family moved frequently. Carpenters sometimes moved from community to community to work on different projects and often did not own land.

---

[288] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[289] Arnold. *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 44.
[290] Arnold. *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 109.
[291] Arnold. *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 109.
[292] Jane Fletcher Fiske, "Rhode Island Freemen Admitted 1760–1762," *Rhode Island Roots* 11 (1985): 44.
[293] *Worcester County, Massachusetts, Warnings 1737–1788* (Worcester, Mass., 1899, repr. Camden, Maine, 1992), 79, 41.

Abraham and Naomi continued to live in Mendon. In 1771, "Abram Joslen" was taxed there with a house, 2 acres of pasture, one cow, and eight goats and sheep.[294]

Abraham may have been the Abraham Joslin who enlisted on 23 July 1777 in Worcester County for four days in Rhode Island, as a private in Capt. John Crawford's Company of Col. James Conver's Regiment. The next month, he served five days, beginning August 20, when the company marched to Bennington.[295]

At the time of the 1790 census, Abraham and Naomi's son "Eseek" was living in nearby Douglas, Massachusetts.[296] Abraham Joslin was listed in Mendon in 1800 with a household of one male over age 45, one female age 26–45, and one female age 45 or more.[297]

On 29 May 1797, "Abraham Joslin of Mendon, carpenter" purchased 2 acres of land in Mendon. He sold that land on 11 August 1807 as "Abraham Joslin of Mendon, housewright"; Naomi also signed the deed.[298]

Abraham died after acknowledging the above deed on 13 August 1807 and before 8 May 1812, when "Naomi Joslin, widow," died at Mendon.[299]

---

[294] Bettye Hobbs Pruitt, *The Massachusetts Tax Valuation List of 1771* (Boston, 1978; repr. Camden, Maine, 1998), 330.

[295] *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War* (Boston, 1896–1908), 8:1000.

[296] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts*, 218.

[297] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Mendon, 392.

[298] Worcester County Deeds, 145:497, 168:333.

[299] *Mendon Vital Records*, 477.

Children of Abraham and Naomi (Arnold) Joslin, the first four mentioned in the warnings:

i. **Thankful Joslin**, born 11 August 1758.[300]

ii. **Esech Joslin.**

iii. **Mary Joslin.**

iv. **Patience Joslin.**

v. **Anna Joslin**, possible daughter, born 11 November 1765.[301]

---

[300] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 109.

[301] Edith S. Wessler, *The Jocelyn-Joslin-Joslyn-Josselyn Family* (Tokyo, 1962), 113.

98. **JONATHAN[5] ARNOLD** *(Josiah[4], Richard[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 3 December 1741, a son of Josiah and Amey (Phillips) Arnold.[302]

Jonathan married three times. He married first **MOLLY BURR** at Providence 19 June 1763.[303] She was born at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, 23 November 1743, a daughter of David and Sally (Turner) Burr.[304] Mrs. "Mary" Arnold, wife of Dr. Jonathan died 18 October 1781, in her 37th year.[305]

Jonathan's second wife was **ALICE CRAWFORD.** The marriage notice in the *Providence Gazette* of 23 August 1783 stated that she was a daughter of Gideon Crawford.[306] She was born about 1757. "Alice, wife of Jonathan Arnold Esq." died in Vermont in her 34th year as noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 5 June 1790 and the *United States Chronicle* of 10 June 1790.[307]

Jonathan married, third, **CYNTHIA HASTINGS** of Charlestown, New Hampshire, presumably in December 1790, after their intentions were published on 21 November 1790. She was a daughter of Lemuel Hastings.[308]

---

[302] Obituary in the *Providence Gazette* of 1 February 1793 says Dr. Jonathan Arnold died at St. Johnsbury, Vermont, in his 53rd year. The biography in *Dictionary of American Biography* has the exact date.

[303] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8.

[304] *Rehoboth Vital Records,* 568. Molly's brother Ezekiel also settled at Providence and named his brother-in-law, "Jonathan Arnold of Providence Esq.," co-executor with his wife in his will of 22 March 1777. "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 79.

[305] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.

[306] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 481.

[307] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130, and 15: United States Chronicle Deaths, 471.

[308] Edward T. Fairbanks, *The Town of St Johnsbury, Vt.* (St Johnsbury, Vt., 1914), 59.

When his second wife, Alice., died, Jonathan was left with an infant daughter, Freelove. He was living in St. Johnsbury, Vermont, an isolated settlement of thirty-four families in northeastern Vermont, a few miles west of the Connecticut River. In the fall of 1790, he and a friend, Enos Stevens of nearby Barnet, Vermont, who was also single, traveled about 90 miles down the Connecticut to the town of Charlestown, New Hampshire, an established town on the east side of the river, where they visited the Stevens homestead. With two bachelors in town, a local matchmaker, Mrs. Squire West, is said to have become involved. Two eligible young women were invited to tea, Cynthia Hastings and Sophy Grout, and the two men proposed to the two young women. That winter, Sophy headed to Barnet with Stevens. Cynthia and Jonathan were married in December, reportedly accompanied by much "visiting, dancing and frolicking." Since it was too late in the season to carry household effects through the forest, they mounted their horses with the few things that could be tucked into their saddlebags and in three days were in St. Johnsbury.

In March 1791, Jonathan attended the session of the Vermont General Assembly, where he was one of the twelve councilors. At this session the assembly voted to accept the federal Constitution, which led to Vermont's becoming a state of the union. After the assembly adjourned, the Arnolds went to Charlestown and packed up more household belongings.[309]

Jonathan studied and practiced medicine. In 1774, he headed a household in Smithfield of four males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and four females age 16 or more.[310]

In 1774, he was a charter member of the Providence Grenadiers. He was a member of the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1776 and was author of the act of 4 May 1776, repealing the law providing for the oath of allegiance to England (the Rhode Island

---

[309] Fairbanks, *Town of St Johnsbury*, 59, citing Enos Stevens's diaries and verbal narration to the author by Henry Stevens, son of Enos.
[310] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.

Declaration of Independence). During the American Revolution, he commanded the Independent Company of Grenadiers of Providence, was a surgeon in the army, and directed an army hospital at Providence.[311]

Jonathan placed an advertisement in the *Providence Gazette* of 21 March 1778 for the return of a 10-year-old boy:[312]

> Absconded from my service on Tuesday morning the 17th instant (thro' the instigation of evil minded persons) Relief Thurber, son of the late Samuel Thurber, shipwright, deceased: he is a short thick set boy, about 10 years of age, much pitted with the small-pox, and generally known in this town. Whoever will return him to me, within 20 days from the date hereof, shall be paid two dollars reward. Any person who shall be guilty of secreting him, may depend on being prosecuted by me.

In 1781, the Continental Congress appointed Jonathan to sign new paper money. He was elected a delegate to the Continental Congress in the 1782 general elections and arrived in Philadelphia on 5 October 1782. In an effort to provide a source of funding to repay debt incurred during the war, Congress was attempting to impose a 5 percent duty (impost) on all imports and exports. This issue took much of Jonathan's time, as shown in his regular correspondence with William Green, the governor of Rhode Island. The duty would have to be approved by all states; Rhode Island was the lone holdout against it. Jonathan and other Rhode Islanders opposed giving the federal government the right to collect taxes; they favored having each state collect taxes and remitting funds to Philadelphia. They also believed the duty

---

311 "Virtual American Biographies," *http://famousamericans.net/jonathanarnold* downloaded 6 February 2008. Also obituary in the *Providence Gazette* 9 March 1793, at Early American Newspapers database, *www.newenglandancestors.com.*

312 Maureen Alice Taylor, *Runaways, Deserters, and Notorious Villains from Rhode Island Newspapers, Volume 1: The Providence Gazette, 1762–1800* (Camden, Maine, 2001), 89.

would be a disproportionate burden on Rhode Island, which was primarily a commercial state. [313]

This issue continued to be discussed in 1783, as indicated in a letter Jonathan wrote Governor William Green on 12 February 1783:[314]

> We are at this moment in a committee of the whole, at work on the impost. Nothing is yet completed to inform you of. . . . My health, for the week past has been such, that nothing but the most absolute necessity could have induced me to go out of my quarters; but when matters of such consequence were on the tapis, I should have held myself inexcusable, to have been absent, and the State thereby unrepresented.

On 28 March 1783, he wrote:[315]

> The affair of a general impost, which has engrossed a great deal of time since the commencement of the present year, is yet incomplete. I had flattered myself that the arrival of the intelligence of peace would put a stop to the proceedings, as thereby the formidable plea of necessity would be in a measure superseded, and as it could not be doubted that the states, when eased of the immediate expense of prosecuting the war, and enjoying unmolested the advantages to be derived from agriculture and commerce, would be able to draw out their resources timely and sufficient to answer the necessity and constitutional requisitions of Congress, for the support of the federal government, and for the satisfaction of the creditors of the public. But in this I was mistaken. Ideas of the necessity of forming a general system of finance, which will throw a share of the power and strength of government now held by the states, into the hands of Congress, seems in the minds of some to prevail over every other consideration.

In the general election of May 1783, Jonathan was again elected to Congress, along with three other delegates. Jonathan presented his credentials on 30 June. Only two of the four delegates stayed

---

[313] Staples, *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress*, 67, 360, 377, 392, 387.
[314] Staples, *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress*, 426.
[315] Staples, *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress*, 433.

in Philadelphia at a time, however, so Jonathan returned home.[316] He made good use of his time back in Rhode Island, taking his second wife, Alice, a few weeks later, in August 1783.

While he was in Congress, Jonathan was listed at Providence in the 1782 census with a household of two males under age 16, two females under age 16, two males age 16–21, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[317]

Jonathan spent some time in Vermont and ultimately moved there. A letter of 21 February 1784 updating him on the happenings in Congress noted that he had returned from Vermont.[318] On 1 November 1786, Jonathan and others received a tract of land in what became St. Johnsbury, Vermont. In the spring of 1787, Jonathan cleared a patch of land and erected the first framed house in the township. It was low-posted, 24 by 30 feet square, "of rough boards, unclapboarded and roofed with split shingles." It included a cobblestone fireplace for heating and cooking. Four years later the cobblestones were pulled out and replaced by locally made brick. The main room included six armchairs that had been brought from Rhode Island. In this room was held the first proprietor's meeting of 6 August 1787.[319]

In Vermont, Jonathan was a farmer. He was appointed a member of the Governor's Council and became Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Orange.[320] In 1791 he headed a household in St. Johnsbury of seven males age 16 or more and five females.[321]

---

316 Staples, *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress,* 439, 490.

317 Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6.

318 Staples, *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress*, 478.

319 Fairbanks, *Town of St. Johnsbury*, 78.

320 "Virtual American Biographies," *http://famousamericans.net/jonathanarnold,* downloaded 6 February 2008. Also obituary in the *Providence Gazette* 9 March 1793, at Early American Newspapers database, *www.NewEnglandAncestors.com.*

321 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Vermont*, 33. This census was actually taken in Vermont in 1791.

Dr. Jonathan Arnold died at St. Johnsbury, Vermont, 1 February 1793, in the 53rd year of his life.[322]

He must have been a close friend of the editor of the *Providence Gazette,* who wrote:[323]

> Among the first traits of his character, was a peculiar ability in Penmanship and Excellence in Composition — this Qualification, at an early period in his life, recommended to the office of Clerk of the Superior Court, a place which he filled, as he did every other Office, with singular Ability, Integrity and Applause. He had a rare taste for Music and Poetry, and was himself proficient in both. His Knowledge was practical, and the Objects of it the best interests of Society. The improvements made by him in Mechanics, evince the force of original Genius. His Capacities were general, and variegated as the Arts of human Life, all of which he seemed calculated to advance and improved. . . . He hailed men of all Nations as his Brethren and gloried in the Doctrine of their natural Equality. His social virtues are not to be forgotten. He was an entertaining Companion and a faithful Friend. He had Power to strike the attention, engage the affections and attach the Heart in the Bands of Friendship, to smooth the wrinkled front of Care, and calm the Mind in friendly relaxation.

Children of Jonathan and Molly (Burr) Arnold:[324]

i. **Amy[6] Arnold**, born 6 March 1764; died young.

ii. **Amaziah Arnold**, born 5 February 1766; died young.

iii. **Josiah Lyndon Arnold**, born 22 April 1768.

iv. **William Arnold**, born 24 March 1770.

v. **Polly Burr Arnold**, born 23 September 1772.

---

[322] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[323] Obituary in the *Providence Gazette* 9 March 1793, Early American Newspapers database, *www.newenglandancestors.com.*
[324] James Arnold Papers, William Arnold Greene manuscript, Knight Memorial Library, Providence, R.I., FHL microfilm # 1839088.

vi. **Freelove Arnold**, died young.

vii. **John Arnold**, died young.

viii. **Sally Arnold**, born 22 November 1777.

ix. **Abigail B. Arnold**, born 12 March 1780.

Children of Jonathan and Alice (Crawford) Arnold:

x. **Freelove Arnold**, born 23 March 1786; presumably died young.

xi. **Freelove C. Arnold**, born probably 1790.[325]

Child of Jonathan and Cynthia (Hastings) Arnold:

xi. **Lemuel Hastings Arnold**, born 29 January 1792. Became governor of Rhode Island in 1831 and 1832.[326]

---

[325] Freelove C. Davis, wife of Noah Davis of Haverhill, Grafton County, N.H., identified as daughter of Alice Crawford in Providence Deeds, 43:17. The birth date on the tombstone at Mount Albion Cemetery, Albion, Orleans County, N.Y., is 7 December 1790, but it cannot be right because two obituaries state that her mother died in June 1790. Cemetery information and death record at Mount Algion Cemetery, *www.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nyorlean/mtalbd.htm,* state that she died 21 April 1848, the wife of _____ Barber (first husband) and Noah Davis and daughter of Dr. Arnold. She is not listed in the James Arnold papers unless she is the Freelove born in 1786.

[326] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 197.

99. **SARAH[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 12 January 1717/8, a daughter of William and Hannah (Whipple) Arnold.[327]

She married, as his second wife, **NATHANIEL JILLSON** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 14 March 1741.[328] He was born probably at Attleborough, Massachusetts, about 1705 (based on first marriage in 1728 and age 60 or more in 1777), a son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (_____) Jillson.[329]

Nathaniel married first Ruth Boyce of Mendon, Massachusetts, on 20 April 1728 in the part of Providence that became Smithfield. He and Ruth had four children.[330]

Sarah and Nathaniel lived at Cumberland, Rhode Island. Nathaniel was listed there in 1774 as having a household of three males age 16 or more, four males under age 16, and four females age 16 or more.[331] He was listed as age 60 or more in the 1777 military census.[332]

Nathaniel died 17 April 1782. His will, written at Cumberland on 27 April 1774 when he was "advanced in years," was proved 3 June 1782. He mentioned his wife Sarah Jillson; sons Jonathan Jillson (who received land in Richmond, New Hampshire) Nathan Jillson, Nathaniel Jillson and Luke Jillson; daughters Ruth Arnold, Mary Torry, Hannah Aldrich, Martha Jillson, Rhodia Jillson, and Wait Jillson; granddaughter Zerviah Sayles; and land of Stephen Jillson and of Uriah Jillson.[333]

Sarah Jillson of Cumberland, widow, wrote her will 4 November 1783; it was proved 22 November 1783, just 18 days later. She

---

[327] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 210.
[328] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marraiges, 11.
[329] Jillson, *Gillson and Jillson Family,* 16.
[330] Jillson, *Gillson and Jillson Family,* 5.
[331] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 206.
[332] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 30.
[333] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 2 (1979): 181.

mentioned sons Nathan, Nathaniel, and Luke Jillson; and daughters Hannah Aldrich wife of Joah Aldrich, Martha Aldrich wife of Nathan Aldrich, Rhodia Jillson, and Waite Ballou wife of Duty Ballou.[334]

Children of Nathaniel and Sarah (Arnold) Jillson, born at Cumberland:[335]

i. **Ruth Jillson**, born 11 January 1741/2.

ii. **Hannah Jillson**, born 12 December 1743.

iii. **Nathan Jillson**, born 9 February 1745/6.

iv. **Abner Jillson**, born 13 May 1748; died 31 August 1754.

v. **Nathaniel Jillson**, born 5 October 1749.

vi. **Martha Jillson**, born 19 February 1752.

vii. **Luke Jillson**, born 2 March 1754.

viii. **Rhodia Jillson**, born 24 September 1756.

ix. **Waite Jillson**, born 6 February 1759.

---

[334] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 176.

[335] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 108.

100. **ELISHA[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 14 March 1719/20, a son of William and Hannah (Whipple) Arnold.[336]

He married **PHEBE MOWRY** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 26 April 1744.[337] She was a daughter of Henry Mowry of Smithfield, who named his daughter Phebe Arnold in his will of 17 December 1754.[338]

Elisha was admitted as a freeman in Smithfield on 5 May 1741.[339] He was on a road tax list there in 1748.[340]

In an undated deed acknowledged in 1755 and recorded in 1766, Elisha purchased, for £4,000, all his father's land in Smithfield with his house, barns, and other buildings and all his land in Cumberland with the right he had to a mill in Cumberland.[341]

Elisha was listed in Smithfield in 1774 with a household of two males over age 16, three females over age 16, and one female under age 16.[342] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 50–60, able to serve.[343]

In a 1778 tax list, Elijah's large farm was described as having seven houses, two horses, two oxen, eleven horned cattle, twenty-one sheep and goats, two swine, 40 acres of pasture to keep twelve cows, 2 acres under tillage producing 50 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 9 barrels of cider, 30 acres of mowing land producing seven tons of English hay and twelve tons of fresh hay,

---

336 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 210.
337 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
338 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 334.
339 Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 5:20.
340 Steere, *History of Smithfield,* 30.
341 Smithfield Deeds, 6:115.
342 *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 103.
343 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 91.

and 76 acres of wood and wasteland, with a total of 150 acres and a valuation of £129 of personal estate and £1,175 of real estate.[344]

Elisha Arnold died 17 December 1805. His will, written at Smithfield 30 April 1799, was proved 30 May 1806. He mentioned his sons Rufus (deceased, leaving a widow Ruth Arnold) and Ezekiel Arnold (who received the homestead farm "where I and he now live in Smithfield"), and daughters Mary Arnold, who received a room, and Amey Arnold, deceased, leaving a daughter. He named grandchildren Asa, Israel, and Elisha Arnold, sons of Rufus; Elizabeth Congdon, wife of Jonathan Congdon; Ruth Arnold, wife of Cyrus Arnold; Lucina Mowry, daughter of Amey Arnold, deceased; and "children of my son Ezekiel, Joel, Anna, Abigail, and Lydia Arnold."[345]

The inventory of Elisha's estate, taken 19 June 1806, was valued at $5,143. About $4,500 of that amount comprised notes receivable, including $1,136 due from James Arnold and $593 due from Arnold Paine.[346]

Children of Elisha and Phebe (Mowry) Arnold, recorded at Smithfield:[347]

i. **Rufus[6] Arnold**, born 5 February 1745.

ii. **Amey Arnold**, born 20 May 1751.

iii. **Ezekiel Arnold**, born 23 October 1753.

iv. **Alice Arnold**, born 9 July 1757.

v. **Mary Arnold**, born 1 January 1763.

---

[344] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 20.
[345] Smithfield Probate, 3:225. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 83.
[346] Smithfield Probate, 3:228.
[347] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88–89.

101. **MARTHA[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Providence, Rhode Island, 28 December 1721, a daughter of William and Hannah (Whipple) Arnold.[348]

She married **JOHN SAYLES** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 19 December 1742.[349] He was born 6 January 1722/3 in the part of Providence that is now Smithfield, a son of Thomas and Esther (Scott) Sayles.[350]

A few months after John's marriage, John's father deeded him 100 acres of land for love and affection, "where John dwelleth."[351] He administered his father's will 2 December 1754.[352]

In his obituaries, it was noted that John was one of thirteen male children born at Smithfield and that he was the last survivor. For more than thirty years he took part in public service, particularly at the time of the Revolution. He served on the Committee of Safety and was one of the committee to try General Joseph Spencer for his failure to defeat the British troops in Newport t. He was a soldier on guard before the general's quarters, and upon being notified of Spencer's acquittal, he refused to leave until properly relieved, which was done. He was a representative and senator in the Rhode Island General Assembly.[353]

The minutes of the General Assembly for 27 October 1777 include an order to reimburse John Sayles £36 for the purchase of small

---

348 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 210.

349 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 63.

350 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 243.

351 *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 370.

352 Judith A. Hurst, *Sayles Country* (Baltimore, 1986), 167.

353 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Journal Deaths, 19; 14: Providence Gazette Deaths. 252; 21: Rhode Island American Deaths, 537.

arms and bayonets used by the militia of Smithfield, "drafted for the late expedition against the island of Rhode Island."[354]

There were four men by the name of John Sayles in Smithfield at the same time. John was called John Sayles Jr. in his marriage record and in the record of his children's births. An older John was listed in the 1777 military census as over age 60. John Jr. was listed as age 50–60 and able to serve. John 3rd and John 4th (one of which was John's son) were age 16–50 and able to serve.[355]

In 1778, the farm of John Sayles Jr. included three horses, two oxen, eight horned cattle, nine sheep/goats, six swine, 15 acres of pasture for five cows, 3 acres under tillage producing 36 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 9 barrels of cider, 12 acres of meadow producing 3 tons of English hay and 5 tons of fresh hay, and 36 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 68 acres. His personal estate was valued at £33 and his real estate at £326.[356]

Martha died before 14 April 1788, when her estate was probated.[357]

John outlived most of his children. His son, Esek, of Smithfield provided in his will, dated 20 October 1810, that his father John Sayles be taken care of.[358]

John died at North Providence, Rhode Island, 1 March 1822, "in his 101st year." His remains were carried to Smithfield and buried beside those of his wife.[359]

---

[354] *Rhode Island Colonial Records,* 8:319.
[355] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 91.
[356] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 22 (1996): 126.
[357] Dorothy Higson White, *Descendants of Roger Williams, Book III – The Sayles Line* (East Greenwich, R.I., 2002), 71.
[358] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 90.
[359] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 252.

Children of John and Martha (Arnold) Sayles, born at Smithfield:[360]

i. **Zilpha Sayles**, born 22 March 1742/3.

ii. **Rhoda Sayles**, born 4 July 1745.

iii. **Martha Sayles**, born 18 August 1747.

iv. **Esek Sayles**, born 18 August 1749.

v. **Ishmale Sayles**, born 1 December 1751.

vi. **Thomas Sayles**, born 5 April 1754.

vii. **Hannah Sayles**, born 22 June 1756.

viii. **Esther Sayles**, born 6 August 1758.

ix. **John Sayles**, born 12 December 1760.

x. **5th son**, born 4 July 1763; died 7 July 1763.

---

[360] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 112, 113.

102. **SUSANNAH[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 31 January 1735, a daughter of William and Margaret (Capron) Arnold.[361]

She married **RICHARD MAN** at Smithfield 16 May 1755,[362] a son of Daniel Man.[363] Richard had a brother Daniel Man of Smithfield, who was killed in the Indian Wars. In his will of 8 September 1746, Daniel left his estate to his brothers Richard Man and Anthony Man and his sister Sarah Cruff.[364]

Richard and Susannah lived in Mendon, Massachusetts. Richard's farm in Mendon was taxed in 1771 for two oxen, three cattle, ten goats and sheep, 6 acres of pasture, 1 acre under tillage producing 8 bushels of grain per year, 4 acres of uplands mowing land producing 2 tons of hay per year, and 6 acres of fresh meadow producing 4 tons of fresh meadow hay per year.[365]

Susannah Man was appointed administratrix of Richard's estate in 1774, and his inventory was taken 18 March 1774. It included 150 acres of land (£200), his dwelling house (£23), a bed, twelve plates, a hogshead of cider, farm animals, and tools, for a total appraised value of £321.[366] His real estate was separately appraised for distribution on 7 March 1786, with one-third going to the widow as her dower and two-thirds to the children with a double portion to the eldest son.[367]

On 17 November 1775, Susannah Man of Mendon, widow, Elisha Arnold, John Sayles Jr., and Richard Mowrey, all of Smithfield, and Nathaniel Jillson of Cumberland, Rhode Island, all sold 20 acres of land in Mendon, presumably inherited from their

---

361 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
362 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
363 Mann, *Mann Memorial,* 30. Also *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 129.
364 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 72.
365 Pruitt, *Massachusetts Tax Valuation List of 1771,* 330.
366 Worcester County Probate, 12:538.
367 Worcester County Probate 188:381.

father/father-in-law, William Arnold. They sold five-sixths of a 17-acre parcel of land in Mendon on 17 November 1775.[368]

Susannah died in 1805, and Benedict Man was appointed administrator. Her inventory, dated 25 February 1806, included two beds, a chest, a table, five chairs, a "great wheel," and kitchen utensils. The distribution of the estate included payments for nursing care, for a doctor, for probate fees ,and "for shingling a portion of the roof."[369]

Possible children of Richard and Susanna (Arnold) Mann:

i. **Benedict Man**, administrator of Susannah's estate.

ii. **Richard Man**, involved in litigation with Benedict in 1811.[370]

iii. **Levi Man**, listed next to Benedict and Elijah in 1790 census.

iv. **Elijah Man**, listed next to Benedict and Levi in 1790 census.[371]

---

[368] Worcester County Deeds, 74:526, 75:369.
[369] Worcester County Probate, 35:57, 58.
[370] Worcester County Deeds, 180:434.
[371] Listed as a son in Greene, "Arnold Family," 50.

103. **GIDEON[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 5 June 1738, a son of William and Margaret (Capron) Arnold.[372]

Gideon posted banns at Mendon, Massachusetts, to marry Elizabeth Hunt of Mendon, 9 March 1759. On 13 March 1759, however, Gideon's father forbade the banns.[373] The likely reason for the objection was that Gideon was 20 years old and Elizabeth was just 14, having been born at Mendon 9 June 1744, a daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (_____) Hunt.[374]

Gideon married **MARY CRUFF**, perhaps about 1770.[375] In his will of 6 July 1753, Thomas Cruff of Smithfield named his wife Hannah and their daughter, Mary, under age 18.[376]

On 26 March 1759, a few days after his father forbade his marriage to Elizabeth Hunt, Gideon enlisted from Mendon in Col. Whiting's Regiment under the command of General Jeffrey Amherst for the invasion of Canada.[377] The campaign resulted in the fall of Montreal and the defeat of the French in Canada. Perhaps because he was traveling with the army, Gideon Arnold of Smithfield granted a power of attorney to Richard Man of Cumberland on 7 March 1760.[378]

Gideon was living in Glocester, Rhode Island, at the time of the 1774 Rhode Island Census, with a household of one male over age 16, two males under age 16, and one female above age 16.[379] He was taxed there in 1778 with one house, one horned cattle, one

---

372 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
373 *Mendon Vital Records*, 239.
374 *Mendon Vital Records*, 103
375 Capron, *Descendants of Banfield Capron*, 251. This year of marriage seems reasonable, as there were two children born by 1774.
376 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 30.
377 John G. Metcalf, *Annals of the Town of Mendon from 1659 to 1880* (Providence, 1880), 285.
378 Gideon Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 12.
379 *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 128.

swine, 10 acres of pasture to keep one cow, 2 acres of land under tillage producing 24 bushels of grain, 4 acres of meadow producing 2 tons of English hay, and 4 acres of woodland, for a total of 20 acres, with personal estate valued at £6 and real estate valued at £60.[380] He was probably the Gideon Arnold listed at Smithfield in 1790 as the head of a household of one male above age 16 and one female.[381]

Gideon died before 25 May 1804, when Joel Aldrich, guardian, appeared before the Smithfield Town Council as indicated in an accounting he filed on 30 August 1817. In 1810, he paid William Arnold for keeping Gideon and his wife. In 1817, he paid Arnold Paine for a cow he sold to Thomas Arnold, son of Gideon. His accounting showed securities comprising the estate of $546 and disbursements of $151, leaving a balance of $394.[382]

Children of Gideon and Mary (Cruff) Arnold:[383]

i. **William[6] Arnold**, perhaps born about 1771. (There were two sons in 1774.)

ii. **Jesse Arnold,** perhaps born about 1773. (There were two sons in 1774.)

iii. **Thomas Arnold**, identified as a son of Gideon in the 1810 census.[384]

iv. **Margaret Arnold.**

v. **Hannah Arnold.**

---

380 "Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 47.
381 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 39.
382 Smithfield Probate, 3:678.
383 Capron, *Descendants of Banfield Capron*, 251.
384 U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 179.

104. **HANNAH[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 31 December 1755, a daughter of William and Hannah (Eddy) Arnold.[385]

She married **RICHARD MOWRY** about 1774 (listed as one male and one female in census of that year).[386] He was born at Smithfield 18 April 1748, a son of Ananias and Zerviah (Angell) Mowry.[387] On 4 April 1789, Ananias Mowry of Smithfield, "for natural love and fatherly affection," deeded to his son, Richard Mowry of Smithfield, the 274-acre southerly part of his homestead farm.[388]

In the 1774 census, Richard's household in Smithfield included one male age 16 or more and one female age 16 or more.[389] His household in 1790 included two males age 16 or more, six males under age 16, and three females.[390]

Richard was known as "loud spoken Richard" to distinguish him from "Preacher Richard," who was born in the same year and in the same town. He owned a large estate, which included a sawmill still known in 1909 as "Mowry's Saw Mill." He gave to each of his sons when they arrived at maturity "a good farm, well stocked with a supply of farming tools."[391]

Hannah died 16 May 1790.[392]

---

[385] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[386] William A. Mowry, *The Descendants of John Mowry of Rhode Island* (Providence, 1909), 46.
[387] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 105.
[388] Smithfield Deeds, 8:115.
[389] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 204.
[390] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 39.
[391] Mowry, *Descendants of John Mowry,* 47. These deeds, dated from 1808 to 1818, are at Smithfield Deeds, 11:439; 12:532, 533, 534, 595, 596; 15:142, 143.
[392] Mowry, *Descendants of John Mowry,* 47.

Richard died 31 March 1825.[393] His will, written at Smithfield 8 June 1815, was proved 16 April 1825. He named his five sons, William, Darius, Arnold, Welcome, and Angell; his two daughters, Uraniah and Candace; and his brothers Philip and David.[394]

Children of Richard and Hannah (Arnold) Mowry, born at Smithfield:[395]

i. **William Mowry**, born 23 August 1777.

ii. **Urania Mowry**, born 8 April 1779.

iii. **Candace Mowry**, born 2 December 1780.

iv. **Darius Mowry**, born 29 January 1782.

v. **Arnold Mowry**, born 18 March 1784.

vi. **Welcome Mowry**, born 4 July 1784.

vii. **Richard Mowry**, born 31 October 1787.

viii. **Angell Mowry**, born 20 August 1788.

---

[393] Mowry, *Descendants of John Mowry*, 47.
[394] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 211.
[395] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 107.

105. **MOSES[5] ARNOLD** *(John[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born say 1718, a son of John and Martha (Jenks) Arnold.[396]

He married **BERTHA** or **BETHIA MAN** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 7 July 1737.[397] She was a daughter of Daniel and _____ (_____) Man of Glocester and Smithfield, Rhode Island.[398]

Moses was about 9 years old when his father died in 1727; his mother remarried four years later. The year after Moses was married, on 26 September 1738, his grandfather, John Arnold, "for love and goodwill," deeded him land with a dwelling house in Smithfield, "being the same house and land where my son John Arnold, deceased, lately dwelt." Moses purchased another parcel of land from his grandfather on 6 November 1740.[399] He was admitted as a freeman in Smithfield in May 1739.[400]

Moses purchased 60 acres of land in Cumberland, Rhode Island, on 1 November 1745. He sold that land 1 February 1747.[401] He sold 130 acres of land in Smithfield on 22 May 1748.[402] On 26 May 1749, Moses purchased a farm from his uncle, William Arnold, in Cumberland,[403] on which he lived until his death.[404] He became a freeman at Cumberland in 1750.[405] He was at Cumberland in 1774 with a household of one male over age 16 and one female over age 16.[406] In the 1777 Rhode Island military census, he was listed at

---

396 Mentioned as a son in his mother's will of 22 May 1749. "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 329. His parents were married in 1717, and he may have been the eldest child.

397 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 10.

398 Mann, *Mann Memorial*, 30.

399 Smithfield Deeds, 1:422, 2:1.

400 *Rhode Island Colonial Records*, 4:555.

401 Cumberland Deeds, 1:114.

402 Smithfield Deeds, 2:625.

403 Cumberland Deeds, 1:315.

404 Bayles, *History of Providence County, Rhode Island*, 2:270.

405 MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen*, 12.

406 *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 203,

Cumberland, over age 60.[407] By 1782, Moses's household in Cumberland included just one male and one female.[408] He was not found there at the time of the 1790 census.

Moses took his own life by cutting his throat. His younger brother, David, also took his own life.[409]

Children of Moses and Bertha (Man) Arnold:[410]

i. **John[6] Arnold.**[411]

ii. **Daniel Arnold.**

iii. **Joseph Arnold.**

iv. **Mary Arnold.**

v. **Sarah Arnold.**

vi. **David Arnold.**

vii. **Martha Arnold.**

viii. **Susanna Arnold.**

ix. **Dorcas Arnold**, lived with **Uriah Arnold (#108).**

x. **Provided Arnold.**

---

[407] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 27.

[408] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6. Presumably the list is in error to call them age 22–49.

[409] Greene, "Arnold Family," 51.

[410] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 199.

[411] Described as the eldest son of Moses Arnold owning 42 acres of land with a dwelling house in a list of Cumberland freemen dated 17 August 1762. Fiske, "Rhode Island Freemen Admitted 1760–1762," *Rhode Island Roots* 11 (1985): 44.

106. **DAVID[5] ARNOLD** *(John[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born say 1720, a son of John and Martha (Jenks) Arnold.[412]

He married **MERCY "MARY"** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 9 February 1745.[413] She may have been the Mercy Whipple born at Smithfield 15 March 1721, a daughter of William and Elizabeth (_____) Whipple.[414]

David was admitted as a freeman in Smithfield on 1 May 1750.[415] He purchased land there 29 April 1752 and 19 May 1752. He and Mercy sold that land 8 September 1753.[416]

David was of Glocester, Rhode Island, when he purchased a 45-acre farm there 11 March 1757. He purchased a one-quarter interest in a sawmill on the Chepachet River in Glocester on 26 April 1757. He and his wife "Mary" sold the 45-acre farm on 5 October 1757.[417]

In August 1757, David marched from Glocester on an alarm during the French and Indian War. One-sixth of the militia of the colony was mobilized for the relief of Fort William Henry, but the fort fell before the troops could reach it.[418]

---

[412] Mentioned as a son in his mother's will of 22 May 1749. "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 329. His parents were married in 1717, and he probably was the second child.

[413] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.

[414] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 120.

[415] Records of the Colony and State of Rhode Island, CD produced by the New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2003, Supplement 1747–1754.

[416] Smithfield Deeds, 3:209, 233, 334.

[417] Glocester Deeds, 6:218, 200, 212.

[418] Chapin, *Rhode Island in the Colonial Wars*, 10, 28.

David entered into real estate transactions in Glocester on 19 April 1763, 7 April 1765, 24 May 1766, 12 July 1768 (four transactions), 10 June 1776, 5 April 1780, and 16 April 1780.[419]

In 1774, he headed a household of six in Glocester , with three males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, one female over age 16, and one female under age 16.[420] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 50–60 and able to serve.[421] He was living by himself at Glocester at the time of the 1782 census.[422]

On 31 March 1777, David Arnold of Glocester sold his son David his 60-acre farm and buildings in Glocester.[423] The farm is described in a 1778 Glocester tax record for David Arnold and David Arnold Jr. It included four houses, a portion of a mill, one horse, five horned cattle, three swine, 6 acres of pasture to keep two cows, 4 acres under tillage producing 52 bushels of grain, 8 acres of meadow producing 6 tons of English hay, and 32 acres of woodland, for a total of 50 acres.[424] On 4 May 1779, David Arnold Jr. purchased one-half acre of land, which was described as "a little northeast from the house where the said David's father now dwells."[425]

David Arnold died at Glocester 1 February 1786, a suicide by hanging, without leaving a will. His son David was appointed administrator of his estate 27 May 1786.[426] David's brother Moses also took his own life.[427]

---

[419] Glocester Deeds, 7:243, 453, 517; 8:154, 156, 158, 160; 9:378, 526 (two deeds).
[420] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 128.
[421] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 38.
[422] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.
[423] Glocester Deeds, 9:381.
[424] "Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 49.
[425] Glocester Deeds, 9:512.
[426] Glocester Probate, 2:87.
[427] Greene, "Arnold Family," 51.

Children of David and Mercy (Whipple) Arnold:[428]

i. **Elisha[6] Arnold**, born 1754.[429]

ii. **Stephen Arnold**, born after 1756 (under age 21 in 1777).[430]

iii. **David Arnold.**[431]

iv. **Eleazer Arnold.**

v. **Daniel Arnold.**[432]

vi. **Abigail Arnold.**

vii. **Martha Arnold.**

---

[428] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 200.

[429] William Brown Collection, film #4 at the New England Historic Genealogical Society.

[430] Called son of David Arnold, under age 21 in Glocester Deeds, 9:467, on 18 September 1777.

[431] Called a son in Glocester Deeds, 9:381, and Glocester Probate, 2:87.

[432] When Daniel Arnold of Glocester purchased land in Glocester on 24 October 1768, it was described as next to land Richard Steere sold to "said Daniel's father" (Glocester Deeds, 8:174.) Richard Steere sold land to David on 12 July 1768 (Glocester Deeds, 8:160.)

107. **NOAH[5] ARNOLD** *(John[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born about 1722, a son of John and Martha (Jenks) Arnold.[433]

He was "of Glocester, Rhode Island," when he married **ELLEN or ELENOR WHIPPLE** of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, 18 December 1743.[434] They had declared intentions at Uxbridge 1 December 1743.[435]

Just a few weeks before his wedding, Noah purchased 70 acres of land in Glocester on 7 October 1743.[436] He was admitted as a freeman in Glocester in 1744.[437]

Noah was ensign of the Glocester second militia company in 1757 and 1758 and was the captain in 1759, 1760, and 1761.[438] As indicated below, he wrote his will 16 August 1757, "being lotted to go into public service." That meant he had been drafted to serve in the French and Indian War.

On 17 December 1759, Noah and seven others entered into an agreement to build a dam and sawmill in Glocester on "Nipmogue Brook," possibly the Nipmuch River, on the southwestern part of Isaac Richardson's homestead farm.[439] On 5 June 1761, he purchased Isaac Richardson's one-eighth interest.[440] On 1 April 1762, Noah sold a one-sixteenth interest in the dam and sawmill.[441] On 20 November 1762, Noah purchased two parcels of land in Glocester from Joseph and Isaac Richardson for

---

[433] Mentioned as a son in his mother's will of 22 May 1749. "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 329. His parents were married in 1717, and he may have been the third child.

[434] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Glocester Marriages, 6.

[435] *Uxbridge Vital Records*, 336.

[436] Glocester Deeds, 2:40.

[437] Perry, *Brief History of the Town of Glocester*, 75.

[438] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island*, 192, 201, 209, 217, 225.

[439] Glocester Deeds, 7:148.

[440] Glocester Deeds, 7:152.

[441] Glocester Deeds, 7:10, 72.

a total of £2,800.[442] One of those parcels — containing 50 acres, a dwelling house, and farm — was deeded to Noah's son, Aaron, on 16 November 1770.[443] Noah purchased 100 acres of land in Glocester on 5 October 1764 and deeded them to his son, Noah Arnold Jr., on 16 November 1770.[444]

Noah appeared in Glocester in the 1774 Rhode Island census with a household of one male over age 16, one female over age 16, and one female under age 16.[445] Although he was probably over age 50, in the 1777 military census he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve. (His son Noah Jr. was listed separately.)[446]

In 1778, Noah's farm in Glocester was taxed on five houses, one horse, two oxen, fourteen horned cattle, nine sheep and goats, four swine, 25 acres of pasture, 8 acres under tillage producing 120 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 12 barrels of cider, 25 acres of meadow producing 18 tons of English hay, and 63 acres of wood land, totaling 120 acres. His personal estate was valued at £84 and his real estate at £620.[447]

In 1782, he was in Glocester with one male and one female over age 50 in his household.[448] In 1790, his household included two males age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and three females.[449] He was listed at Glocester in the 1800 census as one male age 45 or more, the only person in the household. His son Noah Arnold, Jr. was listed nearby, age 45 or more.[450]

---

[442] Glocester Deeds, 7:260, 265.
[443] Glocester Deeds, 8:317.
[444] Glocester Deeds, 7:424, 8:363.
[445] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 128.
[446] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 44.
[447] "Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 50.
[448] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6.
[449] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 30.
[450] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.

On 8 September 1787, when Noah was about 65 years old, his cousin, Benedict Arnold of Glocester, was appointed guardian of Noah's estate.[451]

Noah wrote his will as "Noah Arnold of Glocester, yeoman," on 16 August 1757, "being lotted to go into public service." However, the will was not proved until 4 October 1800. In it he mentioned his wife "Elenor," sons Aaron Arnold and Noah Arnold, both under age 21, and daughter Sarah Arnold.[452]

Children of Noah and Ellen (Whipple) Arnold:[453]

i. **Noah[6] Arnold**, born probably about 1744.

ii. **Aaron Arnold**, not listed in Woonsocket history.

iii. **Ann Arnold**, not mentioned in father's will.

iii. **Sarah Arnold.**

---

[451] Glocester Probate, 2:80.

[452] Glocester Probate, 3:50; also "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 105.

[453] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 200. All except Ann mentioned in their father's 1757 will.

108. **URIAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Daniel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 9 April 1721 at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a son of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold.[454]

He married **ELIZABETH (PECK) SMITH** at Providence, Rhode Island, 19 August 1754.[455] Elizabeth was born at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, 6 August 1726, a daughter of Nathan and Patience (Carpenter) Peck.[456] Elizabeth Peck of Rehoboth married Charles Smith of Providence, at Rehoboth, 16 March 1751/2.[457] (Charles died soon after his marriage; Charles Philip Smith, "son of Charles, deceased, and Elizabeth" was born at Providence 1 December 1752.[458]) The burial of Elizabeth Arnold, wife of Uriah, is recorded on 23 June 1762 in the records of King's Church, now St. John's, of Providence.[459]

After Elizabeth died, Uriah is said to have lived with and had children with a cousin, **DORCAS ARNOLD,** at least as early as 1777**.** Dorcas was a daughter of Moses and Bertha (Man) Arnold (#105).[460]

Uriah was listed as a freeman in Smithfield in 1748. He was also listed as a freeman in Providence in 1750.[461]

In 1752, Uriah was employed by Obadiah Brown. That year Brown set up a distillery to process molasses he imported from the West Indies into rum. He sought out another distiller, David Harris, for "learning Uriah Arnold to Distil."[462] "Uriah Arnold of

---

[454] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[455] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8.
[456] *Rehoboth Vital Record,* 705.
[457] *Rehoboth Vital Record,* 485.
[458] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 245.
[459] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 10: King's Church Burials, 147.
[460] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 200, 199.
[461] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen,* 12.
[462] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold,* 30.

Providence, distiller," was a party to litigation in June 1758, June 1759, and December 1759.[463]

Uriah was a soldier in the "Old French War," according to an account of his death in the *Providence Phenix*.[464]

Uriah was listed in Smithfield in 1774 with a household of two males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and three females age 16 or more.[465] In the 1777 military census, he was listed in Smithfield as age 50–60 and able to serve.[466]

In 1778, Uriah and his 80-year-old mother were taxed in Smithfield on a farm with seven buildings, 24 ounces of silver plate, one horse, two oxen, seventeen horned cattle, seventeen sheep and goats, six swine, 36 acres of pasture to keep ten cows, 10 acres under tillage producing 150 bushels of grain, 3 acres of orchard producing 15 barrels of cider, 34 acres of mowing land producing 13 tons of English hay and 12 tons of fresh hay, and 76 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 120 acres valued at £800.[467]

Uriah sold one parcel of land in Cumberland and two parcels of land in Smithfield to his son Daniel on 1 10th month [October] 1784.[468]

Uriah died at Smithfield 11 March 1817, in his 96th year.[469]

---

[463] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 4:210, 280, 399.

[464] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 235.

[465] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.

[466] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.

[467] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 20.

[468] Cumberland Deeds, 6:427; Smithfield Deeds, 7:515.

[469] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135.

Children of Uriah and Elizabeth (Peck) (Smith) Arnold, recorded at Providence:[470]

i. **Elizabeth[6] Arnold**, born 20 April 1756.

ii. **Daniel Arnold**, 24 November 1758.

Children of Uriah Arnold and Dorcas Arnold:

iii. **Fatima Arnold**, born about 1778; died 9 September 1816, in 38th year).[471]

iv. **Clarissa Arnold.**[472]

---

[470] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 210.

[471] Death notice identified as daughter of Uriah Arnold (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 135).

[472] Identified as a daughter of Uriah Arnold in her 1806 marriage record to Henry Comstock (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 27).

109. **ENOCH[5] ARNOLD** *(Daniel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 31 March 1725, a son of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold.[473]

He married **DEBORAH COMSTOCK** at Smithfield 23 June 1747.[474] She was a daughter of David and Deborah (Brown) Comstock of Smithfield.[475] In his will of 16 July 1771, David mentioned his daughter Deborah Arnold.[476]

Enoch and Deborah lived in Cumberland, Rhode Island, where the births of their children were recorded.

Enoch died in Cumberland before 9 November 1756, when an inventory of his estate was completed and reported by his wife, Deborah. An accounting in 1761 showed food consumed by the family, payments of debts and clothing, boarding, and schooling of Enoch's daughter Amey Arnold.[477]

By 9 November 1761, Deborah had married, second, Amos Arnold, cordwainer (shoemaker) of Cumberland.[478]

Children of Enoch and Deborah (Comstock) Arnold, births recorded at Cumberland, Rhode Island:[479]

i. **Joseph[6] Arnold**, born 27 December 1751.

ii. **Benjamin Arnold**.[480]

---

473 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
474 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
475 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 35.
476 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 303.
477 Cumberland Probate, 5:211.
478 Cumberland Probate, 5:211.
479 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.
480 Not in the published Cumberland records; listed in Comstock's *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 35.

iii. **Amey Arnold**, born 7 May 1757.

iv. **Mary Arnold.**[481]

---

[481] Mentioned in 1770 will of her grandfather, Daniel Arnold (Smithfield Probate, 2 [1769 book]:58).

110. **MARY[5] ARNOLD** *(Daniel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 23 August 1728, a daughter of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold.[482]

She married **HAZEDIAH COMSTOCK JR.** at Smithfield 20 April 1746.[483] He was born 9 June 1715, a son of Hazediah and Catherine (Pray) Comstock.[484]

Both Hazediah Comstock Jr. and his father were listed as freemen in Smithfield in 1754.[485] In 1774, Hazediah headed a household in Smithfield of one male over age 16, one male under age 16, one female over age 16, and one male under age 16.[486] He was listed as age 60 or more in the 1777 military census.[487]

In 1778, he was taxed in Smithfield on a farm that included four houses, money and trading stock, one horse, seven horned cattle, five sheep/goats, two swine, 20 acres of pasture to keep six cows, 4 acres under tillage producing 48 bushels of grain, 18 acres of mowing land producing 3 tons of English hay and 7 tons of fresh hay, and 18 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 60 acres, with a value of £51 for his personal estate and £300 for his real estate.[488]

Hazediah died at Smithfield 11 April 1801. His will, written 12 November 1792, was proved 25 May 1801. He mentioned his wife Mary; son Stephen; and Stephen's two sons, Aricoh and Arnold Comstock.[489]

Mary Comstock of Smithfield, widow of Hazediah, wrote her will 7 October 1819; it was proved 26 May 1821. She mentioned her

---

[482] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[483] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
[484] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 16.
[485] MacGunnigle, *Rhode Island Freemen,* 20.
[486] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 105.
[487] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 90.
[488] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 92.
[489] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 136.

son Stephen; grandson Nathan and his wife; grandson Stephen Comstock and Joanna his wife; granddaughter Hannah Ballou; grandsons Nathan, Asel, and George; grandson Avioch and his wife Joanna; and Avioch's son William.[490]

Children of Hazediah and Mary (Arnold) Comstock, recorded at Smithfield:[491]

i. **Stephen Comstock**, born 13 August 1758.

ii. **Caleb Comstock**, born 28 July 1763; died at age 21.[492]

---

[490] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1985): 208.

[491] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 95.

[492] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 16.

111. **DORCAS[5] ARNOLD** *(Daniel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island 18 May 1732, a daughter of Daniel and Bathsheba (Ballou) Arnold.[493]

She married **JAMES CARGILL** at Smithfield 7 December 1752.[494] He was born at Kingston, Rhode Island, 27 February 1729, a son of James and Phebe (Smith) Cargill.[495] Dorcas's uncle, Seth Arnold (#34), had married James's sister Mary in 1750.

James served on the Cumberland, Rhode Island, Town Council in 1763, 1764, 1766, 1772, and 1776. He lived just north of what is now the junction of Abbott Run Valley Road and Bear Hill Road and operated a public house there.[496]

In 1774, James headed a household of two males age 16 or more, five males under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[497] In the 1777 military census, James was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[498] In 1790, his household included seven males age 16 or more, four males under age 16, and three females.[499]

James died 21 November 1804 "in his 75th year," according to his tombstone at Cumberland, Rhode Island.[500] A newspaper notice of his death said he died at Attleborough, Massachusetts, in his 73rd year.[501]

---

493 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
494 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
495 Ballou, *Ballous in America*, 109.
496 Judith Jencks Ray, *Founders and Patriots of the Town of Cumberland, Rhode Island* (Baltimore, 1990), 18.
497 *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 205.
498 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 28.
499 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census:Rhode Island*, 28.
500 "Cumberland Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 17 (1993): 151.
501 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 247.

Dorcas died 25 September 1825, "in her 91st year," according to her tombstone at Cumberland.[502]

Children of James and Dorcas (Arnold) Cargill, recorded at Cumberland:[503]

i. **Rhoda Cargill**, born 16 June 1759.

ii. **James Cargill**, born 22 April 1762.

iii. **David Cargill**, born 2 May 1765.

iv. **Nathan Cargill**, born 16 March 1768.

v. **John Cargill**, born 27 January 1771.

vi. **Daniel Cargill**, born 17 September 1773.

vii. **George Cargill**, born 1776; died young.

viii. **George Cargill**, born 28 May 1777.

---

[502] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 247.

[503] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 88. For the last three, Ballou, *Ballous in America,* 109.

112. **DAVID[5] ARNOLD** *(Anthony[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 27 May 1733, a son of Anthony and Sarah (Fish) Arnold.[504]

He married **HANNAH** _____ presumably at Dutchess County, New York, about 1757 (based on the birth date of their first child).[505] Although their first children were recorded in the records of the Society of Friends, their marriage was not. On 16 4th month [April] 1761, the Quaker records note that David Arnold was reported to have married out of the meeting, and his acknowledgment was accepted.[506]

David moved to New Milford, Connecticut, in 1739 as a young boy with his parents in 1739. His father sold him property in New Milford in 1751, when he was 18 years old, and was then living in Crum Elbow Precinct, Dutchess County, New York, just across the border from New Milford. On 8 December 1755, "David Arnold of Crum Elbow" purchased back 32 acres of his father's original New Milford property.[507] He was still living at Crum Elbow on 16 June 1761 when he sold the 32 acres.[508] On 12 February 1762, he purchased 80 acres his father had previously owned on both sides of Rocky River with a dwelling house, corn mill, orchard, and fulling mill.[509]

David and his parents were members of the Society of Friends. He was fined £2, 4s. in 1759 for not training with the militia. David, but not his wife, was on the Nine Partners Society of Friends Monthly Meeting list of 1761.[510]

---

504 Cutler Reynolds, *Hudson-Mohawk Genealogical and Family Memoirs* (New York, 1911), 1:128.

505 Hannah was named in the records of the Oblong Monthly Meeting, Dutchess County Quaker Records, FHL microfilm #873511, item 1.

506 Oblong Monthly Meeting, Dutchess County Quaker Records, FHL microfilm #873511, item 1.

507 New Milford Deeds, 4:178.

508 New Milford Deeds, 9:605.

509 New Milford Deeds, 9:636.

510 Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent,* 2:223.

He was taxed at Nine Partners, Dutchess County, from June 1758 through February 1762 and 1773–1779.[511]

David brought charges against a John Shearman in the Court of Common Pleas in May 1760 for nonpayment of £20 dating from 1 December 1757.[512] In December 1762, David Arnold, clothier, of Crum Elbow Precinct, Dutchess County, New York, brought charges against John Shearman Jr. of Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in the Providence County Court of Common Pleas.[513] On 17 August 1772, David Arnold of Charlotte Precinct acknowledged that he was "indebted to the King," that is, the government, for £20.[514]

"David Arnold's bridge" was mentioned in Crum Elbow Precinct in 1768, 1775, 1776, and 1784.[515]

During the American Revolution, about half the people in the Hudson River Valley remained Loyalists. David was apparently one of them. David Arnold of Charlotte Precinct was indicted for assaulting Jedediah Allen on 31 May 1779. On 10 November 1780, his son George Arnold, who would have been just 17, was indicted for assaulting Peter Welch with guns and fixed bayonets. His mother Hannah and Benjamin Worden were indicted for encouraging him. David and Hannah were indicted for assaulting Francis Nelson, then a constable of Charlotte Precinct, on 31 March 1781.[516]

A commission was established in Dutchess County "for Inquiry into Detecting and Defeating all Conspiracy," essentially to prosecute Loyalists. On 8 May 1781, David Arnold and Benjamin

---

[511] Buck, *Dutchess County Tax Lists, 1718–1787*, 65.

[512] Dutchess County Ancient Documents, #3878, 3890.

[513] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 4:563.

[514] Dutchess County Ancient Documents, #7775.

[515] Roosevelt, *Records of Crum Elbow Precinct*, 7:70, 84, 88, 105.

[516] Dutchess County Ancient Documents, #9835, 9919, 9970, 10012, 10243, 10255, FHL microfilm #925820, 925821, 925805.

Worden were fined £500 each by the commission, to be paid if they were not "on their good behavior towards the people of the State during the War or if they failed to appear before the Commission at any time within six days after notice in writing shall be left at their dwelling houses."[517]

David and Hannah Arnold of Charlotte Precinct, Dutchess County, sold 50 acres of land on Wappinger Creek to Robert Irwin, merchant, on 8 December 1785 for £1,300. This land was bounded on the north by other land owned by David and land sold by David to Samuel Upton.[518] On 1 April 1786, David Arnold sold 90 acres of land to George Arnold (presumably his son) for £300. This deed was witnessed by Jonathan Arnold (presumably also his son).[519]

Perhaps he was the David Arnold of Clinton Precinct, Dutchess County, who had his real and personal estate sold on Monday, 7 August 1786, per notice of Herman Hoffman, Dutchess County sheriff.[520]

He was probably the David Arnold of Hillsdale, Columbia County, New York, who headed a household of three males under age 16, three males age 16 or more, and three females in 1790.[521] David's sister Sarah lived in Hillsdale. Hannah Arnold, "wife of David," died 16 February 1826, age 83, and is buried in the Methodist Episcopal Church Cemetery of North Hillsdale.[522] David is said to have died at Crum Elbow in 1822.[523]

---

517 Dutchess County Ancient Documents, #10186, FHL microfilm #925821.

518 Dutchess County Deeds, 9:345. Also Buck and McDermott, *Eighteenth Century Documents of the Nine Partners Patent*, 10:228.

519 Dutchess County Deeds, 10:125, and Dutchess County Deeds, 10:231.

520 Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent*, 2:223.

521 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: New York*, 64.

522 Cemeteries in Columbia County, New York, *www.usgennet.org/usa/ny/county/columbia/cems/meth_epis_cem__hills_pg1.htm.*

523 Reynolds, *Hudson-Mohawk Memoirs*, 1:128.

Likely children of David and Hannah (_____) Arnold:[524]

i. **Mary[6] Arnold**, born 24 5th month [May] 1758.

ii. **Phebe Arnold**, born 31 5th month [May] 1760.

iii. **George Arnold**, born 9 8th month [August] 1763.

iv. **Anthony Arnold**, born 1766.

v. David Arnold, born about 1770.

vi. **Jonathan Arnold**, born 1 March 1771.[525]

---

[524] The first three are recorded in the records of the Oblong Monthly Meeting, Dutchess County Quaker Records, FHL microfilm #873511, item 1. The births of Anthony and David are from Chuck Arnold's RootsWeb website without documentation. Reynolds, *Hudson-Mohawk Memoirs*, 1:128, claims there were four sons and three daughters.

[525] Birth date from Reynolds, *Hudson-Mohawk Memoirs*, 1:128.

113. **SARAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Anthony[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Dutchess County, New York, 24 4th month [June] 1742, a daughter of Anthony and Sarah (Fish) Arnold.[526]

Sarah married **JOHN COLLIN**, presumably at Dutchess County, 16 September 1758.[527] He was born at Milford, Connecticut, 15 July 1732, a son of John and Hannah (Merwin) Collin.[528]

"Sarah Collins" was listed in the list of Quakers at Nine Partners in 1761 along with her parents and her brother David.[529]

John received a captain's commission from Governor William Tryon, the British colonial governor, in 1773 and in 1777 from George Clinton, bovernor of New York.[530]

On 9 December 1789, John Collins of Hillsdale, Columbia County, New York, gentleman, purchased 160 acres of land in Hillsdale. On 28 May 1791, he purchased a 65-acre farm in Hillsdale. On 14 June 1791, John Collins of Hillsdale, farmer, purchased 33 acres of land in Hillsdale. On 19 September 1791, he purchased a farm in Hillsdale on the north side of Angelica Brook, where it empties into the Saw Mill Brook.[531]

Sarah died at Hillsdale 29 December 1791.[532]

John Collin married, second, Diadama Morse Davidson 13 May 1792.[533]

---

526 "Hillsdale Rural Cemetery," *The Columbia* 3 (1987): 43. Also Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent,* 3:566.
527 "Hillsdale Rural Cemetery," *The Columbia,* 3 (1987): 43.
528 "Hillsdale Rural Cemetery," *The Columbia,* 3 (1987): 43.
529 Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent,* 1:114.
530 John Francis Collin, *History of Hillsdale, Columbia County, New York* (Philmont, N.Y., 1883), appendix, 5, 7.
531 Columbia County Deeds, B1:76, B1:79, B1:74, B1:64.
532 "Hillsdale Rural Cemetery," *The Columbia* 3 (1987): 43.
533 Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent,* 3:566.

On 25 June 1793, John purchased a farm in the town of Claverak, now the town of Hillsdale, subject to a lease to Phillip Frayer. On the same day he purchased another 29 acres of land in Hillsdale.[534]

On 12 September 1804, the Court of Chancery ruled that certain mortgaged properties be sold, from a complaint by John Collin of Hillsdale, gentleman. These were sold 1 March 1805 for $3,770.[535]

On 18 May 1808, John Collin of Hillsdale and Diadama his wife sold a 156-acre farm in Hillsdale to John's daughter, Hannah Truesdale, for $5,000.[536]

John died at Hillsdale 21 August 1809. His will, written at Hillsdale 8 August 1809, was proved 25 August 1809. He mentioned his wife Diadama; son John; grandchildren Arnold G. Bebee and Henry Truesdale; Sarah Taylor; "children of my grandson John Truesdale"; and daughter Hannah Truesdale. Executors were son John Collin, nephew David Collin, and grandson Henry Truesdale.[537]

Children of John and Sarah (Arnold) Collin, born at Dutchess County:[538]

i. **Anthony Collin**, born 24 February 1760.

ii. **Hannah Collin**, born 7 June 1763.

iii. **John Collin**, born 19 September 1772.

---

[534] Columbia County Deeds, B1:68, B1:72.
[535] Columbia County Deeds, B1:349.
[536] Columbia County Deeds, C:136.
[537] Gertrude A. Barber, *Columbia County, New York, Abstracts of Wills 1786–1828* (typescript at Family History Library), 2:20; also Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent*, 2:20.
[538] Collin, *History of Hillsdale*, appendix, 5, 7.

114. **NATHAN[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 18 October 1733, a son of Seth and Hannah (Aldrich) Arnold.[539]

He married **LUCY CARGILL,** probably about 1759, as their first child was born in 1760.[540] Lucy was born about 1732, figuring from the age of death on her gravestone. She was a daughter of James and Phebe (Smith) Cargill. Her older sister, Mary, married Nathan's father, Seth Arnold (#34), as his second wife in 1750.[541]

On 27 April 1757, Nathan's father, Seth, deeded him 50 acres of land in Cumberland, Rhode Island, "part of the farm where said Nathan now dwells."[542] Nathan purchased other parcels of land in 1763, 1768, 1775, 1776, and 1777.[543]

Nathan was ensign of the Second Cumberland militia company in August 1763 and a captain in May 1768.[544]

"Captain Nathan Arnold" died 11 September 1778,[545] of wounds received at the Battle of Rhode Island.[546] The battle took place on 29 August 1778, when units of the Continental Army unsuccessfully tried to recapture Aquidneck Island (also known as Rhode Island), on which the city of Newport t is located. Nathan's will, written at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 2 September 1778, was proved 26 June 1779. He mentioned his wife Lucy Arnold and sons Samuel "who will be 21 in 1781" and Nathan, under 21. The will provided that Samuel and Nathan be brought up and educated, and that they should receive his two guns, with

---

539 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
540 Identifed as Lucy Cargill, wife of Captain Nathan Arnold, on her gravestone at "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 176.
541 "The Cargill Family of Mendon," *Boston Evening Transcript,* 16 October 1918, #1926.
542 Cumberland Deeds, 3:93.
543 Cumberland Deeds, 3:519, 521, 522; 4:43; 5:323, 365, 419.
544 Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island,* 244, 259.
545 "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 176.
546 Henry B. Metcalf, "Olney Arnold," *Register* 55 (1901): 189.

Samuel receiving the longer one. The inventory included a blue coat, velvet jacket and breeches, other clothing, a bear skin, a beaver hat, a felt hat, furniture, kitchen utensils, cider, salt pork, 80 bushels of corn, 24 tons of hay, a sword, a yoke of oxen, and other farm animals and farm tools.[547]

Lucy died 17 December 1813, aged 81 years, and is buried at Woonsocket.[548]

In 1855, Nathan and Lucy's grandson, Dr. Seth Arnold, erected a marker at their cemetery, which reads: "Nathan Arnold Esq. was a son of Capt. Nathan Arnold who was a son of Seth Arnold, who was a son of John Arnold, who built the first mill at Woonsocket in the year 1711, who was a son of Richard, who was a son of Thomas."[549]

Children of Nathan and Lucy (Cargill) Arnold, recorded at Cumberland, Rhode Island:[550]

i. **Samuel[6] Arnold**, born 23 September 1760.

ii. **Elisha Arnold**, born 29 August 1765; died 16 October 1769.

iii. **Nathan Arnold**, born 22 November 1766.

---

[547] Cumberland Probate, 5:360; "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 2 (1980): 180.
[548] "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 176.
[549] "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 176.
[550] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.

115. **HANNAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 27 December 1742, a daughter of Seth and Hannah (Aldrich) Arnold.[551]

She married **SIMEON ALDRICH**[552] about 1761, figuring from the birth date of their first child in 1762. He was probably the Simeon Aldrich born at Smithfield 2 April 1740, a son of Samuel and Elizabeth (_____) Aldrich.[553]

Simeon was listed in the 1777 military census at Smithfield as age 16– 50 and able to serve.[554]

In 1778, Simeon was taxed at Smithfield on a farm with three buildings, one horse, two oxen, six horned cattle, nine sheep/goats, five swine, 13 acres of pasture to keep three cows, 4 acres under tillage producing 48 bushels of grain, 3 acres of orchard producing 3 barrels of cider, 10 acres of mowing land producing 3 tons of English hay and 2 tons of fresh hay, and 40 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 70 acres, valued at £540, a personal estate of £48, and debt of £10.[555]

Woonsocket Cemetery records show Simeon and Hannah lost three of their sons in September 1778. On 4 September 1778, their son Elisha died in his 6th year. On 14 September "a son," presumably Asa, died in his 10th year. On 23 September their son "Moab" died in his 3rd year. In the same plot is buried "Mary, wife of Samuel Arnold, daughter of Simeon and Hannah Aldrich, died in the 23rd year of her age," along with an infant, buried with her 18 February 1785.[556]

---

551 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
552 Called Hannah Aldrich, wife of Simeon Aldrich, in her father's will.
553 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 84.
554 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 93.
555 "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 54.
556 "Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 177.

Simeon was listed at Smithfield in the 1790 census heading a household of two males over age 16, two males under age 16, and four females.[557]

Simeon was mentioned in his father's will written 1 July 1801 and the will of his brother, Israel Aldrich, written 21 March 1811.[558]

Simeon died 25 January 1821.[559]

Children of Simeon and Hannah (Arnold) Aldrich, the first six recorded at Smithfield:[560]

i. **Marcy (Mary) Aldrich**, born 22 April 1762.

ii. **Waite Aldrich**, born 4 June 1763.

iii. **Anthony Aldrich**, born 9 November 1766.

iv. **Asa Aldrich**, born 28 October 1768.

v. **Elizabeth Aldrich**, born 15 October 1772.

vi. **Mahab Aldrich**, born 27 December 1775.

vii. **Elisha Aldrich**, born 20 October 1782.

viii. **Mary Aldrich**, born 1783.

ix. **Aaron Aldrich**, born 1785.

---

[557] *Heads of Familes in the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[558] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13(1990): 137; 15 (1992): 71.
[559] Aldrich, *Aldrich Genealogy*, 112.
[560] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 85. The last three from Aldrich, *Aldrich Genealogy*, 112.

116. **ABIGAIL[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 10 April 1744, a daughter of Seth and Hannah (Aldrich) Arnold.[561]

She married **NATHAN COMSTOCK** at Smithfield 2 January 1763.[562] Abigail's father named her in his will of 27 September 1798 as Abigail Comstock, wife of Nathan Comstock. Nathan was born about 1738, calculated from his death record. A son of David and Deborah (Brown) Comstock of Smithfield,[563] he was named in his father's will of 26 July 1771.[564]

Nathan and Hannah lived at Wrentham, Massachusetts. Nathan was a member of the Massachusetts Convention, which ratified the U.S. Constitution 7 February 1788. He was a Quaker and a member of the General Court of Massachusetts in 1789.[565]

On 2 June 1824, Nathan Comstock of Wrentham deeded his son Cyrus 400 acres of land in Franklin and Wrentham, Massachusetts, and Cumberland, Rhode Island, "being one half of lands held under the following deeds":

Timothy Richardson	9 March 1764
James Fisher	25 May 1768
Michael Ware	9 March 1781
Joseph Brown	6 April 1797[566]

Cumberland is in the northeast corner of Rhode Island on the boundary with Wrentham. Franklin lies just three miles north.

"Abigail Comstock, wife of Nathan and daughter of Seth Arnold," died at Wrentham 10 December 1830, in her 86th year, as noted on her gravestone in the West Wrentham Cemetery.[567]

---

561 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
562 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11.
563 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 34.
564 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 303.
565 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 34.
566 Comstock, *Comstock Family in America*, 59.

Nathan died 16 February 1832, in his 94th year.[568] His will, written at Wrentham 2 November 1827 with codicils written 29 July 1828, was proved at Cumberland, Rhode Island, the first Tuesday in April 1832. He mentioned his wife Abigail Comstock; son Cyrus Comstock, deceased, leaving widow Abigail Comstock; daughters Sarah Aldrich and Lucina Ballou, leaving children and grandchildren, which appear to have been Abigail Cook, wife of Davis Cook, Alfred Ballou, Albert Ballou, and Cyrus Ballou; grandson Nathan Comstock; children of son Cyrus, Nathan Comstock, Respe[...] Daniels, and Lucina Comstock; great-grandchildren Lorinda Arnold Ballou, Mary Day, Nancy Blake Day, Abigail Day, Nathan Comstock Jenks, Nathan Arnold Jr., and two daughters, twins of Nathan Arnold. One of the codicils named grandson Nathan Comstock as executor.[569]

Children of Nathan and Hannah (Arnold) Comstock, recorded at Wrentham, Massachusetts:[570]

i. **Cyrus Comstock**, born 14 December 1763.

ii. **Lucina Comstock**, born 28 April 1765.

iii. **Sarah Comstock**, born 27 October 1766.

---

[567] *Wrentham Vital Records*, 2:426.
[568] *Wrentham Vital Records*, 2:426.
[569] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 32.
[570] *Wrentham Vital Records*, 1:50.

117. **LEVI[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 11 December 1746, a son of Seth and Hannah (Aldrich) Arnold.[571]

He married **ANNA ALDRICH**[572] about 1769 (based on the birth date of their first child in 1770). She was born 25 December 1749, a daughter of Robert and Patience (Man) Aldrich of Cumberland, Rhode Island.[573] She died 27 February 1788.[574]

He recorded intentions to marry second **ISABELLA ALDRICH** at Northbridge, Massachusetts, 15 April 1790.[575] She was born at Uxbridge, Massachusetts, 29 October 1752, a daughter of John and Mary (Hill) Aldrich.[576] They were married at Upton, Massachusetts, 2 June 1790.[577]

Levi was in Cumberland in 1774 heading a household of one male over age 16, two males under age 16, two females over age 16, and one female under age 16.[578] In the 1777 military census, he was listed in Cumberland as having taken the affirmation as a member of the Society of Friends.[579] By 1782, his household included nine people, two males under age 16, four females under age 16, one male age 22–49, and two females age 22–49.[580]

---

571 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
572 Maiden name from Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 201.
573 Aldrich, *Aldrich Genealogy*, 64. Robert Aldrich of Cumberland wrote his will 20 June 1794. He did not mention Anna, as she was deceased. He mentioned his wife, Patience, and son Barach. Both Patience and Barach mentioned children of Levi and Anna in their wills ("Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 3 [1980]: 79, 176.
574 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.
575 *Northbridge Vital Records*, 103.
576 Aldrich, *Aldrich Genealogy,* 62, 101.
577 *Upton Vital Records*, 75.
578 *Census of Rhode Isalnd 1774*, 203.
579 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 27.
580 Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6.

On 12 9th month [September] 1783, Levi's father deeded him "for love and affection" 80 acres of land in Cumberland at the Pawtucket River with a dwelling house and other buildings. He deeded him additional land in Smithfield on 29 10th month [October] 1794.[581]

Levi was listed in Cumberland in the 1790 census heading a household of two males age 16 or more, four males under age 16, and three females.[582] In 1800 his household included one male under age 10, one male age 10–16, two males age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, two females under age 10, two females age 16–26, and one female age 45 or more.[583]

On 6 June 1801, Levi and Isabella of Cumberland sold 15 acres of land in Cumberland bounded by land of Elisha Arnold and Joseph Arnold.[584]

Levi has not been found in the 1810 census or in Rhode Island cemetery records.

Children of Levi and Anna (Aldrich) Arnold, recorded at Cumberland, Rhode Island:[585]

i. **Waite[6] Arnold**, born 18 April 1770.

ii. **Isreal Arnold**, born 19 October 1773.

iii. **Aldrich Arnold**, born 19 February 1775.

iv. **Mary Arnold**, born 5 May 1778.

v. **Patience Arnold**, born 3 September 1780.

---

[581] Cumberland Deeds, 6:372; Smithfield Deeds, 9:223.
[582] *Heads of Familes in the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 27.
[583] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 440.
[584] Cumberland Deeds, 9:172.
[585] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.

vi. **Julia Arnold** ("Guli" in the record), born 4 December 1782.

vii. **Ephraim Arnold** ("Ephardiam" in the record), born 14 December 1783.

viii. **Willis Arnold**, born 11 February 1786.

Children of Levi and Isabella (Aldrich) Arnold, recorded at Cumberland:[586]

ix. **Anna Arnold**, born 1 September 1791.

x. **Lewis Arnold**, born 11 January 1792.

xi. **Mahala Arnold**, born 30 August 1794.

---

[586] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.

118. **SETH[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 6 January 1749, a son of Seth and Hannah (Aldrich) Arnold.[587]

He married his cousin **MARTHA ARNOLD** at Smithfield 14 April 1768. The marriage record called them Seth Arnold Jr. of Seth and Martha Arnold of Thomas.[588] She was born about 1753, a daughter of Thomas and Patience (Cook) Arnold (#23) of Smithfield.[589]

After their marriage, Seth and Martha moved to Bellingham, Massachusetts, not far north of the Rhode Island state line. The births of their children are recorded there.

Seth was living in Bellingham when he was a party to litigation in the Providence County Court of Common Pleas in June 1775 and June 1776.[590]

Seth died in 1778 after their sixth child was born in July 1778. Martha, who had six young children, then married another cousin, Caleb Arnold (#80).[591]

Children of Seth and Martha (Arnold) Arnold, recorded at Bellingham:[592]

i. **Hannah[6] Arnold**, born 7 December 1768.

ii. **Richard Arnold**, born 15 November 1770.

---

[587] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[588] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[589] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190. Died 11 February 1798 "in her 45th year" (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131).
[590] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 7:66, 71, 149.
[591] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.
[592] *Bellingham Vital Records*, 12.

iii. **Henry Arnold**, born 12 December 1772.

iv. **Lydia Arnold**, born 27 September 1774.

v. **Seth Arnold**, born 10 November 1776.

vi. **Hannah Arnold**, born 21 July 1778.

119. **GEORGE[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 22 10th month [December] 1751, a son of Seth and Mary (Cargill) Arnold.[593]

He married **ELIZABETH HADWEN** "at Rhode Island" 28 November 1776.[594] On 29 8th month [August] 1776, George requested a certificate from the Smithfield Friends addressed to the Rhode Island Monthly Meeting, stating that he was cleared for marriage. Elizabeth was a daughter of John and Elizabeth (Barney) Hadwen of Newport, Rhode Island t,[595] born at Newport 18 February 1755.[596] Her nephew, William Hadwen, son of her brother James, became an original partner in 1813 with Jabez Gorham of the Gorham Silver Company.

George appeared before the Monthly Meeting of the Smithfield Society of Friends on 26 7th month [July] 1771, when he was just under 20 years old, and asked to become a member. After a committee interviewed him, he was accepted on 31 10th month [October] 1771.[597]

When George and Elizabeth were married at Newport t on 28 November 1776, there was news that a British fleet was heading north from New York. Just nine days after the wedding, on 7 December, the British fleet sailed into Newport Harbor. The British troops landed the next day and many residents left with whatever they could carry.

George was living at Smithfield at the time of the Rhode Island 1777 military census and was listed as having a certificate from the Society of Friends exempting him from military service.[598]

---

[593] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 182.

[594] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.

[595] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.

[596] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 182.

[597] Smithfield Friends Monthly Meeting, FHL microfilm #1308.

[598] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 91.

Smithfield Friends records, however, show that in 1779 the town of Smithfield took one horse by warrant "for the hire of a man to go in his stead as a soldier in ye expedition against Rhode Island."[599]

In 1778, George was taxed in Smithfield on a modest farm with two houses, seven horned cattle, two swine, and real estate valued at £150.[600] On 12 9th month [September] 1783, George's father deeded him a 100-acre farm in Smithfield. He was called George Arnold, merchant, when he purchased another 100 acres of land in Smithfield "on the Pawtucket River near the fording place called the rafting place" on 16 4th month [April] 1784.[601] On 14 February 1794, George purchased the rights to build a dam on the westerly branch of the Pawtucket River at Woonsocket Falls from Seth and Anthony Arnold, his father and brother.[602] On 29 10th month [October] 1794, his father deeded him additional land in Smithfield "next to said George's other land on the side of the Great River."[603] George sold 120 acres of land in Smithfield to his brother James 27 February 1798.[604]

On 26 9th month [September] 1799, George and Elizabeth's son Hadwen obtained a certificate of removal from the Smithfield Friends to the Friends at Danby, Vermont, "having removed with the consent of his parents." He was 20 years old.[605]

George was listed in Smithfield as a head of household in both the 1790 and 1800 censuses.[606] Soon after the 1800 census, on 25 12th month [December] 1800, George and Elizabeth also moved from Smithfield to Danby. Their certificates of removal stated that they were "held in good esteem, diligently attended meeting and appear to have settled their affairs satisfactorily and that their

---

599 Smithfield Friends Monthly Meeting, FHL microfilm #1308.
600 "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 18.
601 Smithfield Deeds, 7:414, 437.
602 Smithfield Deeds, 9:210.
603 Smithfield Deeds, 9:221.
604 Smithfield Deeds, 9:420.
605 Smithfield Friends Records, FHL microfilm #1312.
606 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 513.

children were in good degree, orderly children." The children accompanying them were listed as Oliver, Elizabeth, Margaret, George, Anson, and Sarah H. Arnold. Their daughter Phebe and her husband John Reed, who had married in 1797, moved to Danby at the same time.[607]

George was called "of Danby" when he purchased some parcels of land in Danby from Nathan Lapham for $2,200 on 11 4th month [April] 1801.[608] Nathan's wife Elizabeth (#188) was a distant Arnold cousin. On 29 December 1801, George purchased two lots comprising 200 acres of land in nearby Wallingford, Vermont, on Otter Creek, with a sawmill, gristmill, and other buildings.[609] This purchase continued the Arnold tradition of operating mills.

George sold land in Wallingford to his son-in-law John Reed and to his son Hadwen Arnold in 1804.[610]

George moved to Troy, New York in 1807, where some of his sons lived. On 10 March 1807 he purchased land in Troy on the east side of the Hudson River for $1,800, and in May he purchased additional land there.[611]

He sold land in Danby to Elizabeth's brother, Barney Hadwen, on 19 March 1807 and a large parcel of land in Danby for $5,500 on 21 January 1807.[612] The family received a certificate of removal from the Danby Friends dated 7 5th month [May] 1807, listing children George, Anson and Sarah H. Arnold. Sons Hadwen Arnold and Oliver Arnold received certificates at the same time.[613]

---

[607] Smithfield Friends Records, FHL microfilm #1312. Also Danby Friends Records, FHL microfilm #17320.
[608] Danby Deeds, 6:133, 135.
[609] Wallingford Deeds, 3:174.
[610] Wallingford Deeds, 4:41, 43.
[611] Rensselaer County Deeds.
[612] Danby Deeds, 7:91, 244.
[613] Danby Friends Records, FHL microfilm #17320.

George died at Troy 26 August 1807, and Elizabeth died there 11 December 1842. Both are buried in the Oakwood Cemetery.[614]

Children of George and Elizabeth (Hadwen) Arnold, all recorded at Smithfield:[615]

i. **Phebe[6] Arnold**, born 27 9th month [September] 1777; married **John Reed** at Smithfield 2 November 1797.[616]

ii. **Hadwen Arnold**, born 20 6th month [June] 1779.[617]

iii. **Oliver Arnold**, born 27 February 1781.

iv. **Elizabeth Arnold,** born 24 March 1783.

v. **Margaret Arnold**, born 21 February 1785.

vi. **George Arnold,** born 1 January 1787.

vii. **Anson Arnold**, born 8 March 1789.

viii. **Maria Arnold**, born 17 September 1791.

ix. **James Arnold**, born 12 September 1793.

x. **Sarah H. Arnold**, born 7 August 1795.

---

614 "Oakwood Cemetery Burials Troy, NY," *http://members.tripod.com/~JeffriesB/index-32.html*. Troy Friends records show the date of Elizabeth's death as 10 December 1841.

615 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.

616 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162; 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89. They were ancestors of the author's wife, Susan (Reed) Benson, and are profiled at Richard H. Benson, *The Read Family of Salem, Massachusetts* (Boston, 2005), 180–185.

617 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 182.

120. **JAMES[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 27 November 1763, a son of Seth and Mary (Cargill) Arnold.

He first married **AMY ALDRICH,** recording intentions at Mendon, Massachusetts, 21 June 1784.[618] She was born about 1763, calculating from her age in her death record. She died at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 13 August 1825, in her 62nd year.[619] James and Amy had no children.[620]

He married second **WAITY HANDY**[621] about 1827, when he would have been about 64 years old and she was about 39 years old, calculating from her age in her death record. She was born about 1788, but her parents have not been identified.[622] She died 4 July 1872, aged 84 years.[623]

On 12 9th month [September] 1783, James's father, Seth, deeded him land in Smithfield at Woonsocket Falls with a fulling mill.[624] On 29 10th month [October] 1785, he was called James Arnold of Cumberland when he purchased 10 acres of land in Smithfield. On 12 11th month [November] 1790, he was of Cumberland when he sold to his brother Anthony a 10-acre tract of land and a lot with a fulling mill at Woonsocket Falls. His father deeded James one acre of land in Cumberland and Smithfield at Woonsocket Falls on 29 October 1794.[625]

---

[618] *Mendon Vital Records,* 239.
[619] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 138.
[620] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 202.
[621] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 202.
[622] The 1850 census says she was age 62, born in Massachusetts, while the 1860 census says she was age 71, born in Rhode Island. One clue is that in 1850 a Phebe Handy, age 19, and Waty Handy, age 17, were living with her. Presumably they were nieces. U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 415.
[623] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket,* 202.
[624] Smithfield Deeds, 7:489.
[625] Smithfield Deeds, 7:517; 8:261, 262; 9:222.

James was listed as a head of family in Cumberland in 1790, in Smithfield in 1800, in Cumberland in 1810 and 1820, and in Smithfield in 1830 and 1840.[626]

The Arnold family had owned much of the land comprising the center of present-day Woonsocket, Rhode Island. Woonsocket was established as a separate town in 1867 in the northern part of Rhode Island on the Blackstone River. Land on the west side of the river had been in the town of Smithfield and land on the east had been in the town of Cumberland. James's father had inherited 300 acres on the Smithfield side from his father and purchased another 60 acres from his brother Anthony. James inherited much of this land when his father died in 1801. [627]

James was a miller producing "Indian meal." From 1808 through 1817, he erected a gristmill and several other buildings, which he leased to others, some of whom were early textile producers. On 12 May 1814, he sold 25 acres of land and half the river on which a number of mills were built. This was followed by further sales on 25 April 1821, 8 October 1821, 1 June 1827, and 20 October 1827.[628]

His last sale was his sawmill lot in 1839. In 1840, he built a Greek Revival mansion on a hill on what is now Arnold Street near Market Square in Woonsocket. At the time of his death, his real estate consisted of the house on Arnold Street, a gristmill at the falls, and a small amount of land near Market Square now known as the "Island."[629]

James died 18 October 1841. His will, written at Smithfield 27 July 1841, was proved 27 November 1841. He mentioned his wife Waity Arnold, and two children, James and Mary. The inventory

---

[626] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 27; U.S. Census, Rhode Island, Providence County: 1810, Cumberland, 28; 1820, Cumberland, 42; 1830, Smithfield, 129; 1840, Smithfield, 168.

[627] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 17, 49.

[628] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 130–133.

[629] "James Arnold," at "Woonsocket, My Home Town on the Web" at *www.wooksocket.org/jamesarnold.html*.

of his estate, recorded 25 December 1841, included farm animals, grain, one sleigh, farming tools, a "Franklin fire place," lumber, several beds, furniture, household items, eighteen wine glasses, and books.[630]

Children of James and Waity (Handy) Arnold, named in his will:

i. **James[6] Arnold**, born about 1828; died 1850, age 22.[631]

ii. **Mary Arnold**, born about 1830 (age 20 in the 1850 census and 30 in the 1860 census).[632]

---

[630] Smithfield Probate, 6:401, 406. "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 10 (1987): 69.
[631] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 202.
[632] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 415; U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield 1st District, 126.

121. **ANTHONY[5] ARNOLD** *(Seth[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 28 May 1769, a son of Seth and Mary (Cargill) Arnold.[633]

Anthony apparently never married. He was probably still living with his parents at the time of the 1790 census, as he was not listed separately.

On 12 11th month [November] 1790, Anthony Arnold of Smithfield, miller, purchased 10 acres of land and a lot with a fulling mill at Woonsocket Falls from his brother James.[634]

On 9 September 1794, a few days before he died, Anthony sold his father land in Smithfield, "in that part called Woonsocket, the lower part of the island the grist mill stands on."[635]

He died at Smithfield 22 September 1794 "in his 26th year."[636] His will, written at Smithfield 10 September 1794, was proved 3 October 1794. He left 10 acres of land in Smithfield, bounded by land owned by his brother George Arnold, to his older sister, Phebe, wife of Luke Arnold. She was named executor, and her children received all his wearing apparel and movable estate. His inventory included several pair of horseshoes and "old iron," and was valued at £93.[637]

---

[633] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[634] Smithfield Deeds, 8:261, 262.
[635] Smithfield Deeds, 9:220.
[636] "Woonsocket Cemetery Records," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 176.
[637] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 volume): 445. Also, "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 130.

122. **MARCY[5] ARNOLD** *(Israel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Glocester, Rhode Island, 24 January 1734, a daughter of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[638]

She married **AARON TAFT** at Glocester 24 December 1749.[639] They recorded intentions at Uxbridge, Massachusetts, 28 October 1749.[640] He was born at Uxbridge 12 April 1727, a son of Lieut. Joseph and Elizabeth (Emerson) Taft.[641]

At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, "Aaron Taft of Uxbridge" marched on the alarm of 19 April 1775 as a sergeant in Capt. Joseph Chapin's company of minutemen, serving for fifteen days.[642]

Aaron was listed in Uxbridge in the 1790 census as head of a household of two males age 16 or more and two females.[643] In 1800 his household consisted of one male age 26–45, one male age 45 or more, one female age 26–45, and one female age 45 or more.[644]

Aaron died at Uxbridge 5 November 1805, age 78.[645] On 26 November 1805 Marcy Taft, widow, and Willis Taft, gentleman, were appointed administrators of his estate.[646] A partition of his real estate named Thaddeus Taft, eldest son; Patience Holroid, widow of William; Zadock Taft; Willis Taft, youngest son; and Parn Taft.[647] The inventory of Aaron's estate, dated 18 February, included his home farm of 191 acres, with house, barn, and corn

---

[638] Bible record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at the New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C195.
[639] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Marriages, 6.
[640] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 312.
[641] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 148.
[642] *Mass. Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolution,* 15:349.
[643] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts,* 241.
[644] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Uxbridge, 471.
[645] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 403.
[646] Worcester County Probate, 125:300.
[647] Worcester County Probate, 36:224.

crib; another 54 acres of land; another 11 acres of land; the farm where Thaddeus Taft lived (131 acres); a pew in the meetinghouse' livestock; rye, oats, and corn; an old cart, an old wagon, a plow, blacksmith's bellows, two old guns, a spinning wheel, and a weaver's loom; furniture; wearing apparel; and a large Bible and other books.[648]

Marcy, widow of Aaron, died at Uxbridge 22 January 1806, age about 72 years old. Although her gravestone inscriptions says she was 77, in fact she died just two days before her 72nd birthday.[649]

Children of Aaron and Marcy (Arnold) Taft:[650]

i. **Rhoda Taft**, born 4 February 1753.

ii. **Arnold Taft**, born 4 May 1756.

iii. **Thaddeus Taft**, born 13 December 1757.

iv. **Patience Taft**, born 1 September 1761.

v. **Zadock Taft**, born 15 August 1763.

vi. **Willis Taft,** called youngest son in father's will.

vii. **Parn Taft**, born 4 May 1769.

---

[648] Worcester County Probate, 35:54.
[649] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 403.
[650] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 149, 59, 60, 162, 163.

123. **OLIVER[5] ARNOLD** *(Israel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Glocester, Rhode Island, 7 August 1736, a son of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[651]

He married **ELIZABETH BROWN** in 1754. She was born at Mendon, Massachusetts, 7 November 1730, a daughter of Daniel and Mehitable (Sanford) Brown of Sandisfield, Berkshire County, Massachusetts.[652] Her younger brother, Col. John Brown, graduated from Yale University in 1771 and studied law with Oliver.[653]

Oliver is said to have been very studious as a boy, and his father had him tutored by Rev. Nathan Webb, a clergyman of Uxbridge, Massachusetts.[654]

On 16 March 1758, Oliver purchased three parcels of land in Glocester, for a total cost of £2,800. One 50-acre parcel included "a mansion house and barn"; the other parcels were of 30 and 72 acres..[655] Oliver was named a freeman at Glocester on the first Wednesday in May 1758.[656] He was called Oliver Arnold of Glocester, attorney at law, when he sold these three parcels of land on 13 May 1765.[657] On 4 April 1763, Job Benson of Glocester (ancestor of the author) sold 35 acres of land in Glocester to Oliver.[658]

In 1784, Sarah Hill, an Indian or mustee (person of mixed ancestry), testified in a hearing to determine if she was eligible to be an inhabitant of Providence, that her "time" (period of servitude) was sold to Oliver Arnold, Esq., late of Providence,

---

[651] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 44.
[652] *Mendon Vital Records*, 37; Bayles, *History of Providence County*, 1:35.
[653] "Colonel John Brown," *Stone Arabia Battle Chapter, Sons of the American Revolution Newsletter,* March 1995.
[654] Bayles, *History of Providence County,* 1:35.
[655] Glocester Deeds, 6:247, 249, 251.
[656] *Rhode Island Colonial Records,* 6:142.
[657] Glocester Deeds, 7:461.
[658] Glocester Deeds, 7:459.

with whom she lived about two years while he lived at Glocester. When Oliver Arnold moved to Providence, he sold Sarah Hill's time to Luke Emerson of Uxbridge.[659]

In 1762, Oliver and Elizabeth also established a residence in Providence. His early reputation as an attorney was related in a contemporary anecdote attributed to Levi Lincoln:[660]

> When at the bar a cause of considerable interest was entrusted to me; and on retainer I was informed by my client that I should be opposed only by a young man by the name of Arnold, from Glocester, R.I. Not expecting much display of talent from any one in that region, I was slovenly prepared for arguing the case; nor was my caution increased by the appearance of my antagonist – a tall, green looking youth, who awkwardly seating himself at the bar, impressed me that I had nothing but a stripling to contend with. I made my speech with very little expectation of being answered; and conducted my argument throughout with less skill and arrangement than usual, and awaited the reply of my youthful opponent. But what was my amazement to see him rise with the most perfect self-possession, and state his defense, and argue his cause with an ability that would have done honor to Temple bar. He went on calmly, leading the reason of the jury and audience captive, and leaving myself in the background as far as I confidently expected to have left him.

Oliver was named attorney general of the Colony of Rhode Island in May 1766. In October 1766, he was on a committee to rewrite the laws of the colony. In October 1769, he served on a committee of the General Assembly to review the history of the dispute with Massachusetts over the northern boundary of Rhode Island. In February 1770, just a few months before he died, he was again appointed attorney general.[661]

---

[659] Linda L. Mathew, *Gleanings from Rhode Island Town Records: Providence Town Council Records, 1770–1788* (n.p., 2006), 70.

[660] Bayles, *History of Providence County*, 1:35.

[661] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 6:490, 507, 605; 7:5.

He died 9 October 1770, "in his 35th year," while at court in South Kingstown, Rhode Island.[662] On 30 October 1770, letters of administration were granted to Elizabeth on Oliver's estate.[663]

A few days later, the following advertisement appeared in the *Providence Gazette*[664]:

> Notice is hereby given, that the subscriber, pupil to the late Oliver Arnold Esq, deceased, proposes to begin the practice of the law in Providence, and keep his office at the place lately occupied by the said deceased. He therefore requests the favour of all gentlemen etc. who may have business at the courts in this county: they may depend on being served to the utmost of his abilities and hopes that he shall be able to give such who are pleased to employ him entire satisfaction. He will give constant attendance at the office aforesaid to receive all favours, which will be gratefully acknowledged by the public's humble servant, WILLIAM CHANNING, Providence, November 2, 1770.

In December 1783, Elizabeth asked the court to set aside real estate for her reasonable dower, naming "Waite Arnold, single woman, Alfred Arnold, gentleman, and Mary Arnold, under age 21, children and heirs of Oliver Arnold, late of Providence."[665]

Oliver and Elizabeth's son, Alfred, a mariner of Providence, purchased 13 acres of land with a house in Johnston on 11 April 1791.[666] He mortgaged the land to Thomas Aldridge of Smithfield on 8 April 1795. In a series of transactions, some involving Elizabeth, the land was mortgaged and sold, with the mortgage being satisfied 8 June 1796.[667]

---

[662] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 129.
[663] Providence Probate, 5:540, 6:1. Mathew, *Gleanings from Rhode Island Town Records*, 3.
[664] Historic American Newspapers, database at *NewEnglandAncestors.org*.
[665] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 7:514.
[666] Johnston Deeds, 2:195.
[667] Johnston Deeds, 2:247, 249, 261, 262; 3:220.

"Elizabeth Arnold, widow of Oliver, formerly attorney general of the Colony," died at an advanced age as noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 11 August 1798 [no date of death provided].[668]

Children of Oliver and Elizabeth (Brown) Arnold:

i. **Waite[6] Arnold**, "eldest daughter," born about 1758; died 13 January 1812, in her 54th year.[669]

ii. **Alfred Arnold**, born about 1760; died May 1823, age 63 years.[670]

iii. **Mary Arnold**, born 1762 or after (under age 21 in 1783).[671]

---

[668] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131.

[669] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13:Providence Gazette Deaths, 134.

[670] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 238.

[671] Named as under age 21 when Elizabeth asked the court to establish her dower as indicated above.

124. **MARTHA[5] ARNOLD** *(Israel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Glocester, Rhode Island, 21 August 1741, a daughter of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[672]

She married **EZEKIEL COMSTOCK** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 30 June 1757.[673] He was born 1 May 1733, a son of Hazediah and Martha (Balcom) Comstock.[674]

Martha died 27 November 1759, a month after the birth of her only child. Ezekiel married second Mary Russell, daughter of Stephen and Hannah (Brayton) Russell of Rehoboth. Ezekiel had four additional children with Mary: Henry, Wait, Hannah, and Phebe.[675]

Ezekiel was listed in Smithfield in the 1777 military census as having a certificate from the Society of Friends.[676] He died 6 7th month [July] 1777.[677] His will, written at Smithfield 2 or 22 July 1777, was proved 15 September 1777. He named his wife "Mary" Comstock, his son Henry Comstock (under age 21), and daughters Martha, Wait, Hannah, and Phebe (all under age 18).[678]

In her will of 13 May 1784, Ezekiel's mother, Martha Comstock of Smithfield, mentioned her son Ezekiel, deceased, and three of his children, Henry, Wait, and Hannah, "all under lawful age."[679]

Daughter of Ezekiel and Martha (Arnold) Comstock:[680]

i. **Martha Comstock**, born at Smithfield 26 October 1759.

---

672 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 44.
673 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 11
674 Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 190.
675 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 19.
676 *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 91.
677 Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 346.
678 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 32.
679 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 32.
680 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 95.

125. **LUCY[5] ARNOLD** *(Israel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Glocester, Rhode Island, 5 November 1748, a daughter of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[681]

She married **SAMUEL COMSTOCK** at Glocester 23 March 1766.[682] He was born 29 8th month [October] 1736,[683] a son of David and Deborah (Brown) Comstock of Smithfield.[684]

Samuel was admitted a freeman at Smithfield on the first Wednesday of May 1758. A couple of years later, he bought a farm in Glocester, where he lived until his death.[685]

Samuel was listed in the 1774 Rhode Island census at Glocester with a household of one male and one female over age 16, and two males and one female below age 16. He was listed there as able to serve in the 1777 military census, but exempt as a member of the Society of Friends.[686]

Samuel's farm was about a mile south from the Massachusetts line and a little west of the eastern border of Glocester.[687] In 1778, Samuel was taxed on his farm with three buildings, three horses, two oxen, eighteen horned cattle, three sheep/goats, five swine, 40 acres of pasture to keep fifteen cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 75 bushels of grain, 40 acres of meadow producing 20 tons of English hay, and 30 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 180 acres, valued at £110 plus £22 of personal estate.[688]

He was at Glocester in the 1790 census with a household of three males under age 16, one male over age 16, and two females.[689] In

---

681 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 44.
682 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Marriages, 7.
683 *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 54.
684 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 33.
685 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 33.
686 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 33.
687 Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 33.
688 "Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 94.
689 *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 30.

1810, he was listed in Burrillville, which had been formed from the northern part of Glocester, with one male age 10–16, one male age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, one female age 16–26, and one female age 45 or more.[690]

Samuel and Lucy were of Glocester when — along with Samuel's brother and sister-in-law, Nathan and Abigail Comstock of Wrentham, Massachusetts — they deeded land in Smithfield to Samuel and Lucy's son-in-law, Joseph Man (husband of their daughter Jerusha) on 28 April 1787. On 3 August 1796, Samuel and Lucy deeded an additional 64 acres in Smithfield to Joseph Man.[691] Samuel deeded land to his son David on 6 9th month [September] 1790 and to his son Silas on 3 February 1801 and 1 June 1806.[692]

Samuel and Lucy belonged to the Uxbridge, Massachusetts, Society of Friends. On 30 5th month [May] 1789, the Society disowned their sons David, age 19, and Silas, age 17:

> As they have grown in years they have conducted themselves in an unchristian and unbecoming manner in divers respects . . . throwing things into a well, opening fences, fastening the door of a dwelling house, . . . keeping company with women out of the good order. We have disowned them as members of our Society and put them from under our care until they should manifest a repentance by a reformation of their lives.[693]

Son David did not reform his life. C. B. Comstock's genealogy of the Comstock family states that David was eccentric and murdered Ephraim Bacon on 27 December 1790. Bacon allegedly teased David by threatening to cut down his woodland; when he finally began to do so, David killed him. It was said that David's sister Jerusha concealed and fed him but told the story to the officer who questioned her. According to family tradition, she

---

[690] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Burrillville, 40.
[691] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 33.
[692] Glocester Deeds, 11:513, 14:327, 15:1635.
[693] Uxbridge Monthly Meeting records, FHL microfilm #1324.

brooded over the incident and became insane.[694] David was hanged at Providence 27 May 1791.[695] The sensational press of the day described the murder and hanging:[696]

> On Monday last a murder was perpetrated in Glocester, attended with circumstances peculiarly shocking. One David Comstock having had a dispute with Mr. Ephraim Bacon, relative to some wood stock, struck him with an ax, and by repeated blows put a period to his life. Comstock was taken the next day at Smithfield concealed in a haystack. He confessed that while following the deceased he struck him first on the shoulder which not bringing him to the ground, he struck him on the head; that he then left him, but soon returned and finding him still alive, repeated the blows till he expired.
>
> Friday last at 1 o'clock P. M. David Comstock, convicted at the Superior Court in March last of the murder of Ephraim Bacon, was taken from goal in a coach to the place of execution. He was assisted in his devotions by the Rev. Mr. Snow, and appeared tranquil and resigned to his fate. He suffered about Three O'Clock, and after hanging 26 minutes he was taken down, and delivered to his friends. A detachment of militia attended, and a prodigious concourse of spectators were assembled on the occasion.

The land Samuel had deeded to David in 1790 was forfeited to the state and repurchased by Samuel on 9 August 1792.[697]

The records of the Uxbridge, Massachusetts, Society of Friends show that Samuel died 6 6th month [June] 1815 and Lucy, wife of Samuel, died 3 7th month [July] 1825.[698] Samuel's death at Burrillville (which had been formed from the northern half of Glocester) was noted in the *Providence Gazette,* indicating that he

---

[694] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 33.

[695] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 144, 290.

[696] *Providence Gazette,* 1 January 1791; *United States Cronicle,* 2 June 1791.

[697] Glocester Deeds, 12:214.

[698] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 367. Also Bible Record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C 195.

was in his 79th year and that he was a member of the Society of Friends.[699]

Samuel's will, written 12 10th month [October] 1808, named his wife Lucy, daughter Jerusha Man, son Silas Comstock, daughter Patricia [Patience] Handy, daughter Martha Comstock, and son Nathan Comstock. It was probated at Burrillville 26 June 1815. A distribution report of 29 October 1816 named John Luset, husband of Martha and Ebenezer Handy, husband of Patience.[700]

Children of Samuel and Lucy (Arnold) Comstock, recorded at the Uxbridge Society of Friends:[701]

i. **Jerusha Comstock.**[702]

ii. **Daniel Comstock**, born 28 July 1768.[703]

iii. **David Comstock**, born 4 8th month [August] 1769.

iv. **Silas Comstock**, born 28 11th month [November] 1771.

v. **Patience Comstock**, born 2 9th month [September] 1774.

vi. **Nathan Comstock**, born 24 12th month [December] 1776.

vii. **Martha Comstock**, born 19 3rd month [March] 1793.[704]

---

[699] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 291.
[700] Burrillville Probate, 1:149, 151, 175.
[701] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 54.
[702] Not included in the Uxbridge records. Listed with the others in Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 33.
[703] Comstock, *Comstock Family in America,* 59. Not in Uxbridge records or Samuel Comstock genealogy.
[704] This is the date in the Uxbridge Friends records, but could be wrong since it is 16 years after the birth of the previous child and Lucy would have been 44 years old.

126. **MARY[5] ARNOLD** *(Israel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Glocester, Rhode Island, 6 March 1749, a daughter of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[705]

She married first **PETER TAFT** 4 June 1767 at Uxbridge, Massachusetts, which is just over the state border from Glocester.[706] He was born at Uxbridge 26 August 1741, a son of Peter and Elizabeth (Cheney) Taft.[707]

She married second **DARIUS DANIELS**, recording intentions at Mendon, Massachusetts, 12 May 1805.[708] Mary was a 56 year-old widow, and Darius was 65. He was born 4 November 1739, a son of David and Huldah (Taft) Daniels.[709] Darius had a previous wife, Ruth, with whom he was the father of Azer Daniels, born in 1764.[710] He had also married Nancy Thayer of Cumberland in 1802; she died 10 March 1803.[711]

Mary and Peter moved for a period of time to Leicester, Worcester County, Massachusetts, about 20 miles northwest of Uxbridge. On 7 5th month [May] 1787, Peter Taft of Leicester, gentleman, sold to his brother-in-law, Elisha Arnold of Leicester, rights to enter the easterly part of his farm in Leicester" where I now dwell, to take possession of a dam for moving water through my farm to the farm where Elisha now lives."[712] Four days later, Peter and Mary sold 25 acres of land in Leicester.[713] They were in Leicester in 1790 with a household of two white males over age 16, three white females, and one "other free person."[714]

---

[705] Arnold. *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 44.
[706] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 320.
[707] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 159
[708] *Mendon Vital Records,* 398.
[709] *Mendon Vital Records,* 60.
[710] *Mendon Vital Records,* 59.
[711] *Mendon Vital Records.,* 280, 460.
[712] Worcester County Deeds, 102:509.
[713] Worcester County Deeds, 101:621.
[714] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts,* 225.

On 13 4th month [April] 1792, Peter and Mary Taft were of Leicester when they sold Mary's brother, Benedict Arnold of Glocester, 55 acres of land in Leicester, next to Elisha Arnold's land.[715] Five months later, on 6 9th month [September] 1792, Peter sold Benedict 100 acres of land in Uxbridge.[716]

Benedict Arnold left land to his sister, "Mary Taft, wife of brother-in-law Peter Taft," in his will dated 4 March 1801.[717]

At some point Peter and Mary moved back to Uxbridge. The death of "Captain Peter Taft" was recorded there 13 September 1802, "age 61 years." "Peter Taft of Glocester, Gentleman," had written his will 10 September 1802; it was proved 18 September 1802. He mentioned his wife Mary Taft; three brothers, Henry Taft, Gershom Taft, and Aaron Taft; and sister Thankful Sibley. Land he had received from "Benedict Arnold of Glocester, deceased," went to his wife.[718]

Darius Daniels died 24 May 1832, age 93.[719] Mary Daniels, his widow, died at Uxbridge 11 April 1842, age 93 (per town records) or 10 April 1842, age 94 years.[720]

No children were mentioned in Peter Taft's will, and none appear in the records of Glocester, Uxbridge, Leicester, or Mendon.

---

[715] Worcester County Deeds, 115:121.
[716] Worcester County Deeds, 147:208.
[717] "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 106.
[718] "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 106.
[719] *Mendon Vital Records,* 460.
[720] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 368.

127. **ELISHA**[5] **ARNOLD** *(Israel*[4]*, John*[3]*, Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born 24 4th month [April] 1756, a son of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[721]

He married **THEODATE MUSSEY** at Glocester, Rhode Island, 1 May 1774. She was from Uxbridge, Massachusetts, and they recorded their marriage intentions there 24 April 1774.[722] She was born 5 11th month [November] 1752, a daughter of Thomas and Huldah (Gaskill) Mussey.[723]

The records of the Smithfield Friends Monthly Meeting for 26 5th month [May] 1774 note:

> Theodate Mussey has reasonably & suitably been advised against keeping company with one not of our Society and has proceeded in marriage contrary to the advice of Friends whereof we deny and disown her from membership until she becomes convinced of her error and makes satisfaction.[724]

On 25 3rd month [March] 1776, Elisha asked to come under the care of the Friends. After a committee interviewed him, they concluded his motives were sincere, and he was accepted.[725] Theodate evidently "made satisfaction" when Elisha became a member, and the minutes of the Men's meeting for 1 8th month [August] 1783 note that Theodate Arnold had married "before her husband became a member."[726] Elisha became active in the

---

[721] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 25. Also identified as a son of Israel and Waite in his marriage record.

[722] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Marriages, 7; *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 206.

[723] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 25. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 7. Huldah's name is from *Mendon Vital Records,* 351, and Worcester County Deeds, 106:14.

[724] Smithfield Friends Monthly Meeting of Women Friends, FHL microfilm #1310.

[725] Smithfield Friends Records, FHL microfilm #1308.

[726] Smithfield Friends Monthly Meeting, FHL microfilm #1312.

Uxbridge Society of Friends and was clerk in 1784, 1785, 1786, 1791, and 1792.[727]

Israel Arnold of Glocester deeded a 20-acre parcel of land in Glocester and 100 acres of land in Uxbridge "to my son Elisha Arnold of Glocester" on 19 4th month [April] 1775, just a few months after Elisha's marriage.[728]

Soon after that, Elisha and Theodate probably moved to Massachusetts, as Elisha is not listed in the Rhode Island 1777 military census, the 1778 Glocester tax list, or the 1782 Rhode Island census. On 24 4th month [April] 1783, at the Uxbridge meeting of the Smithfield Friends, Elisha requested Friends care (membership) for his children. On 29 5th month [May} 1783, his daughters Ruth and Waity were accepted.[729]

On 7 5th month [May] 1787, Elisha purchased rights to convey water over the land of his brother-in-law, Peter Taft, for his land in Leicester, Worcester County, Massachusetts. He purchased an additional 25 acres of land from Peter just four days later.[730] Leicester was about 20 miles northwest of Uxbridge and had a branch of the Uxbridge and Smithfield Friends. On 22 July, Elisha and Theodate and others sold their rights to the estate that belong to their late mother, Huldah, widow of Thomas Mussey.[731] On 6 12th month [December] 1790, Elisha sold 100 acres of land in Uxbridge.[732]

Elisha headed a household in Leicester in 1790 that included one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and three females.[733] The Leicester vital records note that a child of Elisha Arnold died 24 May 1793, age 4, and that a child of Elisha was

---

[727] Uxbridge Friends Monthly Meeting, FHL microfilm #1324.
[728] Glocester Deeds, 11:91; Worcester County Deeds, 100:87.
[729] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1310.
[730] Worcester County Deeds, 102:509, 101:621.
[731] Worcester County Deeds, 106:14.
[732] Worcester County Deeds, 114:449.
[733] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts*, 225.

born 24 August 1795.[734] In 1800 Elisha headed a household at Leicester of one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, two females under age 19, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[735]

On 1 6th month [June] 1800, Elisha and Theodate's eldest son, Oliver, age 22, wrote a letter to the Uxbridge Monthly Meeting, confessing that he had been sorrowfully reflecting on some of his past conduct. He had "given way too much to vanity . . . have kept company in a libertine and lewd manner, contracted and consummated marriage contrary to good order." He "desired to return to the watchful care of the Friends."[736] (Just a few months earlier, on 30 March 1800, Oliver had married Nabby Dunbar, who evidently was not a member of the Society of Friends.)[737]

In contrast, on 28 3rd month [March] 1800, Elisha and Theodate's younger son, Israel, was recommended to the care of the East Greenwich Friends, where he had moved, with the consent of his parents, to serve as an apprentice. He returned with good reports on 3 9th month [September] 1804, having completed his apprenticeship.[738]

On 9 4th month [April] 1802, Elisha was in Leicester when he purchased dower rights of his mother, Wait Arnold of Glocester, to land in Uxbridge his father, Israel Arnold, had deeded him by gift.[739] A few months later, in 11th month [November] 1803, the family had moved back to Glocester, when Elisha purchased and sold three parcels of land in Uxbridge.[740]

---

[734] *Leicester Vital Records*, 10, 241.
[735] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Leicester, 485.
[736] Uxbridge Friends records, FHL microfilm #1324.
[737] *Leicester Vital Records*, 117.
[738] Uxbridge Friends records, FHL microfilm #1324.
[739] Worcester County Deeds, 147:207.
[740] Worcester County Deeds, 145:336, 153:289. The purchase was on the 15th and sale on the 9th, so one of the dates must be wrong.

By 8 4th month and 18 4th month [April] 1808, Elisha was living at Uxbridge when he sold two small parcels of land.[741] He appeared there as a head of household in the 1810 and 1820 censuses. In 1810, he had one male under age 10, one male over age 45, one female age 10–15, one female age 16–25, and one female over age 45. In 1820, he had one male under age 10, one male over age 45, on female age 10–15, one female age 26–44, and two females age 45 or more.[742] Elisha sold a small parcel of land there on 19 7th month [July] 1825, just a few months before he died.[743]

Theodate died at Uxbridge 25 January 1817, and Elisha died there 23 June 1826, according to the Uxbridge town records. The Society of Friends records say Elisha died 6 7th month [July] 1826.[744] The Israel Arnold family Bible says she died 25 January 1816 and he died in 1826.[745]

Elisha's will, written at Uxbridge 1 10th month [October] 1820, was proved 1 August 1826. His youngest daughters, Huldah and Patience, inherited the part of his farm "where I now dwell in Uxbridge on the north side of the road from Uxbridge to Mendon." The rest of his land was to be sold and the proceeds divided into five parts, with two parts going to son Oliver, and one part each to children of his son Israel, his daughter Waity Southwick, wife of Enoch Southwick, and Moses Farnum of Uxbridge as trustee in support of daughter Ruth Harvey, wife of James Harvey.[746]

---

[741] Worcester County Deeds, 271:218, 178:407.

[742] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Uxbridge, 76; 1820, Uxbridge, 64.

[743] Worcester County Deeds, 257:635.

[744] *Uxbridge Vital Records*, 356.

[745] Bible record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C 195.

[746] Worcester County Probate, 59:513.

Children of Elisha and Theodate (Mussey) Arnold, recorded at the Uxbridge Society of Friends:[747]

i. **Ruth[6] Arnold**, born 20 2nd month [February] 1775.

ii. **Oliver Arnold**, born 10 12th month [December] 1777.

iii. **Waity Arnold**, born 21 11th month [November] 1780.

iv. **Israel Arnold**, born 20 2nd month [February] 1784.

v. **Alise Arnold**, born 19 4th month [April] 1788. Probably the unnamed child of Elisha who died at Leicester, Massachusetts, 24 May 1793, age 4.[748]

vi. **Huldah Arnold**, born 7 8th month [August] 1791.

vii. **Daughter**, born at Leicester 24 August 1795.[749]

viii. **Patience Arnold**, born 24 8th month [August] 1799.

---

[747] *Uxbridge Vital Records*, 25.

[748] *Uxbridge Vital Records*, 241; *Leicester Vital Records*, 241.

[749] *Leicester Vital Records*, 10.

128. **BENEDICT[5] ARNOLD** *(Israel[4], John[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 27 4th month [June] 1752,[750] a son of Israel and Waite (Mowry) Arnold.[751]

Benedict Arnold of Glocester and **SARAH SOUTHWICK** appeared at the 7 8th month [August] 1774 Smithfield, Rhode Island, Society of Friends Monthly Meeting to declare their intentions of marriage.[752] They were married at Uxbridge, Massachusetts, 4 11th month [November] 1774.[753] She was a daughter of Lawrence (Jr.) and Dorcas (_____) Southwick of Mendon, Massachusetts.[754] Sarah's birth on 27 4th month [April] 1754 was recorded at the Smithfield Society of Friends.[755]

On 24 6th month [June] 1773, the year before he was married, Benedict appeared before the monthly meeting of the Smithfield Society of Friends and asked to "come under the care of the Friends," (that is, to become a member). He was accepted at the next meeting, on 29 7th month [July] 1773.[756]

On 19 4th month [April] 1775, Israel Arnold of Glocester "for love and fatherly affection" deeded 100 acres of land in Uxbridge "on the Colony line" to his son Benedict Arnold of Glocester.[757] On 2 10th month [October] 1776, Benedict and Sarah signed a deed to sell 20 acres of "my farm in Glocester where I now dwell," for £154.[758]

---

[750] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 25.
[751] Identified as a son of Israel and Waite in his marriage record.
[752] Smithfield Society of Friends, FHL microfilm #1310.
[753] Smithfield Society of Friends, marriage certificate, FHL microfilm #1312.
[754] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.
[755] *Mendon Vital Records,* 161.
[756] Smithfield Society of Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[757] Worcester County Deeds, 73:360.99
[758] Glocester Deeds, 9:356.

Benedict was listed in Glocester in the 1777 military census as having a certificate from the Society of Friends exempting him from military service.[759] On 27 3rd month [March] 1777, he notified the Smithfield Friends that he was considering a move to Hoosuck, Massachusetts. He evidently decided not to move.[760]

In 1778, Benedict was taxed on a farm in Glocester with five houses, two horses, two oxen, twelve horned cattle, five swine, 81 acres of pasture to keep twelve cows, 15 acres under tillage producing 180 bushels of grain, 1 acre of orchard producing 2 barrels of cider, 20 acres of meadow producing 10 tons of English hay, and 44 acres of woodland, for a total of 160 acres, with a personal estate of £77 and real estate valued at £680.[761]

In the 1782 census, Benedict's household consisted of one male under age 16, two females under age 16, one male age 22–49, one female age 22–49, and one female age 50 or more.[762] In 1790, his household included two males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and five females.[763] In 1800, he headed a household of three males age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, two females age 16–26, and two females age 45 or more.[764]

On 29 9th month [September] 1797, Benedict and Sarah's only son, William, age 20, was disowned by the Uxbridge Society of Friends. He "hath been at places where there hath been merriment and dancing and joined therewith" and he "hath not kept the plainness."[765]

Although Benedict owned land in Worcester County, Massachusetts, he was called "of Glocester" in several deeds. These included the purchase of 12 acres of land in Mendon on 3

---

[759] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 40.
[760] Smithfield Friends Records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[761] "Glocester 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 51.
[762] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.
[763] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 30.
[764] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.
[765] Uxbridge Friends records, FHL microfilm # 1324.

June 1785, 52 acres in Uxbridge on 12 3rd month [March] 1789, 55 acres in Leicester on 13 4th month [April] 1792, 100 acres in Uxbridge on 6 9th month [September] 1792, and other land in Uxbridge in February 1800.[766]

Benedict, "a member of the Society of Friends," died suddenly at Glocester 20 February 1802, as noted in death notices in the *Providence Gazette* and the *United States Chronicle*.[767] The records of the Uxbridge Society of Friends indicate he died 9 2nd month [February] 1802.[768] Benedict and his family belonged to the Uxbridge Society but probably continued living in Glocester, just across the state line.

Benedict's will, written 4 March 1801, was proved 6 March 1802. He named his wife Sarah Arnold; his son William; his daughters Dorcas Kelly and Mary Arnold; his sister Mary Taft, wife of Peter Taft; and his brother-in-law, William Buffum of Smithfield, who was sole executor.[769]

On 13 January 1803, Sarah received a distribution from Benedict's estate of "one riding beast, a woman's saddle and bridle, two cows, six sheep, one swine, two feather beds and furniture and one third of the provisions on hand at the time of her husband's death."[770]

"Sarah Arnold, widow of Benedict" died 14 February 1836, age 83 years.[771]

---

[766] Worcester County Deeds, 101:485, 106:476, 115:128, 147:208, 137:285.
[767] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 132; 15: United States Chronicle Deaths, 473.
[768] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 356. Also Bible record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C 195.
[769] Glocester Probate, 3:105. Also, "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 106.
[770] Glocester Probate, 3:141.
[771] *Uxbridge Vital Records,* 356. Also Bible record for Israel Arnold Family, manuscript at New England Historic Genealogical Society, Mss C 195.

Children of Benedict and Sarah (Southwick) Arnold, born at Glocester:[772]

i. **Dorcas[6] Arnold**, born 14 10th month [October] 1775.

ii. **William Arnold**, born 30 1st month [January] 1777.

iii. **Mary Arnold**, born 2 12th month [December] 1783.[773]

iv. **Phebe Arnold**, born 3 June 1789; died 9 October 1793.

v. **Harriet Arnold**, born 15 February 1792; died 17 October 1793.

---

[772] For Dorcas, William, and Mary, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 44. Also recorded at *Uxbridge Vital Records*, 25, citing records of the Uxbridge Society of Friends. Daughters Phebe and Harriet are recorded in Rhode Island Historical Society Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 11.

[773] The Uxbridge Friends records say she was born 1 12th month [December] 1781. However, two obituaries state she was age 27 when she died in 1810, supporting the 1783 date. Perhaps another Mary Arnold was born in 1781 and died young. The obituaries note the death of Mrs. Mary Smith, wife of Captain Mowry Smith, and youngest daughter of the late Benedict Arnold of Glocester, aged 27 years, publishing date 9 May 1810. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 283; 19: Providence Phenix Deaths, 135.

129. **STEPHEN[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a son of Job and Kesiah (Hawkins) Arnold, about 1731 (his parents were married in 1729/30).[774]

Stephen first married **PATIENCE STAFFORD**[775] about 1755, as their first child was born in 1756. She was born about 1723, as she died in 1782 in her 59th year.[776] She may have been Patience Stafford, born at Warwick, Rhode Island, 8 April 1724, a daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Bennett) Stafford.[777]

Stephen married second **MARY GREENE** at Smithfield 5 January 1783.[778] "Mrs. Mary Arnold, wife of Stephen" died at Smithfield 17 May 1814.[779]

Stephen was referred to as Stephen Arnold Jr. in Smithfield to contrast him with his older cousin Stephen Arnold (#85), a son of Richard Arnold, who was born in 1728, married in 1749, and died in 1796. Stephen Arnold Jr. was admitted as a freeman in Smithfield 1 May 1753.[780] In 1774 he headed a household of three males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, three females age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[781] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[782]

---

[774] Named in his father's will.

[775] Greene, "Arnold Family," 70.

[776] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.

[777] Birth from Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 1: Warwick Births and Deaths, 204.

[778] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[779] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 134.

[780] Records of the Colony and State of Rhode Island, CD produced by the New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2003, Supplement 1747–1754.

[781] *Census of Rhode Isalnd 1774,* 102.

[782] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 95.

During the American Revolution, Stephen Arnold Jr. served with the Smithfield militia and was listed on an alarm list dated 1 August 1778.[783]

In 1778, he was taxed in Smithfield on a farm with five houses, one-third of a mill, one slave, 20 ounces of silverplate, one horse, two oxen, ten horned cattle, eighteen sheep/goats, four swine, 25 acres of pasture to keep eight cows, 6 acres under tillage producing 90 bushels of grain, 3 acres of orchard producing 20 barrels of cider, 15 acres of mowing land producing 8 tons of English hay and 7 tons of fresh hay, and 50 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 100 acres.[784]

In May 1785, Stephen Arnold Jr. was a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly from Smithfield.[785]

Stephen Arnold of Smithfield, gentleman, "far advanced in age, in good health," wrote his will at Smithfield 25 March 1810; it was proved 27 February 1816. He left his wife, Mary, the rent and profit from half of his real estate, one feather bed and one large silver spoon that came from her mother, one half-dozen silver teaspoons, and the income from five shares in the Louisquissett Turnpike Road. He also mentioned daughter Nancy Harris, wife of John Harris; daughter Barberry Phillips, wife of Gideon Phillips; granddaughter Patience Arnold, daughter of son Silas Arnold, deceased; and granddaughter Julia Arnold, of William, deceased. Daughter Rebecca Arnold was left "the privilege of living in his dwelling house as long as she is single," the use of a horse, and $200. No more was given to children who are married, as "I having heretofore given them portions and been at much expense settling and helping them." Son Stephen G. Arnold was left "everything else."[786]

---

[783] Military Papers, Rhode Island Historical Society, Mss. 673, subgroup 2, box 3, folder 85.

[784] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 21.

[785] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 10:93.

[786] Smithfield Probate, 3:595. Also "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 15 (1992): 75.

Children of Stephen and Patience (Stafford) Arnold, born at Smithfield:[787]

i. **Silas[6] Arnold**, born 5 December 1756.

ii. **Nancy Arnold**, born 29 October 1758.

iii. **Barberry Arnold,** born 29 November 1762.

iv. **William Arnold**, born 19 July 1765.

v. **Rebecca Arnold**, born 12 November 1768.

Children of Stephen and Mary (Greene) Arnold:[788]

vi. **Stephen G. Arnold**, born about 1788.[789] (Mentioned in will).

---

[787] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[788] Greene, "Arnold Family," 70.
[789] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield Districts 2 and 3, Stephen G. Arnold, born Rhode Island, age 62, in the household of William Arnold, age 38.

130. **LYDIA[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably about 1733 (married in 1753), a daughter of Job and Kesiah (Hawkins) Arnold, who were married at Providence, Rhode Island in 1729/30.[790]

Lydia Arnold of Smithfield, Rhode Island, married **WILLIAM POTTER** of Warwick, Rhode Island, 18 November 1753, at Smithfield.[791]

There were several William Potters in Rhode Island at the time. The Warwick records show that Barbara Potter was born 2 June 1756, a daughter of Captain William and Lydia Potter. In February 1754, Lt. William Potter was placed in charge of the Warwick Third Company "in room of Elisha Green, Jr. who refused." From May 1755 through August 1759, he was listed as Capt. William Potter heading the Third Company.[792]

Lydia Potter was mentioned in her father's will dated 13 October 1765.

In 1774, William Potter headed a household in Warwick of three males above age 16, four males under age 16, three females above age 16, and three females under age 16.[793] In 1782, Capt. William Potter headed an unusually large household in Warwick of five males and two females under age 16, two males and three females age 16–21, two males and one female age 22–49, and one male and one female age 50 or more.[794] The household of William Potter at Warwick in 1790 included three males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and two females.[795]

It is said that the family lived in Foster, Rhode Island, and moved from there to Vermont.[796] There was a William Potter family at

---

[790] Mentioned as Lydia Potter in father's will of 13 October 1765.
[791] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 60.
[792] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island*, 168, 176, 184, 194, 202, 210.
[793] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 65.
[794] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 98.
[795] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 15.
[796] Greene, "Arnold Family," 69.

Foster in 1790 with one male age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and two females.[797] There were several William Potters in Vermont in 1800.

On 1 July 1786, William Potter sold part of his homestead farm, 85 acres in Warwick, to "my three sons, Pardon Potter, Arnold Potter and William Potter" for $1,700.[798] He sold 52 acres of land in Warwick on 14 September 1791.[799] According to deeds, his sons were living in Cranston, Scituate, and Foster, Rhode Island. Perhaps he went to live with one of them.[800]

Children of Captain William and Lydia (Arnold) Potter:[801]

i. **Pardon Potter,** born about 1754.[802]

ii. **Barbara Potter**, born Warwick 2 June 1756.

iii. **Arnold Potter,** said to have been born Providence or Warwick, 2 March 1758.

iv. **Lydia Potter.**

v. **William Potter.**

---

[797] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 28.

[798] Warwick Deeds, 12:66.

[799] Warwick Deeds, 12:412.

[800] Warwick Deeds, 12:413, 454; 13:201, 202, 325.

[801] Pardon, Arnold, and William are listed as sons at Warwick Deeds, 12:66. Barbara is listed at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 1: Warwick Births and Deaths, 192. Greene, in "Arnold Family," 69, lists Lydia and William and says there were three or more others. The birth date for Arnold Potter is from the International Genealogical Index, without primary record support.

[802] Pardon Potter was described as a son of Capt. William Potter of Warwick when he married Mary Snell at Warwick on 17 October 1779 (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 1: Warwick Marriages, 93. Mary's application for a pension for his service in the American Revolution (W13823) does not provide a date of birth for him. He died at Warwick 12 July 1823, in his 70th year, and thus was born about 1754 (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,*14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 195).

131. **ABRAHAM[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of Job and Freelove (Arnold) Arnold.[803]

He married first **SARAH DEXTER** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 25 February 1768.[804] She was born at Smithfield in 1741, a daughter of John and Mary (Browne) Dexter.[805] Abraham and Sarah had no children.[806]

He married second **MARY BARROW** at Richmond, New Hampshire, 13 February 1794.[807] She was born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 19 October 1761, a daughter of Abraham and Abigail (Streeter) Barrow.[808] Sometime after her birth, her parents moved to Richmond, Cheshire County, New Hampshire.[809]

On 1 February 1764, Abraham's father, Job, described him as a blacksmith when he deeded him two lots, one with a dwelling house and half a blacksmith shop in Smithfield. Abraham and Sarah sold the lot with the dwelling house on 7 February 1770. On that day his father Job deeded another one-acre lot to Abraham with a dwelling house, part of his homestead farm.[810] In 1781, Abraham's brother Isaac deeded him certain rights to their father's farm, sawmill, and corn mill.[811]

In 1774, Abraham was in Smithfield heading a household of four males age 16 or more, two females age 16 or more, and one female

---

[803] Named in father's will.
[804] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[805] Newman, *Dexter Genealogy* (Providence, 1859), 23.
[806] Greene, "Arnold Family," 70.
[807] Richmond Vital Records, 101, FHL microfilm #2200930. Also William Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond, Cheshire County, New Hampshire from Its First Settlement, to 1882* (Boston, 1884), 273.
[808] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 81.
[809] Rev. Lucien Moore Robinson, "The Barrow Family," *Maine Historical and Genealogical Record* 8 (1895): 32.
[810] Smithfield Deeds, 5:391; 6:255, 250.
[811] Smithfield Deeds, 7:364.

under age 16.[812] Abraham was listed at Smithfield as age 16–50 and able to serve in the Rhode Island military census of 1777.[813]

Abraham Arnold of Smithfield was described as a blacksmith in litigation of June 1774, June 1776, and December 1776.[814]

During the American Revolution, Abraham served with the Smithfield militia and was listed on an alarm list dated 1 August 1778.[815]

Abraham was taxed in Smithfield in 1778 on a farm of three houses, one-third of a mill, one-sixth of a lime kiln, 10 ounces of silverplate, one chaise, five horned cattle, eleven sheep/goats, five swine, 25 acres of pasture to keep four cows, 2 acres under tillage to produce 24 bushels of grain, an orchard producing 5 barrels of cider, 10 acres of mowing land producing 2 tons of English hay and 3 tons of fresh hay, and 33 acres of wood and wasteland, for total of 70 acres, with debt of £12, personal estate of £40, and real estate of £600.[816]

Abraham and his brother Oliver, both of Smithfield, purchased 100 acres of land in East Hoosuck (now Adams), Berkshire County, Massachusetts, on 20 December 1781. They sold that land 24 March 1783.[817]

In 1790, his household in Smithfield included one male age 16 or more and three females.[818]

---

[812] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[813] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.
[814] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 7:23, 159, 188.4.
[815] Military Papers, Rhode Island Historical Society, Mss. 673, subgroup 2, box 3, folder 85.
[816] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 57.
[817] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, B:117, C:235.
[818] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.

On 3 August 1791, Abraham sold two lots with a dwelling house and half a blacksmith shop.[819] He sold land to his brother Job on 18 January 1792 and 11 May 1792.[820]

Abraham was in Richmond, New Hampshire, when he married Mary Barrow in February 1794. On 3 March 1794, he was appointed as hog reeve at the town meeting.[821] On 3 February 1795, Abraham and Mary sold his brother Job his right to the corn mill his father gave him, one-fourth of the mill he had purchased from his brother Isaac, half the blacksmith shop and coal house, and his rights to a lime kiln and rock. He acknowledged the deed from Cheshire County, New Hampshire, on 3 February 1796.[822] On 23 January 1796, Job sold 35 acres in Smithfield that had been "the primary part of the farm lately owned by Abraham Arnold, brother of the grantor, with dwelling house, barn and other buildings."[823] Abraham purchased land in Richmond on 28 April and 28 May 1796.[824]

Abraham of Richmond, with his wife Mary, sold "my home farm" on 4 May 1811.[825] He was not on the 1811 tax list and is not mentioned further in the town records.[826]

Children of Abraham and Mary "Molly" (Barrows) Arnold:[827]

i. **Sarah[6] Arnold**, born Richmond, New Hampshire, 29 October 1794.[828]

ii. **Freelove Arnold.**

---

[819] Smithfield Deeds, 9:72.
[820] Smithfield Deeds, 9:112, 113; 8:327.
[821] Richmond Town Records, 593 at FHL microfilm #15296.
[822] Smithfield Deeds, 9:311.
[823] Smithfield Deeds, 8:500.
[824] Cheshire County Deeds, 28:30, 34.
[825] Cheshire County Deeds, 69:397.
[826] Richmond Town Records, at FHL microfilm #15296.
[827] Greene, "Arnold Family," 70.
[828] Richmond Town Records, 397, at FHL microfilm #15296. Also Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond*, 273.

132. **ISAAC[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1748, a son of Job and Freelove (Arnold) Arnold.[829]

He married **LAVINA ARNOLD** at Smithfield 8 December 1768.[830] She was born there 4 or 14 April 1746, a daughter of Benjamin and Anna (Dexter) Arnold.[831] She was named as Lavina Arnold in her father's will of 25 August 1799.

In 1770, Isaac's father, Job, deeded to him one acre of land with a dwelling house in Smithfield.[832]

Lavina had been a member of the Smithfield Society of Friends, but Isaac was not. Sometime after their 1768 marriage, the meeting of Women Friends attempted to bring her back into the fold. On 25 10th month [October] 1775, it was noted that "Elizabeth Southwick hath discoursed with Lavina Arnold on account of her going out in marriage and finding her desirous to make satisfaction." The matter was discussed again on 30 5th month [May] 1776, and on 27 3rd month [March] 1777 it was reported that "Lavina Arnold, wife of Isaac Arnold, married out of order of Friends having been labored with and long waited but little encouragement appearing to this meeting denies unity with her until she returns and makes _____."[833]

Isaac posted a notice in the *Providence Gazette* of 8 March 1777 about a runaway apprentice:

> Run away from Isaac Arnold, of Smithfield, near Providence, on the 26th of February, an apprentice lad, named Daniel Woodward, about 17 years of age, small of his age, has red hair, grey eyes, and is somewhat fresh coloured; had on when he went away a pair of

---

[829] Mentioned in his father's will as under age 21 on 13 October 1765.
[830] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[831] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[832] Smithfield Deeds, 6:256.
[833] Smithfield Friends, Monthly Meetings of Women Friends, FHL microfilm # 1310.

> linsey-woolsey trowsers, a striped flannel jacket, and an old grayish straitbodied coat. Whoever will secure said runaway, so that he may be returned to his master, shall have Three Dollars reward, an all necessary charges paid by Isaac Arnold. N.B. All masters of vessels and others are forbid to harbour or conceal the above apprentice.[834]

Isaac was listed in Smithfield as age 16–50 and able to serve in the Rhode Island Military Census of 1777.[835]

In December 1784, he was called Isaac Arnold of Smithfield, innholder, in litigation with Ichabod Comstock, physician of Smithfield.[836]

On 25 July 1790, a son of Isaac Arnold of Smithfield drowned in Scott's Pond.[837] In 1790, his household in Smithfield included two males age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and four females.[838]

Isaac and Lavina moved to Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, about 1793. In his diary, Lavina's father noted that he sent one dollar to Lavina at Adams in that year.[839] Isaac had purchased 5 acres of land there as early as 7 11th month [November] 1782.[840] Isaac headed a household there in 1800, with one male age 10–16, one male age 16–26, one male age 26–45, one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, and one female age 26–45.[841]

---

[834] Taylor, *Runaways, Deserters, and Notorious Villains,* 1:52.

[835] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 92.

[836] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 7:625.

[837] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.

[838] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.

[839] Benjamin Arnold Diaries, Rhode Island Historical Society Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 11.

[840] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, C:245.

[841] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 136.

They subsequently are said to have moved to Ontario County, New York, 12 or 15 miles south of Rochester.[842] Perhaps theirs was the household of Isaac Arnold in Boyle township in 1810 with two males age 16–25, one male over 45, one female age 16–45, and one female over age 45.[843]

Lavina died in 1815.[844]

Children of Isaac and Lavina (Arnold) Arnold:[845]

i. **Thomas[6] Arnold**, born 24 March 1770.

ii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 16 February 1772.

iii. **Anna Arnold.**

iv. **Freelove Arnold.**

v. **Mary Arnold.**

vi. **Asabel Arnold.**

vii. **Jacob Arnold.**

viii. **Isaac Arnold.**

ix. **Darius Arnold.**

---

[842] Greene, "Arnold Family," 70.

[843] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Ontario County, Boyle, 249.

[844] Greene, "Arnold Family," 70.

[845] The first two recorded at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89. Anna, Freelove, and Mary are named in Lavina's father's will of 1810. An 1807 marriage record lists Joshua Arnold as a son of Isaac of Smithfield (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 13).
However census and cemetery records show that Joshua as having the 1784 birth date of Joshua, son of Israel and Deborah (Olney) Arnold. The last four children are from Greene, "Arnold Family," 71.

133. **KESIAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Job and possibly Freelove (Arnold) Arnold.[846]

She married **DAVID CASS** of Richmond, New Hampshire, at Smithfield 7 June 1781.[847] He was the David Cass, son of John and Alice (Brown) Cass, born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 9 August 1747.[848]

David's father, John Cass, moved from Cumberland, Rhode Island, to Richmond, New Hampshire, by 1763, when David was 16 years old. In 1765, the first town meeting was held at his house, and he was the moderator. [849]

According to the 1882 Richmond town history, David Cass, a son of Deacon John Cass, married Kesiah Arnold of Smithfield. He owned a farm at lot 5, range 9, and built a house that was still standing in 1882, but in a dilapidated condition. He sold the farm to John Ingersoll about 1794 and removed from town.[850]

The town history also indicates that David and Kesiah had two children, Lydia and Freelove.[851] It is likely, however, that these daughters were born to an earlier wife, not mentioned in the history. David was 36 years old when he married Kesiah in 1781. The New Hampshire vital records show that Lydia Cass was born at Richmond 20 June 1773 and Freelove Cass was born there 17 August 1775.[852]

---

[846] Mentioned in father's will written in 1765.

[847] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 24. The marriage record states that he was a son of John Cass of Richmond, R.I. (which was an error, as it should be Richmond, N.H.), and that she was a daughter of Job Arnold of Smithfield.

[848] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 89.

[849] Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond*, 356.

[850] Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond*, 358. It should be noted that the history has the wrong date for David and Kesiah's marriage.

[851] Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond*, 358.

[852] New Hampshire Vital Records to 1900, FHL microfilm #1000491.

In 1790, David Cass headed a household in Richmond of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and five females.[853] He purchased a 160-acre farm in Richmond in May 1791.[854]

The town history states that he moved away in 1794, and he has not been found in the 1800 census.

---

[853] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: New Hampshire,* 22.
[854] Cheshire County Deeds, 17:285.

134. **OLIVER[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 12 April 1752, a son of Job and Freelove (Arnold) Arnold.[855]

He married **ELETHAN HARRIS** at Smithfield 3 December 1778.[856] She was born there 21 August 1755, a daughter of Preserved and Martha (Mowry) Harris.[857]

Oliver became the fourth owner of the "Stone Chimney House," also known as the Eleazer Arnold House, when he inherited it from his father in 1776. In 1778, Oliver was taxed on his farm, which included two and a half houses, one mill, one-sixth of a lime kiln, a tanyard, three horses, two oxen, eleven horned cattle, eight sheep/goats, nine swine, 59 acres of pasture to keep six cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 60 bushels of grain, 3 acres of orchard producing 10 barrels of cider, 10 mowing acres producing 8½ tons of English hay, and 3 acres of wood and wasteland, totaling 80 acres, with personal estate of £96, debt of £23, and real estate valued at £580.[858]

Oliver's older brother Isaac deeded him and his brother Abraham certain rights to the their father's farm, sawmill, and corn mill in 1776 and 1781.[859] Oliver and Abraham, both of Smithfield, purchased 100 acres of land in East Hoosick (now Adams), Berkshire County, Massachusetts, on 20 December 1781. They sold that land 24 March 1783.[860] On the same day Oliver purchased a 90-acre farm in Smithfield.[861]

---

[855]Named in his father's will.

[856] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[857] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 99.

[858] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 21.

[859] Smithfield Deeds, 7:364, 365.

[860] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, B:117, C:235.

[861] Smithfield Deeds, 7:363.

Oliver died at Smithfield 18 January 1790.[862] The inventory of his estate, taken 10 March 1790, was valued at £212. It included farm animals, clothing, furniture, farm equipment, an old wagon, a new Dutch sled, and an old sleigh.[863] Elethan Arnold, widow and administrator, filed a listing of debts paid to 67 people totaling £786. She asked the court for £98 of items needed to support her farm and small children, including three feather beds, two cows, pewter, pots, cloth, a desk, pork, butter, and other items.[864] Abraham Arnold, administrator of the estate of his father Job Arnold, discharged Elethan Arnold, administrator of the estate of Oliver Arnold, of all debts due to Job's estate on 2 September 1791.[865] Elethan, widow and administrator, sold 100 acres of land on 17 4th month [April] 1792.[866]

Mrs. Elethan Arnold headed a household in 1790 of one male age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and five females.[867] She continued to be listed as a widow and head of household in Smithfield in 1800, 1810, and 1820, with her name spelled differently each year![868]

Elethan died at Smithfield 24 December 1823.[869]

Children of Oliver and Elethan (Harris) Arnold:[870]

i. **Isaac[6] Arnold**, born 11 August 1779.

---

[862] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 307. Also Sanborn, "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records," *Register* 146 (1992): 345.
[863] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 307.
[864] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 365.
[865] Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 379.
[866] Smithfield Deeds, 9:314.
[867] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.
[868] U.S. Census, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 1800, 514; 1810, 184; 1820, 199.
[869] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:69, citing "Original Family Record of Oliver Arnold in possession of the author."
[870] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:69.

ii. **Oliver Arnold**, born 11 April 1781; died 18 April 1785.

iii. **Martin Arnold**, born 11 November 1783.

iv. **Sabra Arnold**, born 25 January 1786.

v. **Preserved Arnold**, born 10 June 1788.

135. **FREELOVE[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Job and Freelove (Arnold) Arnold.[871] She was born probably after 1749 as she was not mentioned with other grandchildren in her grandfather's will written that year. She died before 26 December 1807, when Waity Harris was listed as the wife of Thomas Harris in a deed.[872]

She married **THOMAS HARRIS** at Scituate, Rhode Island, 30 March 1775. The marriage record calls him a son of Gideon, and Freelove a daughter of Job of Smithfield.[873] Thomas was born at Scituate 15 March 1746/7, a son of Gideon and Damaris (Westcott) Harris.[874]

On 2 5th month [May] 1775, the Smithfield Society of Friends reported

> Thomas Harris, son of Gideon, hath gone into many things contrary to the Rules established by Friends as joining in marriage with one not a member of your Society . . . in the custom of the people of the World and associating with unprofitable company.

A committee was appointed to work with him. He said he desired to be reconciled with the Friends. On 28 11th month [November] 1776, a paper from him condemning his misconduct was read, and he was allowed to continue as a member.[875]

Thomas Harris of Scituate was listed in the 1777 military census as having a certificate from the Society of Friends exempting him from service.[876] However, a yoke of oxen was taken from him for nonattendance at militia duty.[877] In 1782, his household included two males over age 16, two females over age 16, one male age

---

[871] Mentioned in her father's 1765 will as under age 18 and unmarried.
[872] Chenango County Deeds, L:156.
[873] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Scituate Marriages, 6, 17.
[874] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Scituate Births and Deaths, 43.
[875] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[876] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 83.
[877] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.

16–21, one female age 16–21, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[878] In 1790, his household included three males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and seven females.[879] He was still in Scituate in 1800 with a household of one male under age 10, two males age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, two females under age 10, three females age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[880]

On 24 April 1782, Thomas purchased from his brother, John, for one shilling, John's share of land their father, Gideon, had given to them. Freelove had passed away and Thomas was married to his second wife, Waity, by 26 February 1797, when she signed a deed.[881]

Thomas was of Scituate on 16 March 1803 when he purchased 101 acres of land in Sherburne, Chenango County, New York.[882] He was of Sherburne when he deeded land to his sons Gideon and Thomas in 1807.[883] In the 1810 census, he was living next to his son Gideon at Sherburne. His household included three males age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, two females age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[884] He sold 51 acres of land in Oxford in 1811, 33 acres in Sherburne in 1812, and 101 acres in Sherburne in 1812.[885]

Thomas died on 5 January 1827, age 80, according to his tombstone at the Harrisville Cemetery in Sherburne. Freelove is not buried there. He is buried next to Waity Harris, "his wife," who died 11 February 1840, age 84. The cemetery also includes tombstones for Amy Harris "their daughter," who died 25

---

[878] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 60.
[879] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 37.
[880] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Scituate, 493.
[881] Scituate Deeds, 9:244, 144.
[882] Chenango County Deeds, L:140.
[883] Chenango County Deeds, L:156, 166.
[884] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Chenango County, Sherburne, 182.
[885] Chenango County Deeds, O:254; P:301, 391.

September 1818, age 21 years, and for Dexter Harris, died 11 September 1879, age 87 years, 3 months.[886]

Children of Thomas and Freelove (Arnold) Harris, the first two born at Scituate:[887]

i. **Damaris Harris**, born 17 April 1776.

ii. **Gideon Harris**, born 30 December 1777.

iii. **Phebe Harris.**

iv. **Sarah Harris.**

v. **Mary Harris.**

vi. **Thomas Harris.**

vii. **Dexter Harris**, possible son, born about 1792 according to tombstone inscription.

viii. **Amy Harris**, born about 1797 according to tombstone inscription.

---

[886] Harrisville Cemetery, *www.rootsweb.com/~nychenan/harrisvic.htm.*

[887] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Scituate Births and Deaths, 43. Children iii through vi from Greene, "Arnold Family," 71.

136. **JOB[5] ARNOLD** *(Job[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 16 October 1760, a son of Job and Freelove (Arnold) Arnold.[888]

He married **HANNAH DEXTER** at Smithfield 21 December 1780 . The marriage record states that he was a son of Job Arnold, deceased, and she a daughter of William Dexter, deceased.[889] Hannah was born at Smithfield in 1761, a daughter of William and Phebe (Warner) Dexter.[890] William Dexter of Smithfield, gentleman, wrote his will 31 December 1772, naming his daughter Hannah, under age 21 and unmarried.[891]

In 1776, when he was still under age 21, Job and his brother Isaac inherited their father's homestead farm. Job also inherited half of his father's blacksmith shop, and he and his brother Abraham inherited rights to a lime kiln.[892]

Job enlisted in the American Revolution at Smithfield in June 1777, when he was just 16 years old. He was stationed in private houses near the seashore for one month, as the enemy was expected to invade Providence, Rhode Island. Later in 1777, he was drafted in Capt. Samuel Day's militia unit. In October he participated in Gen. John Sullivan's failed expedition to recapture Newport, Rhode Island t. He served in several different one-month tours and was frequently called on alarm in 1777 and 1778. He participated in the Battle of Butt's Hill under Gen. Sullivan.[893]

Job was 18 years old in 1778 when he and his widowed mother, Freelove Arnold, were taxed on his father's homestead farm. It included two and one half houses, one-third of a mill, 10 ounces of silverplate, one horse, three horned cattle, ten sheep/goats, three

---

888 Mentioned in father's will written in 1765. Birth date from Revolutionary War pension file S15359.

889 Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

890 Newman, *Dexter Genealogy,* 26.

891 "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1983): 304.

892 Smithfield Probate, 2 (1769 book): 97.

893 Revolutionary War pension file S15359.

swine, 42 acres of pasture to keep five cows, 3 acres under tillage producing 36 bushels of grain, an orchard producing 5 barrels of cider, 12 acres of mowing land producing 5 tons of England hay and 4 tons of fresh hay, and 2 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 57 acres.[894]

He was living at Smithfield in 1790 with a household of two males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and four females.[895] In 1800, his household included two males under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, two females age 16–25, one female age 26–44, one female age 45 or more, and one slave.[896] In 1810, he was still in Smithfield with a household of one male age 10–15, one male age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, one female age 10–15, one female age 16–25, and two females age 45 or more.[897]

"Job Arnold of Smithfield, blacksmith," purchased land in Smithfield from his brother Abraham on 11 May 1792. He and Hannah sold the principal part of the farm lately owned by Abraham Arnold on 23 January 1796.[898]

On 26 September 1810, Job purchased 180 acres of land in Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York.[899] He purchased additional 35-acre and 18-acre plots on 14 December 1813, which he and Hannah sold on 23 June 1826.[900] He was listed at Fairfield in the 1820 census with a household of one male under age 10, one male age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, one female age 10–15, two females age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[901]

---

[894] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 21.
[895] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.
[896] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 514.
[897] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 114.
[898] Smithfield Deeds, 8:327, 500.
[899] Herkimer County Deeds, 5:397.
[900] Herkimer County Deeds, 7:508, 20:161.
[901] U.S, Census, 1820, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 15.

In 1825, the state census showed that Job had a household of eight, including two males eligible to vote and one male subject to militia duty, between the ages of 18 and 25. Job's farm included 120 improved acres and had 44 neat cattle, 11 horses, 64 sheep, and 22 hogs. In the previous year, the household produced 20 yards of fulled cloth, 20 yards of flannel and woolen cloth not fulled, and 80 yards of linen cloth. One female marriage and one male death occurred during the year.[902]

Job applied for a pension for his service in the American Revolution on 11 February 1833 from Fairfield, Herkimer County, at the age of 72. He explained that he had lived at Smithfield for about 28 years after the Revolution and then had removed to Fairfield, where he lived for 22 years. (Thus he moved there about 1811.) He said that Charles Arnold and Thomas Arnold could testify as to his service.[903]

On 1 April 1824, Job sold his son Dexter Arnold two-thirds of the land he had purchased in Fairfield in 1810. On 23 April 1833, Job, Hannah, and their son Dexter sold all of the land purchased in 1810 to Nathan Arnold (#190), a cousin.[904]

Job died at Fairfield 11 April 1834 and is buried in the Eaton's Bush Cemetery, at Eatonville in the town of Fairfield.[905]

Job and Hannah's son Oliver and his family were among the first settlers of Ionia, Ionia County, Michigan, in 1833. Son Dexter Arnold followed soon after and probably brought their widowed mother. Hannah is said to have died there 11 June 1839.[906]

---

[902] New York State Census, 1825, Herkimer County, Fairfield, at *www.rootsweb.com/~nyherkim/census/1825Fairfield1/html.*

[903] Revolutionary War pension file #S15359.

[904] Herkimer County Deeds, 16:403, 28:310.

[905] Eaton's Bush Cemetery, *www.rootsweb.com/~nyherkim/cemeterie/eatoncem.html.*

[906] Rev. E. E. Branch, *History of Ionia County* (Indianapolis, 1916), 2:248.

Children of Job and Hannah (Dexter) Arnold, the first four born at Smithfield:[907]

i. **Keziah[6] Arnold**, born 11 April 1782.

ii. **Barzillai Arnold** ("Bezaleel" in the record), born 1 April 1786.

iii. **Oliver Arnold** (twin), born 16 March 1793.

iv. **Dexter Arnold** (twin), born 16 March 1793.

v. **Phebe Arnold.**

vi. **Nathan Arnold.**

vii. **Freelove Arnold.**

---

[907] The first four recorded at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 90. Names of other children from Greene, "Arnold Family," 166.

137. **MARCY**[5] **ARNOLD** *(Jonathan*[4]*, Thomas*[3]*, Richard*[2]*, Thomas*[1]*)* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 7 January 1739, a daughter of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[908]

She married **EDWARD DEXTER** at Providence, Rhode Island, 6 August 1761.[909] Edward was a son of Stephen and Susanna (Whipple) Dexter.[910]

He was the master of a ship and was lost at sea in January 1770.[911] The record shows he sailed on 25 December 1769, "hath not been heard of since, and thus is dead by the law." He left four young children, including a baby born 2 January of that year. "Edward Dexter of North Providence, mariner," wrote his will 21 April 1769, and it was proved 15 March 1777. The will mentioned his wife, Mary; son, Stephen; and daughters, Susannah and Abigail. His inventory, taken 23 12th month [December] 1777, included two large looking glasses, one decanter with four wine glasses, three dozen wine and other glasses, twenty-five china plates, one chaise, a plow and harness, five cows, two silver tankards, and one dozen spoons.[912]

In 1774, Marcy Dexter was listed in the census at North Providence. Her household included one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[913] She was referred to as "Marcy Dexter, widow," in her father's will dated 13 October 1786. When her daughter Abigail was married 20 February 1791, she was called "Abigail Dexter, of North Providence, daughter of Edward Dexter, deceased."[914]

---

[908] Named as Marcy Dexter, widow, in her father's will. Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."
[909] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 58.
[910] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."
[911] Newman, *Dexter Genealogy,* 53.
[912] North Providence Probate, A:143, 145, 167.
[913] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 232.
[914] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 46.

In 1790, Marcy headed a household in North Providence of one male age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and four females.[915]

Marcy Dexter, "widow of Edward, formerly of North Providence, Rhode Island," died at Smithfield 4 September 1817, in her 76th year (another obituary says in her 79th year).[916] Her will, written at Providence 25 February 1817, was proved 27 October 1817. She mentioned her sons, Stephen and Edward; her daughter Susannah "who is to be supported;" and her grandson Ephraim Comstock.[917]

Children of Edward and Marcy (Arnold) Dexter:[918]

i. **Susannah Dexter**, born 1763.

ii. **Stephen Dexter**, born 1764.

iii. **Abigail Dexter**, born 1767.

iv. **Edward Dexter**, born 2 January 1770.

---

[915] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 32.

[916] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 339; 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 387.

[917] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 10 (1987): 42.

[918] Newman, *Dexter Genealogy*, 53; Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold." Named in their mother's will except for Abigail, who was identified as a daughter of Edward when she married Ephraim Comstock.

138. **WELCOME[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 25 March 1745, a son of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[919]

He married **PATIENCE GREENE** at Warwick, Rhode Island, 11 February 1773. She was born at East Greenwich, Rhode Island, 13 May 1754, a daughter of Samuel and Patience (Cooke) Greene.[920] Since her father died before her marriage, Patience was living at the home of her uncle, Gov. William Greene. It is said that Patience was courted there by many eligible young men, including Nathaniel Greene, who later was a general in the Revolutionary War.[921]

As a young man in Smithfield, Welcome Arnold farmed during summer months. From 1769 to 1771, he was employed by Nicholas and John Brown to procure oak timber in Cumberland and Smithfield, for use in shipbuilding.[922]

Welcome, his father, and his brothers also periodically burned limestone to produce lime. (Lime can also be made by burning sea shells, but lime from limestone is of superior quality.) When limestone is exposed to intense heat in a kiln, it gives off carbon dioxide and water and is converted to quicklime. In the colonial period, quicklime was pulverized and placed in waterproof hogsheads for shipment. It was the chief ingredient of mortar and plaster used in construction and was used in the manufacture of whale oil candles as well as for many other purposes. The best early sources of limestone in New England were in Smithfield.[923]

---

[919] Identified as a son of Jonathan in marriage record. He was also named in his father's will. Date of birth from Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:67.

[920] Louise Brownell Clarke, *The Greenes of Rhode Island* (New York, 1903), 174.

[921] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 12.

[922] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 38.

[923] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 22–39.

In May 1772, Welcome was elected as a deputy to the Rhode Island General Assembly from Smithfield.[924]

It is believed that Welcome was one of the ringleaders of the burning of the British revenue schooner HMS *Gaspee* in June 1772 by Rhode Island patriots, in what is known as "America's First Blow for Freedom." The *Gaspee* ran aground while chasing a local vessel to force it to strike its flag and allow boarding for customs inspections. After the captain of the pursued vessel reported this to a gathering at Sabin's Tavern, between sixty and a hundred young men boarded eight longboats in the harbor, rowed out to the *Gaspee,* overpowered the crew, set them ashore, and burned the vessel. [925]

In 1772 Welcome moved to Providence carrying an agreement signed by all of the lime producers in Smithfield and North Providence to be their exclusive agent for selling lime. In the fall of 1772, Welcome obtained lines of credit of £2,040 from the three largest trading houses in Providence. He set up his business at a store and wharf that had belonged to Henry Paget and had been left to Welcome and his brothers Jonathan and Aza by their father. Their father also gave them his large farm in Smithfield, in lieu of the college education he had provided for their brother Thomas.[926]

In April 1773, Welcome entered into a partnership with Caleb Greene, a tailor and clothier who had a large inventory of English woolens and draperies. This partnership lasted until April 1775. By 1777 Welcome was selling an assortment of East and West India goods at wholesale and retail to over sixty towns in five states.[927]

---

[924] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 7:44.

[925] *Old Providence: A Collection of Facts and Traditions . . .* (Providence, 1918), 12. Welcome's name is included on a historical marker telling of the incident near the original location of Fenner's Wharf, along Water Street in Providence.

[926] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, citing Tristam Burgess, *A Memoir of Welcome Arnold* (Providence, 1850), 4.

[927] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 56–57.

Destruction of the Schooner *Gaspee*

Welcome and Patience were married in 1773. In 1774, their household in Providence included two males under age 16, two males over age 16, one female under age 16, and one female over age 16.[928] In the 1777 military census, Welcome was listed as age 16–60 and able to serve.[929] In 1790, his household included five males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, six females, and two other free persons (presumably free African-Americans)[930] It is not clear who all of these people living with them in 1790 were. Athough Welcome and Patience had a large family, sadly most of their children died as infants or young children. Only four lived to maturity: Mary, Samuel Greene, Eliza Harriet, and Richard James.

During the American Revolution, foreign trade became risky because of the chance of encountering British vessels. Thus with some partners Welcome invested a number of vessels, including twenty-eight sloops, one scow, seven schooners, twenty-five brigantines, and two ships. Most were armed merchantmen, but

---

[928] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 38.

[929] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 68.

[930] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 34.

some were privateer vessels. The trade at first was with the West Indies, but by 1777was focused on Europe, initially with Gothenburg, Sweden, from which cargo was offloaded to small neutral vessels and shipped to Germany and Holland. This trade expanded to include France, Holland, and Spain.[931]

Welcome was active in the Rhode Island General Assembly during and after the Revolution. In March 1776 he signed bills of credit for the colony.[932] In May 1776 he was reimbursed for carrying a message to Gov. Trumbull.[933] In May 1777, records of the General Assembly show,

> It is voted and resolved that Mr. Welcome Arnold be empowered to purchase as much salt, at the stated price, in the state of Massachusetts Bay, as he can procure, for the use of this state; that he send the same into this state; and that he be empowered to draw 1,500 pounds of lawful money out of the general treasury for he purpose aforesaid.[934]

He was elected deputy from Providence or assistant of the General Assembly in 1779, 1780, 1782, 1783, 1784, 1787, and 1790.[935] According to his death notices, he became speaker of the General Assembly.

In September 1779:

> It is voted and resolved that Welcome Arnold, Esq. be and he is hereby appointed for the counties of Newport, Providence and Bristol . . . to receive the small arms, bayonets and cartridge-boxes belonging to this state, unfit for service, and have the same repaired by the Continental armores within this state.[936]

---

[931] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 77, 97, 102, 104.
[932] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 7:475.
[933] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 7:576.
[934] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 8:230.
[935] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 8:529; 9:3, 52, 529, 688; 10:239, 275.
[936] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 8:585.

In March 1780 Welcome was on a committee to devise ways and means for procuring the quota of supplies for the ensuing campaign assigned to Rhode Island by a resolution of Congress.[937]

In September 1780 Welcome told the General Assembly that a vessel belonging to himself and Jonathan and Thomas Arnold was cast away on the east end of Long Island and requested permission for a vessel and two persons to go to the wreck and save as much as possible. It was voted that Capt. John Earl and Mr. Jonathan Arnold be permitted to go with a vessel to the wreck and bring what they could to any part of the state and to bring off with them as many persons as may be necessary to navigate and secure the wreck.[938]

A large house Welcome is said to have built in 1780 is still standing on Planet Street in Providence, used as an apartment building. In 1785, he purchased Sabin's Inn, where the *Gaspee* conspirators met to plan their attack in 1772.[939]

An advertisement in the 14 February 1781 issue of the *American Journal* in Providence reads as follows:

> To be Sold at Welcome Arnold's Store, Old Madeira, Lisbon and Port Wine, by the Pipe, Quarter Cask or single Gallon; West India and New England Rum, Molasses, Green and Bohea Tea, Coffee, Chocolate, Loaf and Brown Sugar, Pimento, black Pepper, Cotton Wool, Card Wire, Wool Cards, Russia and Raven's Duck, Ticklenburg, Oznaburg, new Cordage, Junk, Worming Housing, Deep Sea and Cod Lines, Seam Twine, Sail Needles, Palms, Time Glasses, Rock Salt, Powder, Whale Bone, Letter, Foolscap, and common Writing Paper, Cartridge and Pack Paper, China Cups and Saucers, black and other coloured Silk Handkerchiefs, German, French and English Steel, Ten Penny and Four Penny Nails, by Wholesale and Retail. Also a small assortment of dry Goods, suitable for the season, such as Broad Cloths, Plains,

---

[937] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 9:45.

[938] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island,* 9:223.

[939] Gaspee Virtual Archives, Welcome Arnold, *http://gaspee.org/WelcomeArnold.htm.*

> Coatings, Ratteens, Duroys, Velvets, Drawboys, Baizes, Felt Hats, Worsted Caps, Lutestring, Black Sattins, Sewing Silk, Red, Blue and White Bunting, etc. — Likewise a small sloop's sails and Part of a Ship's Sails and Rigging, part worn.

In 1782 Welcome was appointed by the U.S. Congress to a high court commission in a dispute between Connecticut and Pennsylvania over land in northeastern Pennsylvania.[940]

In 1788, Nicholas Brown and Welcome Arnold spent $25,000 to construct a rum distillery in Providence's Fox Point neighborhood.[941] Other investments included real estate in Vermont, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Ohio, and Georgia.[942]

In 1795, Welcome was registered as the owner of the *Cornelia*, a brig of Providence. Just after his death in 1798, it was registered to Samuel G. Arnold, merchant (his son), Patience Arnold, widow, and Mary Arnold, "seamstress of Providence" (his eldest daughter).[943]

Welcome died at Providence, Rhode Island, 29 September 1798 according to his death notices.[944] "Mrs. Patience Arnold, widow of Welcome, died in this town 2 November 1809, aged 55 years."[945]

As noted in the family Bible, nine children of Welcome and Patience died as infants.

---

[940] *Pennsylvania Archives, 2nd Series, Vol. 7* (Philadelphia, 1854), 696.

[941] Gaspee Virtual Archives, Welcome Arnold, *http://gaspee.org/WelcomeArnold.htm.*

[942] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 193.

[943] Works Projects Administration, *Ship Registers and Enrollments of Providence, Rhode Island, 1773–1939*, 2 vols. (Providence, 1941), 1:235.

[944] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131, 15: United States Chronicle Deaths, 472.

[945] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 134.

Sabin's Inn, Home of Welcome Arnold

Children of Welcome and Patience (Greene) Arnold, the first three recorded in Providence:[946]

i. **Mary[6] Arnold**, born 19 April 1774.

ii. **Samuel Greene Arnold**, born 24 April 1776; died 5 September 1777.

iii. **Samuel Greene Arnold 2nd**, born 20 January 1778.

iv. **Welcome Arnold**, born 1 January 1780; died 15 July 1785.

v. **Thomas Arnold**, born 29 April 1782; died 27 April 1783.

vi. **Harriet Arnold**, born 17 January 1784; died 29 March 1792.

vii. **Cornelia Arnold**, born 11 August 1785; died 23 May 1801.[947]

---

[946] Transcript of record from Bible printed in 1779 in vertical file at Rhode Island Historical Society. Also Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 210, for Mary, the two Samuels, and Cornelia.

viii. **Eliza Arnold**, born 19 October 1787; died 27 August 1788.

ix. **Welcome Arnold**, born 1 March 1789; died 29 May 1789.

x. **George Washington Arnold**, born 18 May 1790; died 16 September 1790.

xi. **Thomas Arnold**, born 2 June 1793; died 26 July 1793.

xii. **Eliza Harriet Arnold** (twin), born 5 October 1796.

xiii. **Richard James Arnold** (twin), born 5 October 1796.

---

[947] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 131.

139. **JONATHAN[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 28 August 1746, a son of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[948]

We have no record that Jonathan married.

Jonathan Arnold Jr. was listed at Smithfield in 1774 with a household of three males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and one female under age 16.[949]

In 1778, Jonathan owned a farm in Smithfield with his brothers Welcome and Aza. It included four houses, one mill, three horses, ten oxen, fourteen horned cattle, thirty-four sheep/goats, eight swine, 100 acres of pasture to keep thirty cows, 11 acres under tillage producing 165 bushels of grain, 4 acres of orchard producing 20 barrels of cider, 5 acres of mowing land producing 25 tons of English hay and 25 tons of fresh hay, 126 acres of wood and wasteland, with 306 total acres, personal estate of £168, and real estate of £2,292.[950] On 6 5th month [May] 1793, Jonathan Arnold Jr. of Providence, merchant, sold Thomas Arnold, merchant of Providence, his one-third interest in the 306-acre farm in Smithfield "which I hold with Welcome and Aza Arnold, bought of Henry Paget."[951]

In 1780, Jonathan invested with his brothers Welcome and Thomas in the construction of a 60-ton brigantine, *Sally,* at a cost of £818. Each brother invested an additional £312 for outfitting and cargo. *Sally* sailed for France in January 1781 with 26 hogsheads of prime Virginia tobacco and 6 tons of lignum vitae. The vessel returned in April with a cargo of dry goods, tea and pepper, china, glassware, and plate glass. This voyage was very profitable, but a second voyage with Rhode Island tobacco was not successful. On a third voyage in 1782, *Sally* was grounded in a

---

[948] Listed as a son of Jonathan and Abigail with no date shown in Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends, 245. Named in his father's will. Birth date from Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."
[949] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 102.
[950] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 18.
[951] Smithfield Deeds, 9:448.

violent squall, and only a portion of the cargo was recovered. This resulted in a loss of Jonathan's investment.[952]

In 1790, his household in Smithfield included four males age 16 or more, four females, and one other free person, presumably an African-American servant.[953]

Jonathan died 11th month [November] 1806, "in the Western Country, among the natives."[954] He died of a fever in the Cherokee Nation in Tennessee.[955] A letter thought to be in the writing of Jonathan's sister, Marcy Dexter, says:

> William Barney saith that he was with Jonathan Arnold at Muschle Shoales on Tennessee River [possibly Muscle Shoals which is now on the Tennesse River in Alabama ?]at the time of his sickness and death, that he was sick and died at the house of Hugh Collins there on or about the last day of October last, that he was sick about six weeks, that he was there he thinks about three weeks before his sickness. Providence, June 25, 1807.[956]

Moses Brown wrote a letter, dated 11 October 1808, that helps explain why Jonathan was traveling in the Tennessee/Kentucky area. A reply about the settlement of Jonathan's estate noted that he had 5,000 acres of land in Kentucky that the administrator intended to sell.[957]

The estate was not finally settled until 1825, and in the meantime a claim for the loss of a vessel — owned apparently jointly by

---

[952] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 106.

[953] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 39.

[954] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265. His birth is in the records of the Providence Friends as a son of Jonathan and Abigail without a date, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends, 245.

[955] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 133.

[956] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold," citing the Dexter Papers at the Rhode Island Historical Society.

[957] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold," citing the Moses Brown Papers at the Rhode Island Historical Society, 2795.

Jonathan Arnold and his nephews Stephen and Edward Dexter — was settled. As a result, a considerable sum of money was divided among Jonathan's heirs, who were all his siblings or their children. Thomas Arnold received one-sixth ($2,659); Aza Arnold the same; Abigail Green the same; the four heirs of Welcome Arnold, the same in the aggregate; and the heirs of Elizabeth Arnold, the same in the aggregate. After litigation, Stephen and Edward Dexter received a settlement of $12,532, probably representing their mother's share plus their share under their joint claim to the proceeds of the settlement for the loss of the vessel.[958]

[958] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold," citing the Moses Brown Papers at the Rhode Island Historical Society, 2795.

140. **AZA[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 18 4th month ("called April") 1748, a son of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[959]

We have no record that Aza married.

In November 1770, Aza and his brothers Jonathan and Welcome purchased a house and land in Smithfield, Rhode Island, built in 1760 by Henry Paget.[960] Aza lived and died in that house. The 306-acre farm in Smithfield owned in 1778 by Aza and his brothers is described in the profile of his brother Jonathan (#139).[961] Although he evidently did not have a family, Aza headed a household of eight persons in 1820, four of whom were engaged in agriculture.[962]

Aza died 19 December 1833.[963] His will, dated 28 June 1830, was proved 18 June 1834. He mentioned his brothers Welcome and Thomas, both deceased; sisters Elizabeth Arnold, deceased, Abigail Greene, and Marcy Dexter, deceased; and Abigail Comstock, deceased daughter of sister Marcy Dexter, deceased. He mentioned a farm once owned by Silas Arnold, Jonathan Arnold, and Samuel Arnold. Any part of the estate "which might fall to Jonathan Arnold" was to be put in a trust in the hands of Samuel Arnold, Jonathan's brother, for Jonathan's benefit. (Jonathan and Samuel have not been identified)."[964] Aza's assets included his rights to his father's farm, his interest in the Paget property, and a store in Providence.[965]

---

[959] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Births and Deaths, 245.
[960] Smithfield Deeds, 6:268.
[961] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 18.
[962] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 203.
[963] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 85.
[964] Smithfield Probate, 5:509. "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 8 (1985): 241.
[965] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."

141. **THOMAS[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 10 11th month [January] 1751, a son of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[966]

He married **MARY BROWN** at the Providence, Rhode Island, Society of Friends 14 1st month [January] 1779.[967] Thomas and Mary announced their intentions of marriage at the Smithfield Society of Friends 26 11th month [November] 1778, and the marriage was approved 31 12th month [December] 1778.[968] Mary was born 25 11th month [November] 1753, a daughter of Obadiah and Mary (_____) Brown of Providence.[969] She was a sister of Moses and John Brown, for whom Brown University was named.

Thomas's father wrote a will on 20 May 1769, when Thomas was 17 years old, providing that Thomas should pursue his studies in the "seminary of learning in Warren, now under the direction of Mr. Manning" for three years.[970]

Thomas graduated from Brown University in 1771. He was a fellow of the university from 1774 to 1782 and a trustee from 1800 to 1826.[971]

He was admitted to the Rhode Island bar shortly after graduation. After marrying an ardent Quaker, however, he is said to have concluded that the practice of law was not consistent with the Quaker faith and withdrew from the profession for several years. He sold his law library to his brother Welcome, who moved it to

---

[966] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.

[967] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Marriages, 236.

[968] Smithfield Friends Women's Monthly Meetings, FHL microfilm #1310.

[969] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181

[970] Jonathan Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 13. Note that Jonathan wrote another will several years later, in 1786.

[971] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."

his counting house, using it for self-study. Toward the end of the century, Thomas returned to the practice of law. He became active in Rhode Island politics and was appointed to the Rhode Island Supreme Court, serving as chief justice from 1809 through 1810.[972]

As a young man, Thomas accompanied Stephen Hopkins, future governor of Rhode Island, to the first Continental Congress in Philadelphia. He wrote his friend and future brother-in-law, Moses Brown, in September 1774 that he was not allowed into the debates, but that he was "informed in confidence" of what transpired. "I am not without hope that they will take the slavery of Negroes under consideration, at least in so far as to remove the obstructions to passing acts of assembly for eradicating this evil."[973]

Mary's father gave her, in his will, his "Farm on the Neck." This was near the Swan Point Cemetery, and she and Thomas evidently lived there. In 1828, their son James, acting for Mary Arnold of New Bedford, Massachusetts, leased "the estate whereon she lately lived." In 1846, James and his sister Anna sold the estate "inherited from their parents, Mary and Thomas Arnold."[974]

Thomas had a number of business pursuits. He was in business with his brother Jonathan in 1785. He was described as a merchant in various deeds. In 1799, he sold a ship of 200 tons lying at the wharf of John Brown. He also had a flourmill at Pawtucket. In addition, between 1794 and 1805 he built seven or eight vessels at Pawtucket.[975]

As a member of the Society of Friends, Thomas took strong stands on the suppression of the slave trade and the welfare of African Americans, as did his friend Moses Brown. On 4 November 1773,

---

[972] Coyle, *Welcome Arnold*, 9, 10, 19.

[973] Letter from Thomas Arnold to Moses Brown, 8 September 1774, at the Rhode Island Historical Society, cited in Charles Rappleye, *Sons of Providence: The Brown Brothers, the Slave Trade and the American Revolution* (New York, 2006), 148.

[974] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."

[975] Chapin, "Family of Jonathan Arnold."

before she and Thomas were married, Mary freed two slaves on.[976] Moses Brown, who later married Mary's sister, Anna Brown, was also active in abolitionism. On 20 February 1789, the Providence Society for the Abolition of the Slave Trade was organized. Thomas was secretary and Moses was treasurer.[977] It was about at this time that the disagreement on this issue between Moses and his brother, John Brown, intensified. Thomas and John Brown exchanged a series of anonymous but easily identified letters discussing the issue of slavery.[978]

Thomas died 8 11th month [November] 1826, "age 74 years, 11 months and 16 days."[979] In spite of his legal training, Thomas neglected to write a will. His daughter, Anna, was appointed to administer the estate. His inventory of 25 December 1826 included 30 volumes of law books, 189 other books, shares in Providence Bank, Providence and Washington Insurance Company, Merchant's Insurance Company, Providence and Norwich Turnpike, Pawtucket Bank, Manufacturers Bank at Pawtucket, and Douglas Turnpike. The value of the shares totaled $12,720, other assets $1,431, and notes receivable $2,377, for a total of $16,528.[980]

An obituary noted that Thomas was one of the earliest graduates of Brown University and a member of the Corporation (governing body of the university), and that he was formerly of Providence, but died at North Providence.[981]

Mary died at New Bedford, Massachusetts, where both of her children lived, 19 February 1829 . She is buried in the Oak Grove Cemetery there, next to her daughter, Anna.[982]

---

[976] Rappleye, *Sons of Providence,* 133.
[977] Rappleye, *Sons of Providence,* 260.
[978] Rappleye, *Sons of Providence,* 260–267.
[979] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.
[980] North Providence Probate, 3:151, 162, 167, 240.
[981] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 239.
[982] *New Bedford Vital Records,* 3:19. The Providence Friends records note that she died at New Bedford without giving the date.

Children of Thomas and Mary (Brown) Arnold:[983]

i. **Anna[6] Arnold**, born North Providence 5 11th month [November] 1779.

ii. **James Arnold**, born North Providence 9 9th month [September] 1781. James moved to New Bedford, Massachusetts, and married into a local wealthy family. When he died in 1868, $100,000 from his estate went to Harvard University and was used to found the Arnold Arboretum in 1872. His family papers are in the archives of the Arboretum.[984]

---

[983] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181; 7: Providence Friends Births and Deaths.

[984] Papers of the Arnold Family 1781–1868: A Finding Aid, Arnold Arboretum Archives of Harvard University, Jamaica Plain, Mass. *http://oasis.harvard.edu/html/ajp00026.html.*

142. **ABIGAIL[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 7 5th month [May] 1754 a daughter of Jonathan and Abigail (Smith) Arnold.[985]

She was 36 years old when she married 48 year-old widower **NATHANIEL "NATHAN" GREENE** of East Greenwich, Rhode Island, at the Smithfield Friends meeting house, according to the *Providence Gazette* of 5 February 1791.[986] He was born at East Greenwich 2 November 1742, the only son of Caleb and Mary (Greene) Greene. He had married, first, Hannah Greene 14 January 1764; she died 11 May 1789, after bearing four children.[987]

Nathan died presumably at East Greenwich, 19 May 1809.[988] Abigail and her eldest surviving son, Caleb, were appointed administrators of Nathan's estate 5 March 1809 (before the alleged date of death). A very detailed inventory valued at $2,600 was taken 30 June 1809, listing items by room of the house. Given the tools and stock of leather listed, Nathan was evidently a shoemaker. Shares of stock were valued at $625, and Nathan held notes receivable from numerous individuals. The probate record lists heirs Caleb Greene; Elizabeth, wife of John Smith; Thomas A. Greene; and Welcome A. Greene. Aza Arnold and Thomas Arnold were listed as guardians of Thomas A. Greene and Welcome A. Greene.[989] On 27 1st month [January] 1816, the heirs sold the family homestead for $2,300. Abigail received $700 in return for consenting to the sale.[990]

Abigail died 9 June 1838, "in her 85th year."[991]

---

[985] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1312. Also Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.
[986] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 482, also at 16: U.S. Chronicle Marriages, 26.
[987] Clarke, *Greenes of Rhode Island,* 193.
[988] Clarke, *Greenes of Rhode Island,* 193.
[989] East Greenwich Probate, 5:130, 147, 220, 305.
[990] East Greenwich Deeds, 12:20, 21.
[991] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 85.

Children of Nathan and Abigail (Arnold) Greene:[992]

i. **Thomas A. Greene**, born 20 12th month [December] 1791; died 13 9th month [September] 1792.[993]

ii. **Caleb Arnold Greene**, born 31 December 1792.

iii. **Thomas Arnold Greene**, born 12 December 1793.

iv. **Welcome Arnold Greene**, born East Greenwich 18 July 1795.[994] Welcome Arnold Greene was the compiler of "Notes on Genealogy of the Arnold Family," cited in this work as Greene, "Arnold Family." Welcome also compiled a similar work on the Greene family, in 1910.

---

[992] Clarke, *Greenes of Rhode Island*, 193.

[993] Greene, "Arnold Family,"167. Not listed in Clarke, *Greenes of Rhode Island*.

[994] *Vital Record of Rhode Island, New Series, Vol. 6, East and West Greenwich R.I. Births . . .*, 19, citing Providence Deeds, 12:19.

143. **LUKE[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 17 August 1738, a son of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold.[995]

He married his cousin **PHEBE ARNOLD** at Smithfield 25 June 1772.[996] The marriage was noted in the 11 July 1772 issue of the *Providence Gazette*.[997] Phebe was born at Smithfield 2 June 1755, a daughter of Seth and Mary (Cargill) Arnold.[998]

Luke was just 23 years old when he showed his first signs of a bad disposition by bringing suit against his uncle, Job Arnold of Smithfield. In December 1761, he withdrew the charges and was ordered to pay the court costs. He and Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield brought charges again in December 1762 regarding title to 25 acres of land, charges that were rejected by the court.[999]

Luke and Phebe lived in that part of Smithfield that later became Lincoln, Rhode Island. They were listed in Smithfield in 1774 with just the two of them and one Native-American servant in the household.[1000] In the 1777 military census, Luke was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1001]

On 28 June 1775, two months after the American Revolution broke out, the Rhode Island General Assembly passed a resolution that additional companies of militia be raised and equipped. Luke was appointed an enlisting officer in Smithfield.[1002]

---

[995] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[996] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[997] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 481.
[998] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 193.
[999] Records of the Providence County Court of Common Pleas at the Rhode Island Judicial Records Center, 4:459, 563.
[1000] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 102.
[1001] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 95.
[1002] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 7:359.

On 6 April 1776, Luke Arnold of Smithfield was appointed guardian of Joseph Dexter of North Providence, who was residing in Roxbury, Massachusetts.[1003]

In 1778, Luke was taxed on a farm with four houses, one-fifth of a lime kiln, a tanyard, two horses, two oxen, ten horned cattle, eighteen sheep/goats, one swine, 15 acres of pasture to keep four cows, 5 acres under tillage producing 90 bushels of grain, 1 acre of orchard producing 6 barrels of cider, 20 acres of mowing land producing 7 tons of English hay and 7 tons of fresh hay, and 55 acres of wood and wasteland, for 192 total acres.[1004]

Luke Arnold of Smithfield and John Jenckes of Providence petitioned the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1785 stating that[1005]

> They are possessed of a quarry in Smithfield . . . yielding excellent marble for various uses; that the price of labor is so high it cannot be worked to any advantage by hand; that they are possessed of a convenient stream of water, for erecting works for sawing the marble into columns, slabs, chimney-pieces and other forms; that the attempt will be attended with great expense and considerable risk; that if it should succeed, it will afford a very valuable article of exportation, and be otherwise advantageous to the state; but there is danger, in case they meet with success, that other works of the same kind may be erected, which may deprive them of the profits they ought to receive from making a first attempt, with so great expense as they necessarily be at; and thereupon they prayed this Assembly to grant them an exclusive right for sawing and working marble by water-machines, for a reasonable period of time.

The exclusive right was granted for a period of seven years.

In 1795, Phebe asked the Smithfield Town Council to prevent her husband from selling his property and abandoning his family. The Town Council agreed to appoint a guardian for Luke and his estate to prevent this from happening. Phebe stated that her

---

[1003] North Providence Probate, A:131.

[1004] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 21.

[1005] Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*, 10:123.

husband had been away to Hoosick, Massachusetts, "near two months . . . that she and her children were a Suffering for the want of the nessecites [*sic*] of Life. . . ." For his part, Luke declared he would pocket the sale of the farm "and bind my children out and Phebe may shirk [shift or fend for herself] for what I care." Luke returned to Smithfield and contested Phebe's action. A series of depositions were presented to the Rhode Island General Assembly in 1796 and 1797. On 24 February 1797, Naaman Aldrich deposed that during the winter (and previous to the appointment of Luke's guardian) he passed the Arnold house and was invited in by Phebe Arnold "to behold the wretched situation of herself and falimy [*sic*]." She requested help in having a guardian appointed for Luke before he could sell the farm. "I consulted my father and brothers and her brother James on the subject. . . . My father and brothers said if Phebe's father and brothers would bring the matter forward they would assist [her] if not they would not meddle in the matter." James Arnold said that Luke had such an ugly disposition he had rather not meddle in the matter.[1006]

Luke and Phebe are buried in the Lincoln, Rhode Island, cemetery where their graves read:

> Luke Arnold Esq. son of Thomas Arnold and Amey his wife died 1 October 1817, aged 79y 4d
>
> Phebe Arnold relict of Luke Arnold Esq. and daughter of Seth Arnold died 30 September 1822, aged 67y 4m 22d[1007]

Luke and Phebe's eldest son, Thomas, was administrator of estate, which was proved 1 April 1823.[1008]

[1006] Rhode Island Archives, Petitions to the General Assembly, 30:80–84. See also *Rhode Island Roots* 15 (1989): 59.

[1007] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 81.

[1008] Smithfield Probate, 4:275.

Children of Luke and Phebe (Arnold) Arnold, recorded at Smithfield:[1009]

i. **Thomas[6] Arnold**, born 14 June 1778.

ii. **Phebe Arnold**, born 4 August 1782.

iii. **Seth Arnold**, born 8 July 1788.

iv. **Edward S. Arnold**, born 21 July 1790.

v. **Shubal F. Arnold**, born 18 July 1792.

vi. **Amy Aldrich Arnold**, born about 1792; died 25 October 1813, in her 21st year.

vi. **Elizabeth Mary Arnold**, born 27 August 1798.

vii. **Mary Arnold**, probably died young.

viii. **Hannah Arnold**, probably died young.

ix. **Martha Arnold.**

[1009] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Records*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 90, except Amy Aldrich Arnold, whose gravestone identifies her as a daughter ("Woonsocket Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 [1995]: 176). The last three are from Greene, "Arnold Family," 171.

144. **AMIE[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born 22 September 1740, at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold.[1010]

She married **STEPHEN BRAYTON** 2 December 1762 at Smithfield.[1011] He was born at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, 11 November 1741, a son of Isaac and Mary (Sanford) Brayton.[1012] In his will dated 19 August 1749, his grandfather, Stephen Brayton of Portsmouth, named grandson, Stephen Brayton, under age 21, son of deceased son Isaac.[1013]

Stephen was in Smithfield for the 1774 census with a household of two males ages 16 or more, two males under age 16, two females ages 16 or more, and three females under age 16.[1014] In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–60 and able to serve.[1015] In 1778, his farm included 3 houses, 18 ounces of silver plate, 2 horses, 2 oxen, 10 horned cattle, 22 sheep and goats, 7 swine, 60 acres of pasture to keep 10 cows, 9 acres under tillage producing 135 bushels of grain, 3 acres of orchard producing 8 barrels of cider, 40 acres of mowing land producing 12 tons of English hay and 8 tons of fresh hay, 88 acres of wood and waste land for a total of 200 acres, with £6 of debt, personal estate valued at £88 and real estate valued at £1,250.[1016]

During the American Revolution Stephen served with the Smithfield militia and was listed on an alarm list dated 1 August 1778.[1017]

[1010] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Records,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1011] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Records,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 20.
[1012] Clifford Ross Brayton, Jr., *Brayton Family History* (Rochester, N.Y., 1978), 65.
[1013] "Portsmouth Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 67.
[1014] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 103.
[1015] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 95.
[1016] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 61.
[1017] Military Papers, Rhode Island Historical Society, Mss. 673, subgroup 2, box 3, folder 85.

Stephen was a justice of the peace in Smithfield from 1779 through 1791.[1018] He was named to inspect claims against the United States in Smithfield in 1789.[1019]

Stephen was at Smithfield in 1790 census heading a household of three males under age 16, three males over 16, and four females.[1020]

In 1793, the family moved to Cheshire, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. Amie died 23 November 1795. On 29 September 1796, Stephen married second Hart Allen, the widow of Captain Jeremiah Brown of Cheshire.[1021] He headed a household at Cheshire in 1800 with one male age 10–15, one male age 45 or more, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[1022]

In 1808 Stephen moved to Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York.[1023] In 1810 he headed a household there of one male age 10–—15, one male age 26–44, one male age 45 or more, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[1024] In 1820 just he and Hart were in the household, both age 45 or more, living next to Stephen's son Daniel.[1025] In 1830, a year before Stephen died, he was probably the male age 80–89 in Daniel's household.[1026]

Stephen died at Fairfield 23 April 1831 and is buried in Eaton's Bush Cemetery at Eatonville, New York.[1027] His will, written at Fairfield 24 June 1819, was proved 20 June 1831. He left his wife,

---

[1018] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island*, 373, 385, 398, 412, 417, 426, 436, 448, 452, 456, 468, 481, 489.
[1019] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island*, 466.
[1020] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 39.
[1021] Brayton, *Brayton Family History*, 65.
[1022] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Cheshire, 156.
[1023] George A. Hardin, *History of Herkimer County, New York* (Syracuse, N.Y., 1893), 521.
[1024] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 211.
[1025] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 14.
[1026] U.S. Census, 1830, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 10.
[1027] Headstone at Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, New York, at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html*

"Harty," one good horse with saddle and bridle, "all the estate she brought to me" and one third of the real estate. He named his son Daniel executor and directed that Daniel pay bequests to the heirs of Stephen's son Isaac: William, John, and Thomas, and Nancy and [can't be read]. Stephen also named as heirs his sons Stephen, Arnold, Joseph, and Jesse, and daughters Mary Angell, Phebe Brown, and Amey Mann.[1028]

Children of Stephan and Amie (Arnold) Brayton, recorded at Smithfield:[1029]

i. **Mary Brayton**, born Portsmouth, 10 August 1764.

ii. **Isaac Brayton**, born Smithfield, 15 October [1765?].[1030]

iii. **Phebe Brayton**, born 19 October 1767.

iv. **Amie Brayton**, born 4 January 1770.

v. **Stephen Brayton**, born 4 June 1772.

vi. **Arnold Brayton**, born 10 August 1774.

vii. **Elizabeth Brayton**, born 29 June 1776; died October 1778.

viii. **Mercy Brayton**, born 5 January 1778; died October 1778.[1031]

ix. **Joseph Brayton**, born 6 December 1779.

x. **Jesse Brayton**, born 3 November 1781.

xi. **Daniel Brayton**, born 7 January 1786.[1032]

[1028] Herkimer County Probate, E:200.
[1029] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Records*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 92.
[1030] The record say 1755, but 1765 is more likely.
[1031] Brayton, *Brayton Family History*, 65.
[1032] Brayton, *Brayton Family History*, 65.

145. **HULDAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 14 November 1742, a daughter of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold.[1033]

She married **ELISHA BROWN** of Glocester, Rhode Island.[1034] He was born at Glocester 11 May 1744, a son of Andrew and Mary (Knowlton) Brown.[1035] Perhaps they were married about 1767, as their eldest child was born in 1768.

There were three Elisha Browns in Glocester at the time of the 1790 census. In earlier censuses, there had been both an Elisha Brown and an Elisha Brown Jr. In this time period, "Jr." was a distinction made for a younger man of the same name as an older man; it did not necessarily indicate a father and son. In the 1778 Glocester tax list, Elisha Brown Jr. was taxed on a farm with his father, Andrew Brown, thus being the Elisha of this profile. The farm had five buildings, one-quarter share in a mill, one slave, four horses, two oxen, fourteen horned cattle, twenty-six sheep/goats, twelve swine, 60 acres of pasture to keep twelve cows, 18 acres under tillage producing 120 bushels of grain, 13 acres of orchard producing 25 barrels of cider, 60 acres of meadow producing 10 tons of English hay and 20 tons of fresh hay, and 149 acres of woodland, for a total of 300 acres, personal estate of £151, and real estate valued at £1,400.[1036] The other Elisha Brown was taxed on a smaller, but substantial, estate of 170 acres.[1037]

[1033] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Records,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.

[1034] Thanks to Gregg Hawes of Towson, Maryland, for identifying the husband of Huldah. No marriage record has been found. Greene, in "Arnold Family," compiled in the 1840s, says that Huldah married a Brown and moved to Glocester. Elisha, a son of Andrew and Mary, married Huldah Arnold, according to Browne, "Chad Brown and His Descendants," *Register* 80 (1926): 172.

[1035] Arnold, *Rhode Island Vital Records,* 3: Glocester Births and Deaths, 47.

[1036] "1778 Glocester Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 56.

[1037] "1778 Glocester Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 19 (1993): 55. Perhaps he was the Elisha Brown, a son of Chad and Sarah (Smith) Brown of Glocester, who married Sarah Olney according to Browne, "Chad Brown and His Descendants," *Register* 80 (1926): 174. According to the *DAR*

In 1774 Elisha Brown Jr. headed a household in Glocester of one male over age 16, one male under age 16, one female over age 16, and three females under age 16.[1038] In the 1777 military census, Elisha Jr. was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1039] In 1782 Elisha Jr. headed a household in Glocester of two males under age 16, four females under age 16, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[1040] Elisha Brown Jr. was granted tavern or liquor licenses in Glocester in 1785, 1787, 1788, and 1789.[1041] In 1790 he was probably the Elisha Brown of Glocester who headed a household of two males age 16 or more, three males under age 16, seven females, and one slave. They were the only family in Glocester to have a slave, and Elisha and his father were listed with a slave in the 1778 tax list.[1042]

Elisha entered into a number of real estate transactions in Glocester, starting with the partition of 360 acres of land with his brothers Obadiah and Jesse in 1760 and continuing through 1816. Included were deeds to his sons Andrew and Arnold.[1043]

Elisha died at Glocester 9 January 1823 and is buried there in a graveyard on Pound Road.[1044] His will, written 19 August 1809 and revised 5 November 1812, was proved 11 March 1823. In addition to the movables she "brought to me at our marriage," Elisha's wife. Huldah, was left two cows and six sheep; a side saddle, bridle, and the use of a horse and carriage; one-third of the real estate, the use of half the dwelling house; and "my great

---

Patriot Index, 3:390, he was born about 1737, thus explaining why Elisha son of Andrew, born in 1744, was called "Elisha Jr."

[1038] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 128.

[1039] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 43.

[1040] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 19.

[1041] Perry, *Brief History of Glocester*, A2.

[1042] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 30.

[1043] Glocester Deeds, 6:471, 473, 475; 7:64, 504; 13:316, 481; 15:96, 631; 16:66; 18:114. A deed to an unidentified son, Esek, was likely from another Elisha.

[1044] 2007 correspondence with Gregg Hawes, including a photograph of Elisha's gravestone.

Bible." Also named were sons Andrew, Thomas, and Arnold, and daughters Mary Steere, Rhoby Burlingame, Anna Fenner, Sarah Medbury, and Phebe Winsor.[1045] The inventory of his estate, set forth 8 June 1826, was valued at $439.[1046]

Huldah died at Glocester 12 May 1829 and is also buried on Pound Road in Glocester.[1047]

Children of Elisha and Huldah (Arnold) Brown:[1048]

i. **Mary Brown**, born 29 October 1768.

ii. **Rhoby Brown**, born 12 October 1771.

iii. **Phebe Brown**, born 19 December 1773.

iv. **Andrew Brown**, born 20 March 1776.[1049]

v. **Thomas Brown**, born 24 May 1778.

vi. **Anna Brown**, born 15 August 1780.

vii. **Sarah Brown**, born 3 October 1782.

viii. **Arnold Brown**, born 13 March 1786.

[1045] Glocester Probate, 4:63. Extracted at *RIGR* 8 (1985): 294.

[1046] Glocester Probate, 4:127.

[1047] 2007 correspondence with Gregg Hawes including a photograph of Huldah's gravestone.

[1048] Named in Elisha's will. Also named with dates of birth in Abby Isabel (Brown) Bulkley, *Chad Brown Memorial* (Brooklyn, N.Y., 1888), 18, citing papers of Col. Brown compiled in 1850 and letters of Alexander Eddy of Chapachet, Rhode Island.

[1049] Bulkley's *Chad Brown Memorial* shows a birth date of 24 May 1778 for Andrew, the same as the date for Thomas. The 1776 date is inked in as a correction in the New England Historic Genealogical Society's copy of the book.

146. **NATHANIEL[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 24 January 1744, a son of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold.[1050]

Nathaniel married first **ELIZABETH SMITH** about 1769 (first child born in 1770). She was born about 1749.[1051] Elizabeth Arnold, wife of Nathaniel, died at Smithfield in her 39th year, as reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 15 March 1788.[1052]

He married second **MARY PHILLIPS** soon after Elizabeth's death.[1053]

In 1774 Nathaniel was in Smithfield with a household of two males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and two females.[1054]

In 1778 he was taxed in Smithfield on two houses, half a mill, two horses, two oxen, three horned cattle, fifteen sheep/goats, eight swine, 30 acres of pasture to keep five cows, 4 acres under tillage producing 40 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 10 barrels of cider, 20 acres of mowing land producing 6 tons of English hay and 7 tons of fresh hay, and 94 acres of wood and wasteland, debt of £5, personal estate valued at £62, and real estate valued at £880.[1055] In 1790 Nathaniel was listed next to his brother Luke in the census, heading a household of two males age 16 or more, one male under age 16, four females, and one free nonwhite.[1056]

On 6 December 1782 Nathaniel and Mary sold a small tract of land in the northerly part of their homestead in Smithfield. On 4

[1050] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1051] Maiden name from microfilm #4 of the Browne Collection. Also shown at Greene, "Arnold Family," 78.
[1052] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 130.
[1053] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.
[1054] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 102.
[1055] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 21 (1995): 18.
[1056] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.

February 1795, Nathaniel and his brother Luke agreed on the partition of 398 acres of land inherited from their father, Thomas.[1057]

On 6 February 1795, Nathaniel and Mary sold "my homestead farm in Smithfield, except certain privileges and rights I have allowed my brother, Luke." The farm included 186 acres of land.[1058]

Soon after, Nathaniel moved to Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, where in 1800 he headed a household of one male under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, one female age 10–15, and one female age 45 or more.[1059] In 1810 his household included two males age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, and one female age 45 or more.[1060] In 1820 his household included one male age 26–44, two males age 45 or more, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more, of which three persons were engaged in agriculture.[1061]

Nathaniel died at Adams 3 May 1829, age 86.[1062] He was of Adams when he wrote his will 11 August 1824; it was probated in 1829. He left his son Amasa his homestead "on which I now live." Also mentioned were Emer Arnold, children of deceased son Smith (Daniel, Susanna, Anna, and Joana), son Daniel, and daughter Amy, wife of Rufus Jenks. The inventory, taken 17 October 1829, included real estate valued at $1,900 out of a total of $3,672, eight cows, two horses, a two-horse wagon, a sleigh, farm equipment, furniture, and bedding.[1063]

[1057] Smithfield Deeds, 9:111, 8:406.
[1058] Smithfield Deeds, 9:356.
[1059] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 135.
[1060] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 161A.
[1061] U.S. Census, 1820, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 72.
[1062] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.
[1063] Berkshire County Probate, 33:175, 214.

Children of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Smith) Arnold:[1064]

i. **Daniel[6] Arnold**, born 10 December 1770.

ii. **Smith Arnold**, born 8 January 1773.

iii. **Amy Arnold**, born 2 July 1775.

Children of Nathaniel and Mary (Phillips) Arnold:[1065]

iv. **Emer Arnold**, born 23 May 1789.

v. **Amasa Arnold**, born 26 June 1791.

vi. **Mary Arnold**, presumably died before 1829, as not mentioned in her father's will.

[1064] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.
[1065] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

147. **PHEBE ANN[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 15 December 1746, a daughter of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold.[1066]

She married **DANIEL ANGELL.**[1067] Daniel was born 22 October 1744, a son of John and Lydia (Winsor) Angell.[1068]

Daniel is listed as a soldier in the American Revolution in the *DAR Patriot Index.*[1069]

In 1774 Daniel's household in Smithfield included two males above age 16, one male under age 16, three females above age 16, one female under age 16, and one African American.[1070]

After Phebe's death, Daniel married, second, Mercy Medbury.[1071]

Daniel Angell of Smithfield, yeoman, wrote his will 7 September 1783; it was proved 5 January 1784. He mentioned his previous wife, Phebe, and his wife, Mercy, "who received all the things on estate she brought to me." Sons Thomas and Ethan were both under age 21. Daughter Freelove Angell received all things "that her mother Phebe brought to me."[1072]

Children of Daniel and Phebe Ann (Arnold) Angell:[1073]

i. **Thomas Angell**, born 27 December 1769.

ii. **Freelove Angell**, born September 1772.

[1066] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1067] Greene, "Arnold Family," 78.
[1068] Avery F. Angell, *Genealogy of the Descendants of Thomas Angell* (Providence, 1872); *RIGR* 3 (1980): 34.
[1069] *DAR Patriot Index,* 1:68.
[1070] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 103.
[1071] Angell, *Descendants of Thomas Angell,* 60.
[1072] "Abstracts of Smithfield Wills, "*RIGR* 12 (1989): 35.
[1073] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88. Also recorded is the birth of Ethan on 27 February 1783, who is shown as a son of Daniel by second wife Mercy in the Angell genealogy, Angell, *Descendants of Thomas Angell,* 60.

148. **ALICE[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Thomas[3], Richard[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 30 May 1748, a daughter of Thomas and Amy (Smith) Arnold.[1074]

She married **WILLIAM GULLEY.**[1075] He was probably the William Gulley born at Smithfield 2 March 1743/4, a son of William and Hannah (_____) Gulley.[1076]

In 1774, William headed a household of eight in Smithfield.[1077] He was listed in the 1777 military census as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1078] His farm in Smithfield was taxed on three houses, one horse, two oxen, ten horned cattle, thirteen sheep/goats, nine swine, 50 acres of pasture to keep eight cows, 12 acres under tillage producing 144 bushels of grain, 2 acres of orchard producing 10 barrels of cider, 30 acres of mowing land producing 7 tons of English hay and 8 tons of fresh hay, and 66 acres of wood and wasteland, for a total of 160 acres valued at £680 plus personal estate of £109.[1079]

In 1790 his household in Smithfield included ten people.[1080] He was at Charlton, Massachusetts, when his daughter Martha was called "of Charlton" when she married in 1795,[1081] and he was a head of household there in 1800.[1082] Perhaps he was the William Gulley who was at Addison, Addison County, Vermont, in 1810.[1083]

[1074] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1075] Greene, "Arnold Family," 78.
[1076] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 145.
[1077] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 106.
[1078] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 70.
[1079] "Smithfield 1778 Tax List," *Rhode Island Roots* 22 (1996): 25.
[1080] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.
[1081] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 63.
[1082] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Charlton, 330.
[1083] U.S. Census, 1810, Vermont, Addison County, Addison, 16A.

Children of William and Alice (Arnold) Gulley:[1084]

i. **Mary Gulley.**

ii. **Martha Gulley.** Born about 1775. Of Charlton, Massachusetts, when she married at Cumberland in 1795.[1085]

iii. **Arnold Gulley.** Born about 1775; married at Charlton in 1800.[1086]

iv. **Alice Gulley.**

[1084] Greene, "Arnold Family," 78.

[1085] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Marriages, 63.

[1086] *Charlton Vital Records*, 163.

149. **ELEAZER[5] ARNOLD** *(John[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was a son of John Arnold of Johnston, Rhode Island.[1087]

He was of Johnston when he married first **MARY ALDRICH** of Smithfield, Rhode Island, 27 April 1780.[1088] She was born 16 July 1761, a daughter of Sylvanus and Dorothy (Smith) Aldrich.[1089]

He married second **ELIZABETH CLEMENCE.**[1090]

Eleazer was listed at Johnston in the 1777 military census as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1091] He was still at Johnston when he married Mary Aldrich in 1780.

After their marriage, Eleazer and Mary were at Franklin, Massachusetts, on 20 March 1781, when their first child was born. They were back at Smithfield when their next children were born in 1782 and 1784.

In 1790 he was probably the Eleazer Arnold who headed a household of one male over age 16, two males under age 16, and one female at Glocester, Rhode Island.[1092] Eleazer Arnold was granted a tavern license in Glocester in 1793 and 1794.[1093] His household at Glocester in 1800 included one male age 10–16, one

---

[1087] Greene, "Arnold Family," 86.

[1088] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[1089] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births, 84. Identified as a daughter of Sylvanus in marriage record. Sylanus married Elizabeth Smith, *Scituate Vital Records,* 1:337.

[1090] Greene, "Arnold Family," 86. Since this was a second marriage, Elizabeth could have been born a Clemence or she could have been the widow of a Clemence. In 1790 Eleazer lived next door to Wright Clemence in Glocester. Wright was born about 1761, probably at Smithfield, a son of Richard and Olney (Wright) Clemens. Elizabeth was probably closely related, but is not identified by Gordon L. Remington and Roberta Stokes Smith in "Thomas Clemens of Providence, Rhode Island," *Register* 155 (2001): 131.

[1091] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 52.

[1092] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 30.

[1093] Perry, *Brief History of Glocester,* A1.

male age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, one female age 10–16, and two females age 26–45.[1094]

Children of Eleazer and Mary (Aldrich) Arnold, the last two possibly children of Elizabeth (Clemence) Arnold:[1095]

i. **Welcome[6] Arnold**, born Franklin, Massachusetts, 20 March 1781; died young.

ii. **George Arnold**, born Smithfield 2 December 1782.

iii. **Jonathan Arnold**, born Smithfield 17 March 1784.

iv. **Welcome Arnold.**

v. **Mary Arnold**, died childless.

[1094] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 365.
[1095] Greene, "Arnold Family," 86. The first three are recorded at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births, 90, with places of birth indicated.

150. **WELCOME[5] ARNOLD** *(David[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born 15 November 1777, a son of David and Mercy (Westcott) (Luet) Arnold.[1096]

He married **MARY PEIRCE** at Woodstock, Connecticut, probably in 1803, as their marriage was noted in the *Providence Gazette* 7 August 1803. The notice said she was from Woodstock, Connecticut,. a daughter of Daniel and Lucy (Bentley) Peirce.[1097] She was born 22 October 1779.[1098]

Welcome is said to have been a mariner, sailing as master of vessels in the East India trade.[1099]

Probably he was the Welcome Arnold who in 1820 headed a household in Woodstock with one male under age 10, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1100]

Welcome died at Providence, Rhode Island, 15 February 1821, in his 44th year.[1101]

Mary was living at Providence in 1850, "age 69," with her daughter Mary E. Arnold, age 34.[1102]

[1096] Date of birth shown on a sampler made by Welcome's daughter, Mary Elizabeth Arnold, in the 1820s. The sampler is reproduced at Ethel Stanwood Bolton, *American Samplers* (Boston, 1921). *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,* 1:23, shows a date of 16 November 1777. Date of birth supported by age at death shown in his obituary and tombstone in North Burial Ground, Providence, Rhode Island, noted in Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project, *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/.*

[1097] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 483.

[1098] Date of birth shown on a sampler made by Welcome's daughter, Mary Elizabeth Arnold, in the 1820s, reproduced in Bolton, *American Samplers.*

[1099] *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,* 1:23, primary source not identified.

[1100] U.S. Census, 1820, Connecticut, Windham County, Woodstock, 286.

[1101] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 136; 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 237.

Mary died at Providence 9 October 1865.[1103]

Children of Welcome and Mary (Peirce) Arnold:[1104]

i. **Christopher Bentley[6] Arnold**, born Woodstock, Connecticut, 13 May 1804.

ii. **Sally James Arnold**, born 4 December 1805.[1105]

iii. **Welcome Arnold**, born 23 March 1809.[1106]

iv. **William Peirce Arnold**, born 3 September 1811.[1107]

v. **Mary Elizabeth Arnold**, born 4 April 1816.[1108]

[1102] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence Ward 3, 173.

[1103] Rhode Island Vital Records, 1865:1006, #28, FHL Microfilm #1839576.

[1104] Children and dates shown on the sampler reproduced in Bolton, *American Samplers*. Also, Greene, "Arnold Family," 181; *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island*, 1:23.

[1105] Tombstone at North Burial Ground, Providence, Rhode Island, noted in Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project, *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/*, says she was born about 1806 and died 14 August 1825.

[1106] Tombstone at Swan Point Cemetery in Providence noted in Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project at *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/*.

[1107] Tombstone at North Burial Ground, Providence, Rhode Island, noted in Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project at *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/*, notes he was born about 1812 and died 25 January 1830.

[1108] Tombstone at North Burial Ground, Providence, Rhode Island, noted in Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Transcription Project at *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/*, notes she was born in 1816 and died 2 October 1866, evidently unmarried.

151. **ABRAHAM[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Keene, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, 6 August 1767, a son of William and perhaps Ann (Hopkins) Arnold.[1109]

He married **LORENE SIPPERLY,** probably at Montgomery County, New York, in the early 1790s. She was born 15 June 1775 in Tryon (now Montgomery) County. Her father, a Revolutionary War soldier, is said to have been killed by Native Americans on his way to join his regiment.[1110]

Abraham moved from New Hampshire to Montgomery County, New York, by the early 1790s. In 1800 he headed a household in Minden, Montgomery County, consisting of one male age 16 or more, one male under age 16, and two females.[1111] His household in 1810 included three males under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, two females age 10–15, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[1112] Minden is on the south bank of the Mohawk River, at the western edge of the county.

Abraham was living at Minden on 4 July 1813 when he purchased land in Gorham, Ontario County, New York. He was "of Gorham" when he purchased additional land there 31 January 1817.[1113] He was listed as the head of a household there in 1820 with one male under age 10, two males age 10–-15, one male age 45 or more, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[1114]

Son Alexander purchased interests in his father's farm, where widow Lorene was still living, from siblings John W. and Abraham of Gorham on 6 March 1837 and 24 March 1837.[1115]

[1109] *History of Ontario County,* 2:262.
[1110] *History of Ontario County,* 2:262.
[1111] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Montgomery County, Minden, 28.
[1112] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Montgomery County, Minden, 52.
[1113] Ontario County Deeds, 26:264, 17:128.
[1114] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Ontario County, Gorham, 224.
[1115] Ontario County Deeds, 62:43, 44.

Abraham died 24 May 1825 and Lorene died September 1859, probably both at Ontario County.[1116]

Abraham Arnold of Gorham had written his will 14 May 1825; it was proved 10 September 1825. He named his wife Lorene and the following children: Sally, wife of Jacob Boddington; Isaac Arnold; Deborah, wife of Edmund Green; Mary Ann, wife of Richard Green; Lorene Arnold; Alexander Arnold; Abraham Arnold; and Wesley Arnold. Executors were wife Lorene, son Isaac, and Chester Loomis.[1117]

Children of Abraham and Lorene (Sipperly) Arnold:[1118]

i. **Sally[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Isaac A. Arnold**, born 15 January 1795.[1119]

iii. **Deborah Arnold**, born about 1800.[1120]

iv. **Mary Ann Arnold**, born about 1805.[1121]

v. **Alexander Arnold**, born about 1806.[1122]

[1116] *History of Ontario County,* 2:262.

[1117] Ontario County Probate, 18:100.

[1118] As named in Abraham's will. However, it is said Abraham had seven sons and five daughters (William Richard Cutter, *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York* [New York, 1912], 659).

[1119] Date in *History of Ontario County,* 2:262. Tombstone in Baldwin's Corners Cemetery, Town of Gorham, says he died 11 January 1866, age 70 years 11 months 26 days.

[1120] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Yates County, Jerusalem: Deborah Green, age 50, in household of Edmund Green.

[1121] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Yates County, Potter: Mary Ann Green, age 45, in household of Richard Green.

[1122] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham, 250: Alexander Arnold, age 44, born New York, head of household that included "Lorina" Arnold, age 75, born in New York.

vi. **Lorene Arnold.**

vii. **Abraham Arnold**, possibly born about 1809.[1123]

viii. **John Wesley Arnold**, born about 1817.[1124]

[1123] U.S. Census, 1850, Michigan, Washtenaw County, Lima: Abraham Arnold, age 41.

[1124] U. S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham, 267, shows a John W. Arnold, age 33, and the 1860 census shows a W. Arnold, age 44.

152. **JONATHAN[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Keene, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, about 1771, a son of William and perhaps Ann (Hopkins) Arnold.[1125]

He married **MARY** _____ before 1794, when their son Anthony was born; she was born about 3 July 1775.[1126]

Jonathan probably moved to Gorham, Ontario County, New York, before the 1820 census, when he headed a household there of one male age 10–15, two males age 18–25, two males age 45 or more, one female under age 10, one female age 10–15, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[1127]

Jonathan died 13 November 1851 and is buried in the Old Cemetery, Gorham, Ontario County, New York. Mary died 27 February 1860, age 84 years 7 months 24 days, and is buried there as well, along with their children Anthony and Delilah.[1128]

Jonathan Arnold of Gorham had written his will 25 March 1851; it was proved 22 December 1851. He named his wife Mary and son James as executors. He left $400 to his granddaughter Harriet Lake, wife of Denisson Lake. The rest of his estate was divided into four shares, bequeathed to son Hiram of Ann Arbor, Michigan; son James of Gorham; daughter Hannah Groesbeck, wife of John I. Groesbeck of Gorham; and daughter Mary Yackley, wife of Josiah L. Yackley of Gorham.[1129]

[1125] Age 79 in 1850, U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham, 271.

[1126] Age 73 in 1850 census. However, her gravestone says she died 27 February 1860, age 84 years 7 months 24 days, which calculates to a birth date of about 3 July 1775.

[1127] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Ontario County, Gorham, 127.

[1128] "Old Cemetery Records," at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyontari/oldgorhamcem.htm.*

[1129] Ontario County Probate, E:354.

Children of Jonathan and Mary (_____) Arnold:

i. **Anthony[6] Arnold**, born about 26 December 1794; died 3 May 1820, age 24 years 6 months 8 days.[1130]

ii. **Hiram Arnold**, born about 1802.[1131]

iii. **Hannah Arnold**, born about 1805.[1132]

iv. **James Arnold**, born about 1808.[1133]

v. **Mary Arnold**, born about 1811.[1134]

vi. **Delilah S. Arnold**, born about 3 January 1815; died 13 May 1840.[1135]

[1130] Described on tombstone in Old Cemetery of Gorham as a son of Jonathan and Mary.

[1131] U.S. Census, 1850, Michigan, Washtenaw County, Scio: age 48.

[1132] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham: Hannah Groesbeck, age 45, with John Groesbeck.

[1133] Named in will. U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham: age 42.

[1134] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Ontario County, Gorham: Mary Yeckley [*sic*]), age 39, with Josiah Yeckley.

[1135] Described on tombstone in Old Cemetery of Gorham as a daughter of Jonathan and Mary.

153. **WILLIAM[5] ARNOLD** *(William[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* is said to have been born at Keene, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, 28 March 1774, a son of William and perhaps Ann (Hopkins) Arnold.[1136]

He married first **ELIZABETH COBB** 6 November 1800. She was born in March 1780. She died probably at Westmoreland, Cheshire County, 9 May 1815.[1137]

He married second **MARGARET SARGENT** at Westmoreland 2 January 1816.[1138] She was born at Leicester, Massachusetts, 8 July 1786, a daughter of Samuel and Mary (Washburn) Sargent of Leicester and Putney, Vermont.[1139]

William held a number of town offices in Westmoreland between 1808 and 1813, including surveyor highways and poundkeeper.[1140]

William was also a tanner and currier.[1141] He and Margaret had moved to Bloomfield, Ontario County, New York, by 1822, when they joined the West Bloomfield Church. In 1830 Margaret transferred her membership to the Second Church.[1142]

William was probably the head of household at Bloomfield in 1830 with one male age 5–9, two males age 20–29, one male age 50–59, one female age 20–29, and one female age 40–49.[1143] (West Bloomfield was formed from a portion of Bloomfield in 1833.)

[1136] Cutter, *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York*, 659.
[1137] Cutter, *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York*, 659.
[1138] Westmoreland Town Records, FHL microfilm #15343.
[1139] Aaron Sargent, *Sargent Genealogy* (Somerville, Mass., 1895), 54; *Leicester Vital Records*, 77.
[1140] Westmoreland Town Records, 299, 308, 316, 326, 335, 347, FHL microfilm #15343. The poundkeeper maintained an enclosure for the town in which were kept farm animals impounded by legal action.
[1141] Sargent, *Sargent Genealogy*, 54.
[1142] "Early Church Records, West Bloomfield Church," *Early Settlers of New York State* 1 (1934): 32, 113.
[1143] U.S. Census, 1830, New York, Ontario County, Bloomfield.

Margaret died 23 April 1834, age 48 years, and is buried in the Pioneer Center West Bloomfield Cemetery.[1144] William died at West Bloomfield 28 February 1853.[1145]

Children of William and Elizabeth (Cobb) Arnold, born at Westmoreland:[1146]

i. **Elizabeth[6] Arnold**, born 6 July 1802.

ii. **William Arnold**, born 25 December 1803.

iii. **Mary Arnold**, born 20 April 1806.

iv. **Emmeline Arnold**, born 10 March 1809.

Son of William and Margaret (Sargent) Arnold:[1147]

v. **Joseph Washburn Arnold**, born Westmoreland 12 November 1820.

[1144] *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyontari/pioneercemwestbloomn.htm.*

[1145] Cutter, *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York*, 659.

[1146] Westmoreland Town Records, FHL microfilm #15343. Also Cutter, *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York*, 659.

[1147] Westmoreland Town Records, FHL microfilm #15343.

154. **ELIZABETH[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born 24 October 1777, a daughter of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Pearce) Arnold of Johnston, Rhode Island.[1148]

She is said to have first married **JAMES COLBY**.[1149] Presumably he died before 1810, when Elizabeth was listed as a head of household in the census.

As Elizabeth Colby of Johnston, she married **BENJAMIN HAWKINS** of Glocester, Rhode Island, 28 July 1816.[1150] According to his Revolutionary War pension application, he was born at Glocester, Rhode Island, 11 May 1760.[1151] He was a son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (_____) Hawkins of Glocester.[1152]

Benjamin volunteered to serve as a private in the American Revolution on 4 December 1776, when Newport, Rhode Island, was invaded by the British. He was just 16 years old. Starting in January 1777, he served for five months, including one month for his father.[1153] The 1777 military census lists both Benjamin Hawkins and Benjamin Hawkins Jr. in Glocester as ages 16–50 and able to serve.[1154] Benjamin served one month more in June 1777 and then enlisted for nine months and sixteen days in July 1777. During that time he fought on Quaker Hill at the Battle of

---

[1148] James Arnold Collection, citing correspondence with Martin B. Arnold of Central Falls, Rhode Island, with information from the Pearce Arnold Bible, FHL microfilm #1839088. Named as Elizabeth Hawkins in her father's will.

[1149] Greene, "Arnold Family," 88.

[1150] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Marriages, 20.

[1151] Revolutionary War pension file #S21263.

[1152] On 5 January 1785 he purchased rights to land in Glocester from Joel and Marcy Hopkins that had belonged to "our honored father, Benjamin Hawkins of Glocester" (Glocester Deeds, 11:50). On 4 June 1792 he purchased rights to his father's land from other siblings (Glocester Deeds, 12:195).

[1153] Revolutionary War pension file #S21263.

[1154] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 39, 40.

Rhode Island. He again served one month each in April and July 1780.[1155]

"Elizabeth Colebee" was listed in the 1810 census at Johnston with a household of two females under age 10 and one female age 26–44.[1156]

On 10 April 1812, Benjamin Hawkins of Glocester, gentleman, sold "all my homestead farm called the Snake Hill Farm in Glocester on Old Killingly Road" for $1,000.[1157]

After their marriage in 1816, Benjamin and Elizabeth were at Glocester in 1820 with a household of two males under age 10, one male age 10–16, one male age 45 or more, two females age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[1158] By 1830 they had one male age 10–15, one male age 60–69, and one female age 50–59.[1159]

Benjamin applied for his pension 7 August 1832 and died 10 January 1837.[1160] He did not leave a will. The inventory of his estate, taken 18 March 1837, included feather beds and bedding, sixteen pewter platters, five "basons," seven earthen dining plates, cups and saucers, and two old spinning wheels. Robert Steere, administrator, filed an accounting 12 August 1837.[1161]

Elizabeth was living just south of Glocester, in Scituate, Rhode Island, on 22 March 1838 when she exchanged two pieces of land in Johnston with her brother Pearce Arnold.[1162]

Elizabeth died 18 September 1838, "in her 61st year," according to a Bible record.[1163] Her will, written 29 August 1838, was proved 22

[1155] Revolutionary War pension file #S21263.
[1156] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston, 95.
[1157] Glocester Deeds, 17:253.
[1158] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 68.
[1159] U.S. Census, 1830, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester.
[1160] Revolutionary War pension file #S21263.
[1161] Glocester Probate, 5:15, 23.
[1162] Johnston Deeds, 10:300, 301.

December 1838. She mentioned her son Oliver Hazard Perry Hawkins; grandsons Orrin W. Andrews and James A. Burlingame; and granddaughter Phebe Burlingame.[1164]

Children of James and Elizabeth (Arnold) Colby:

i. **Katherine Colby**, probably the "Katherine Coather" listed in the abstract of her grandfather's will of 21 August 1819.[1165] Born before 1810.

ii. **Julia Colby.** Born before 1810; perhaps married an Andrews.[1166]

Son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Arnold) (Colby) Hawkins:

iii. **Oliver Hazard Perry Hawkins**, born 1818.[1167]

[1163] James Arnold Collection, citing correspondence with Martin B. Arnold of Central Falls, R.I., with information from the Pearce Arnold Bible, FHL microfilm #1839088.

[1164] "Scituate Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 61.

[1165] On 25 June 1822, "Catherine" was married to James Congdon Burlingame and living at Smithfield, Rhode Island, when she sold an undivided one-quarter of a piece of land in Johnston inherited by Catherine from her grandfather, Jonathan Arnold (Johnston Deeds, 7:410).

[1166] Greene, in "Arnold Family," 181, says Julia married James C. Burlingame. This is not consistent with the deed described earlier, which calls Catherine the wife of James Congdon Burlingame — unless one sister died and James then married the other sister. It is possible that Julia married an Andrews. Grandson Orrin W. Andrews, listed in the will, was born about 1821, age 29, according to U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence, Ward Six, 437. He married at Smithfield 25 February 1841. His eldest child, according to the census, was named Julia.

[1167] Age 32 in U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Scituate. Ancestral File of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints shows date of 21 May 1818, original source not cited.

155. **JOSEPH[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born in Rhode Island 18 April 1779, a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Pearce) Arnold.[1168]

Joseph married **MARY STEERE** in Rhode Island, probably about 1802.[1169] She was born 22 June 1782, a daughter of Reuben and Phebe (Wright) Steere of Rhode Island.[1170]

On 12 September 1801, Joseph, who was 22 years old, purchased a 30-acre farm with a dwelling house in Johnston with his father for $900 from Thomas and Olney Eddy.[1171] On 14 April 1810, Joseph purchased a portion of the farm from his father, and his father purchased a portion from Joseph.[1172] Twelve years later, on 3 May 1822, Joseph Arnold and his wife, Mary — then of Wooster (now Watertown), Washington County, Ohio — sold his brother Pearce Arnold one-quarter of the same land.[1173]

On 1 January 1807, Joseph and several others purchased a parcel of land in Johnston from John Pain for use as a schoolhouse.[1174]

On 22 October 1816, Joseph and Mary mortgaged their farm on the south side of the Killingly Road in Johnston to Richard Sweet

---

[1168] James Arnold Collection, citing correspondence with Martin B. Arnold of Central Falls, R.I., with information from the Pearce Arnold Bible, FHL microfilm #1839088. Named in his father's will.

[1169] Date of marriage estimated from birth of first child in 1803. Her maiden name, Polly Steere, is on a sampler she stitched in July 1793 when she was 11 years old. J. Daniel Paxton has a photograph of the sampler that remains with a descendant.

[1170] Birth date on the sampler. Her tombstone says she was a daughter of Reuben "Stearns" of Rhode Island, in error. The marriage of Reuben Steere of Glocester, R.I., without documentation, is noted at James Pierce Root, *Steere Genealogy* (Cambridge, Mass., 1890), 105. Mary is not listed as a daughter, which is not surprising, as she moved to Ohio long before the book was compiled.

[1171] Johnston Deeds, 2:336.

[1172] Johnston Deeds, 4:163, 195.

[1173] Johnston Deeds, 6:368.

[1174] Johnston Deeds, 4:181.

for $750.[1175] Joseph repaid $500 of the mortgage with payments of $166 per year for three years.[1176]

The deed to mortgage the farm was acknowledged on 9 November 1816l the *History of Washington County, Ohio*, states that Joseph and his family settled there, in Watertown Township, in 1817.[1177] Washington County is in the southeastern corner of the Ohio.

Joseph Arnold was listed in the 1820 census of Wooster (now Watertown), Washington County, Ohio.[1178]

In 1830 the family was living in Watertown. The household included one male age 10–14, two males age 15–19, two males age 20–29, one male age 50–60, one female age 15–19, and one female age 40–50.[1179] In 1840 the household included two males ages 20–29, two males age 30–39, one male age 60–70, one female age 20–29, and one female age 50–60.[1180]

Mary Arnold, "wife of Joseph and daughter of Captain Reuben Stearns [*sic*] of Rhode Island," died 2 April 1848, age 66, and is buried in Stanley Cemetery in Watertown.[1181]

In 1850 Joseph was listed as age 71, born in Rhode Island, living at Watertown with Ephraim Arnold, age 45, born Rhode Island; Eliza Arnold, age 43, born Rhode Island; and Elizabeth Arnold, age 6, born Ohio.[1182] In 1860 he was age 81, living with Eliza, age 49, and Elizabeth, age 16.[1183]

[1175] Johnston Deeds, 5:435.

[1176] Johnston Deeds, 5:437.

[1177] *History of Washington County, Ohio* (Cleveland, Ohio, 1881), 626.

[1178] U.S. Census, 1820, Ohio, Washington County, Wooster, 247. Wooster was an early name for Watertown and should not be confused with Wooster in Wayne County, Ohio.

[1179] U.S. Census, 1830, Ohio, Washington County, Watertown, 331.

[1180] U.S. Census, 1840, Ohio, Washington County, Watertown, 114.

[1181] Stanley Cemetery Records, *www.ohgen.net/ohwashin/stanley.html.*

[1182] U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Washington County, Watertown, 365. Some confusion is caused by another Joseph Arnold, born about 1784, and wife Mary or Marcy, who were living in Johnston, R.I., in 1850 and 1860. In 1850,

Joseph died 21 August 1868 and is buried with his wife in Stanley Cemetery.[1184] His will, dated 8 May 1868, was proved 10 October 1868. His daughter Eliza received Joseph's 7 acres of real estate and $1,000. The remainder of the estate was to be divided between Eliza and her four brothers, Henry S. , Ephraim, Benjamin, and Albert.[1185]

Children of Joseph and Mary (Steere) Arnold:[1186]

i. **Henry Steere[6] Arnold**, born Rhode Island 11 November 1803.

ii. **Ephraim Arnold**, born Rhode Island about 1805 (age 45 in 1850 census).

iii. **Eliza Arnold**, born Rhode Island about 1807 (age 43 in 1850 census).

iv. **Benjamin W. Arnold**, born Rhode Island 4 December 1814.

v. **Albert Arnold**, born Ohio about 1820.

vi. **Mary Ann Arnold**, not named in father's 1868 will.

vii. **William Arnold**, not named in father's will, died childless.[1187]

---

he was age 65 with wife Mary, age 60 (U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston). In 1860 he was age 75 with wife Marcy, age 70 (U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston, 22). He may be the Joseph Arnold whose tombstone in the Arnold and Polk Lot in Smithfield indicates he died 2 November 1868, born about 1794 (Rhode Island Cemeteries Project, *www.RootsWeb.com/~rigenweb/cemetery).* The 1822 deed to Joseph's brother Pearce Arnold provides evidence that the Joseph in Ohio was a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth Arnold.

[1183] U.S. Census, 1860, Ohio, Washington County, Ohio: listed in error as "James Arnold."

[1184] James Arnold Collection. Also *www.ohgen.net/ohwashin/stanley.html.*

[1185] Washington County Probate, at the courthouse in Marietta, Ohio, not filmed by FHL.

[1186] The first five children were named in Joseph's will. According to *History of Washington County, Ohio*, 626, Joseph and Mary had seven children, five boys and two girls. The book names Benjamin and gives his birth date. The name of Mary Ann and Henry S.'s birth date are from 2005 correspondence with Dan Paxton, who claims his sources were a county history, cemetery records, and family Bibles held by relatives.

[1187] Greene, "Arnold Family," 182.

156. **PEARCE[5] ARNOLD** *(Jonathan[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Johnston. Rhode Island, 7 October 1786, a son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Pearce) Arnold.[1188]

He is said to have married first **SARAH** _____ about 1804.[1189]

He married second **MARY "POLLY" BROWN** at Johnston 18 July 1813.[1190] She was born there 18 September 1791, probably a daughter of Obadiah and Sabra (Waterman) Brown.[1191]

Pearce was ensign of the Second Johnston Militia Company from 1812 through 1816.[1192] He was a justice of peace at Johnston from 1815 through 1818, and in 1830, 1833, 1836, 1841, 1843, and 1849.[1193]

On 10 June 1813, Pearce purchased his parents' homestead farm in Johnston for $1,500 and leased it back to them, the lease to be voided after both parents died. [1194] (They died in 1819 and 1821.) Pearce purchased another small parcel of land in Johnston on 22 November 1813.[1195]

On 3 May 1822, Peace purchased 16 acres of land in Johnston from his brother Joseph, who was living in Washington County, Ohio.[1196] On 25 June 1822, Pearce bought another undivided one-

---

[1188] Date of birth from tombstone. Named in his father's will. Place of birth from death record.

[1189] Arnold Collection at Knight Memorial Library, writeup on Pearce Arnold, citing a family Bible record of Obadiah Brown, FHL microfilm #1839088.

[1190] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 17: Providence Phenix Marriages, 54.

[1191] Arnold Collection, writeup on Pearce Arnold, FHL microfilm #1839088. Her death record, however, shows she was a daughter of John and Sarah Brown, Rhode Island Vital Records, 76:1106, FHL Microfilm #1839578.

[1192] Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island,* 2:178, 194, 210, 227, 246.

[1193] Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island,* 2:222, 237, 251, 266, 446, 487, 529, 592, 610, 663.

[1194] Johnston Deeds, 4:232, 233.

[1195] Johnston Deeds, 5:185.

[1196] Johnston Deeds, 6:368.

quarter of the land from his niece Catherine Burlingham, who had inherited it from Pearce's father.[1197]

Pearce was at Johnston in 1820, heading a household of two males under age 10, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 26–44, and one female age 45 or more (probably his mother, who died in 1821).[1198] In 1840 "Paris" Arnold was at Johnston with a household of two males age 10–16, one male age 50–60, two females age 20–30, and one female age 50–60.[1199]

In 1850 "Pierce" Arnold was at Johnston, age 64, a farmer, with wife, Mary, age 59, and Martin B. Arnold, age 11.[1200] In 1860 "Paris" Arnold, age 73, was with William H. Arnold, age 47, in the 4th district of Smithfield, Rhode Island.[1201] In 1870, Pearce Arnold, age 83, was at Smithfield with "Polly" Arnold, age 78.[1202]

Mary died 29 November 1876, at Greenville, a village of Smithfield, age 85 years 2 months 11 days. Pearce died there 3 December 1876, age 90 years 2 months 1 day, and is buried in the Smith lot at Smithfield.[1203]

[1197] Johnston Deeds, 7:410.

[1198] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston, 78.

[1199] U.S. Census, 1840, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston.

[1200] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Johnston, 219.

[1201] U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, 4th district of Smithfield, 61.

[1202] U.S. Census, 1870, Rhode Island, Providence County, 1st and 4th district of Smithfield, 660.

[1203] Rhode Island Cemeteries Project, *RootsWeb.com/~rigenweb/cemetery*. Deaths recorded in Rhode Island Vital Records, 76:1106 and 76:1108, FHL Microfilm # 1839578.

Son of Pearce and Sarah (_____) Arnold:

i. **James[6] Arnold**, said to have been born at Johnston 16 December 1805.[1204]

Children of Pearce and Mary (Brown) Arnold:[1205]

ii. **William H. Arnold**, born 14 January 1814.

iii. **Welcome Arnold**, born 7 May 1817; died 6 November 1833.

iv. **Mary Ann Arnold**, born 2 April 1820; died 6 July 1825.

v **Caroline Elizabeth Arnold**, born 13 June 1822.[1206]

vi. **Catherine Francis Arnold**, born 24 September 1824.

vii. **Joseph Lafayette Arnold**, born 15 September 1826.

viii. **Mary Jane Arnold**, born 1 February 1829; died 9 September 1835.

ix. **Edwin Pearce Arnold**, born 28 September 1831; died 28 August 1833.

x. **Martin Brown Arnold**, born 15 April 1834.

[1204] Called a son of Pearce when he married Maranda Harrison at Johnston 25 May 1842 (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: Johnston Marriages, 5).

[1205] Pearce Arnold Family Bible, cited in James Arnold Collection, from correspondence with Martin B. Arnold of Central Falls, R.I., FHL microfilm #1839088.

[1206] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: North Providence Marriages, 7: "Caroline Pearce Arnold of Pearce of Johnston married Philip Arnold of James of Johnston 31 December 1844." U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence, Smithfield, 372, shows Phillip Arnold, age 26, with Caroline Arnold, age 28.

157. **GEORGE W.[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Johnston, Rhode Island, 29 November 1778, a son of Thomas and Anstis (Thornton) Arnold.[1207]

He married **SOPHIA MASON** 3 November 1795. She was born about 1783 (calculated from her death date), a daughter of Reuben and Hannah (Aldrich) Mason.[1208]

George and Sophia moved to western New York in 1800 and settled in Hartwick, Otsego County, where George practiced medicine.[1209]

Dr. George W. Arnold died 7 March 1838 in the 60th year of his life (gravestone says 8 March, age 59), and he is buried in Hinman Hollow Cemetery at Hartwick.[1210]

Sophia died 9 June 1861, age 78, and is also buried in Hinman Hollow Cemetery.[1211]

Children of George W. and Sophia (Mason) Arnold:[1212]

i. **Reuben M.[6] Arnold**, born about 1800; died 4 October 1857, age 57.[1213]

ii. **Cordelia Arnold.**

iii. **Mary Ann Arnold.**

iv. **George W. Arnold.**

[1207] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Johnston Births and Deaths, 21.
[1208] Isaac N. Arnold, "One Line of the Arnold Family," *Register* 33 (1879): 432.
[1209] Isaac Newton Arnold at *http://virtualology.com/apisaacnewtonarnold.*
[1210] Arnold, *Register* 33 (1879): 432. Gravestone record at Hinman Hollow Cemetery, *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyotsego/cemetery/hinman.htm.*
[1211] Gravestone record at Hinman Hollow Cemetery, *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyotsego/cemetery/hinman.htm.*
[1212] Greene, "Arnold Family," 89.
[1213] Gravestone record at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyotsego/cemeteries.*

v. **Sophia Arnold.**

vi. **Isaac Newton Arnold**, born Hartwick 30 November 1815. U.S. Congressman, early friend and biographer of Abraham Lincoln, president of Chicago Historical Society.[1214]

vii. **Catherine Arnold.**

[1214] Isaac Newton Arnold at *http://virtualology.com/apisaacnewtonarnold.*

158. **MOSES[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born in March 1782, a son of Thomas and Anstis (Thornton) Arnold, of Johnston, Rhode Island.[1215]

Moses is said to have married **CHARITY SHIPPEE**.[1216]

Moses was probably the Moses Arnold who ran the following ad in the *Herkimer [New York] Herald* on 16 August 1808, as he mentions his brother George W. Arnold:[1217]

> LOST, on the road leading from Court-House in Herkimer, through Otsego-Village to the town of Hartwick, a BUNDLE OF PAPERS, containing the following notes, viz: Two signed by Daniel Webster, one by Lonan Bailey, one by Seneca Baker, one by Mills & Belinger, and an Order, signed by John Kerr, with other notes and papers, of no use to any one but the owner. Whoever has found the above described bundle, and will deliver it to Joel Laneton at the Little Falls, George W. Arnold, Hartwick (Otsego County) or to the Printer hereof, shall be handsomely rewarded. Moses Arnold. Herkimer, July 20, 1808.

A Moses Arnold was at North Providence, Rhode Island, at the time of the 1810 census with a household of two males age 26–45, one female under age 10, two females age 10–16, one female age 16–26, two females age 26–45, and one female age 45 or more.[1218]

It is said that Moses moved to Ohio and died on his way from there to the far west.[1219] "Moses Arnold, formerly of Johnston,

---

[1215] Teel Bible Record, printed in 1815, MSS A 5053 at NEHGS.

[1216] Greene, "Arnold Family," 90. This record calls her Charity "Shipper," but that surname has not been found in Rhode Island and there was a large Shippee family in Smithfield and surrounding towns.

[1217] Early American Newspapers, online at *NewEnglandAncestors.org*.

[1218] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, North Providence, 103.

[1219] Greene, "Arnold Family," 90.

Rhode Island, died in Missouri, age 37 years," as reported in the *Rhode Island American* of 26 January 1821.[1220]

Children of Moses and Charity (Shippee) Arnold:[1221]

i. **Maria[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Anstis Arnold.**

iii. **George Arnold.**

iv. **Sophia Arnold.**

[1220] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 20: Rhode Island American Deaths, 535.

[1221] Greene, "Arnold Family," 90.

159. **BETSEY[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born 15 October 1792, a daughter of Thomas and Anstis (Thornton) Arnold.[1222]

She married **NATHAN ROLEN TEEL** at the First Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island, 15 September 1811.[1223] Nathan was probably born about 1785 and was likely a grandson of Caleb and Grace (Rolen) Tell, who were married in 1740 and both died at Providence.[1224]

Betsey died at North Providence, Rhode Island, 28 February 1815, about three weeks after the birth of their son, Benjamin.[1225] A few weeks later, on 24 April, Nathan R. Teel of Providence, housewright, sold a lot in Providence .[1226]

Nathan died soon after, in August 1815. at sea on a passage from Savannah, Georgia.[1227]

Betsey's mother, Anstis (Thornton) Arnold, mentioned her grandson Benjamin Gustavus Teel in her will, written 28 April 1828.[1228]

[1222] Her son Benjamin Gustavus Teel mentioned in her mother's will. Teel Bible Record.

[1223] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Rev. Stephen Gano M.D.'s Marriages, 477, where he was called Richard A. Teel. A newspaper notice of the marriage called him "Nathan R. Teele of Providence and her, Betsey Arnold of North Providence" (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 15: Providence Gazette Marriages, 377).

[1224] John Marshall Raymond, *Genealogies of the Teel Family of New England* (Palo Alto, Calif., 1964), 24.

[1225] Teel Bible Record; place of death from Raymond, *Teel Family of New England,* 24.

[1226] Providence Deeds, 36:563.

[1227] Teel Bible Record.

[1228] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 8:240.

Children of Nathan R. and Betsey (Arnold) Teel:[1229]

i. **Anstis Teel**, no children.

ii. **Benjamin Gustavus Teel**, born 3 February 1815.[1230]

[1229] Greene, "Arnold Family," 183.

[1230] Teel Bible Record. Greene, in "Arnold Family," wrote "Lives in Providence," suggesting that he had direct contact with Benjamin while compiling his records in the 1840s.

160. **CATHERINE[5] ARNOLD** *(Thomas[4], Jonathan[3], John[2], Thomas[1])* was born 13 August 1798,[1231] a daughter of Thomas and Anstis (Thornton) Arnold.[1232]

She married **JOHN BARTON JR.,** as his second wife, at the First Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island, 8 January 1816.[1233] He was born about 1779, according to his tombstone. He was probably a son of John and Persis (Eddy) Barton of Providence.[1234]

John Barton had married first Ann Williams, daughter of Caleb Williams, 18 December 1802.[1235] She died 25 May 1811. Her tombstone says she was born about 1784.[1236]

Catherine's mother, Anstis (Thornton) Arnold, mentioned her daughter, "Catherine Barton, wife of John Barton Jr.," in her will, written 28 April 1828.[1237]

John Barton Jr. was at Providence in 1810 with a household of one male age 16–26, one male age 26–45, three females under age 10, and two females age 16–26.[1238] In 1820 his household included one

---

[1231] Teel Bible Record. Also U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence Ward 6, 455; age 60 in U.S. Census, 1860, Illinois, Logan County, Atlanta Pct., 13; age 75 in U.S. Census, 1870, Illinois, Cook County, Chicago 4W, 138.

[1232] Catherine Barton, wife of John Barton Jr., was mentioned in her mother's will.

[1233] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Rev. Stephen Gano M.D.'s Marriages, 477.

[1234] Eddy, *Eddy Family in America,* 113.

[1235] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 17: Providence Phenix Marriages, 86.

[1236] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 20: Rhode Island American Deaths, 563. Tombstone at Swan Point Cemetery on Blackstone Boulevard in Providence, R.I., Rhode Island Cemeteries Project at *www.RootsWeb.com/~rigenweb.*

[1237] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 8 (1985): 240.

[1238] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence South District, 148.

male age 26–45, two females under age 10, two females age 10–15, two females age 16–25, and one female age 26–45.[1239]

John Barton Jr. died 13 March 1859 and is buried in Swan Point Cemetery at Providence.[1240]

Children of John and Catherine (Arnold) Barton Jr.:[1241]

i. **Catherine Arnold Barton**, born Providence about 21 January 1817.[1242]

ii. **Ann Eliza Barton**, born 1819.

iii. **John Barton**, born 1821.[1243]

iv. **David Barton**, born September 1824; died 25 September 1832, age 8 years 3 days.[1244]

[1239] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence 2nd Ward, 179. He has not been found in the 1850 census. There was a John Barton, constable, age 65, living by himself, but he presumably was the John Barton, policeman, age 70, listed in 1860, which was after John's date of death.

[1240] Tombstone at Swan Point Cemetery, Providence, *RootsWeb.com/~rigenweb.*

[1241] Greene, "Arnold Family," 91, 183, 184.

[1242] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence Ward, 6, 455, lists Catherine A. Davis, age 33, wife of Benjamin Davis, with Catharine Barton, age 53, living with them. Parents (John and Catherine [(Arnold]) Barton) listed on Mass. death certificate, Catherine (Barton) Davis, wife of Benjamin H. Davis, died Weymouth, Mass., 7 October 1901, age 84 years, 8 months and 17 days. Buried in Providence, R.I. Mass. Vital Records, Deaths, 1901: 518, 130.

[1243] Probably the John Barton Jr. born in Rhode Island, age 29, in the U.S. Census, 1850, Massachusetts, Worcester County, Milford, 41.

[1244] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 20: Rhode Island American Deaths, 563, calls him a son of John Barton Jr. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 260, calls him Daniel (tombstone says David), and says he died 24 September 1832, age 8 years 3 days.

v. **William Barton**, born 1825.

vi. **George Barton,** born 1826.

vii. **Emily L. Barton**, born 1835.[1245]

[1245] Living with Catherine Barton, age 14, U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence Ward 6; age 23, married to Samuel A. Briggs, with Catherine age 60 in household, U.S. Census, 1860, Illinois, Logan County, Atlanta Pct., 13; age 33, married to Samuel A. Briggs, with Catherine, age 75 in household, U.S. Census, 1870, Illinois, Cook County, 4 W Chicago, 138.

161. **MARY[5] ARNOLD** (*Benjamin[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 23 April 1741, a daughter of Benjamin and Anna (Dexter) Arnold.[1246]

She married **DAVID STEERE** at the Smithfield Society of Friends 9 11th month [November] 1768.[1247] He was born 20 3rd month [May] 1742, a son of Thomas and Katherine (Comstock) Steere, as recorded at the Providence Society of Friends.[1248]

Shortly after David was married, on 28 August 1769, Thomas Steere of Smithfield "for fatherly love" deeded a 115-acre farm to David, "where he now dwells," in the easternmost part of Glocester, Rhode Island.[1249]

Mary died 18 9th month [September] 1773, less than five years after her marriage. An unnamed daughter was born three months earlier and died after one month.[1250]

David died at Smithfield 22 10th month [October] 1790.[1251] His will, written 6 October 1790, was proved 6 December 1790. He named his daughter Anne, brother Elisha, and sister Rachel.[1252]

Children of David and Mary (Arnold) Steere:[1253]

i. **Anna Steere**, born 25 1st month [January] 1770; died 7 10th month [October] 1792.

ii. **Nathan Steere**, born 16 7th month [July] 1771; died 8 11th month [November] 1787.

iii. **Daughter,** born 9 6th month [June] 1773; died 18 7th month [July] 1773.

[1246] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1247] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 175.
[1248] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Births, 261.
[1249] Glocester Deeds, 8:211.
[1250] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 274.
[1251] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 275.
[1252] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 40.
[1253] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Births, 261, Deaths, 274.

162. **SIMEON[5] ARNOLD** (*Benjamin[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 7 March 1748/9, a son of Benjamin and Anna (Dexter) Arnold.[1254]

He married **FREELOVE OLNEY** 19 June 1772, a daughter of Obediah and Lydia (Hawkins) Olney.[1255] In his will of 17 July 1797, Obediah Olney of Smithfield named his wife Lydia and daughter Freelove Arnold.[1256]

In the 1777 military census, Simeon was in Smithfield, age 16–50, and able to serve.[1257]

The family had moved to Scituate, Rhode Island, by the time their daughter Sarah was born in March 1781. Simeon was listed there in the 1782 census with a household of two males under age 16, three females under age 16, two males age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[1258] On 25 2nd month [February] 1783, Simeon's brother Levi deeded him his right to half of a 120-acre farm in Scituate, which they owned jointly.[1259] Simeon was at Scituate in 1790 with a household of two males over age 16, five males under age 16, and five females.[1260] He served as a justice of the peace in Scituate from 1791 through 1794.[1261]

Simeon's visits to see his father in Smithfield are mentioned in his father's diary. In 1804, he noted that Simeon and his wife and child set off for Scituate in a sleigh.[1262] When his father died in 1810, Simeon inherited his "Great Bible."[1263]

[1254] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1255] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.
[1256] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 13 (1990): 133.
[1257] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 95.
[1258] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census,* 5.
[1259] Smithfield Deeds, 7:398; Scituate Deeds, 7:393.
[1260] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 37.
[1261] Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island,* 1:489, 502, 515, 525.
[1262] Benjamin Arnold Diaries, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 11.
[1263] Smithfield Probate, 3:356.

On 13 December 1810 Simeon deeded land to his sons Russell and Dexter "for love and affection." Son Dexter bought another parcel on 7 December 1819.[1264]

Simeon died at Scituate 29 September 1827, aged 79 years.[1265] He did not leave a will. The inventory of his estate, taken 1 December 1827, included modest assets valued at $378. Claims against his estate include the cost of his last illness, a coffin, and a court judgment of $3,929.[1266]

Children of Simeon and Freelove (Olney) Arnold, recorded at Scituate, Rhode Island, stating that the first five were born at Smithfield, the rest at Scituate:[1267]

i. **Mary[6] Arnold**, born 24 September 1774.

ii. **Jesse Arnold**, born 28 April 1776.

iii. **Elisha Arnold**, born 4 May 1777.

iv. **Anna Arnold**, born 31 January 1779.

v. **Benjamin Arnold**, born 16 February 1780; died 27 December 1782.

vi. **Sarah Arnold**, born 5 March 1781.

vii. **Russell Arnold**, born 6 October 1784.

viii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 22 January 1786.

ix. **Phebe Arnold**, born 11 April 1787.

x. **Dexter Arnold**, born 10 November 1789.

[1264] Scituate Deeds, 10:337, 338, 12:287.

[1265] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 239; 20: Rhode Island American Deaths, 538.

[1266] Scituate Probate, 5:284, 309.

[1267] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Scituate Births and Deaths, 37.

163. **LEVI[5] ARNOLD** (*Benjamin[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 16 11th month [January] 1751, a son of Benjamin and Anna (Dexter) Arnold.[1268]

He married **LYDIA HARRIS** at the Smithfield Society of Friends 4 10th month [October] 1780.[1269] They declared their intentions at the Smithfield Women's Meeting 30 8th month [August] 1780.[1270] She was a daughter of David and Abigail (Farnum) Harris and was born at Uxbridge, Massachusetts, 24 3rd month [March] 1762.[1271] In his will of 19 February 1801, David Harris of Smithfield, gentleman, named his daughter Lydia Arnold.[1272]

On 24 6th month [June] 1773, when Levi was 21 years old, a complaint was made at the Smithfield Society of Friends that he was the father of an illegitimate child. After several weeks of discussions, he wrote a paper asking forgiveness, which the Society accepted, specifying that it be read at a public meeting at the Old Meeting House.[1273] We have no record of the child's name.

On 25 2nd month [February] 1783, Levi's father, Benjamin, deeded him "½ my homestead farm with half the dwelling house, shops, barn, corn crib and other buildings for love and affection and particularly for his conveying by deed to his brother, Simeon, of Scituate, his right to ½ of 120 acres in Scituate."[1274]

Levi was listed at Smithfield in the 1790 census next to his father, Benjamin, as head of a household of two males age 16 or more, five males under age 16, and two females.[1275]

[1268] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 88.
[1269] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Marriages, 162.
[1270] Smithfield Friends Women's Monthly Meetings, FHL microfilm #1310.
[1271] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Births, 245.
[1272] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 84.
[1273] Smithfield Society of Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.
[1274] Smithfield Deeds, 7:398.
[1275] *Heads of Families in the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 38.

Levi Arnold received a Society of Friends certificate of removal from Providence, Rhode Island, to the Oblong Monthly Meeting in Dutchess County, New York, on 24 January 1798. It named children David, Benjamin, Nathan, Ephraim, Simeon, Joseph, Lydia, and Amy, along with wife Lydia.[1276]

However, the record of the births of their children at Providence says they moved to Hartford, Connecticut. A group of Quakers from Dutchess County established a preparative meeting at Hartford around 1800 as a part of the Oblong Monthly Meeting of New York.[1277] Levi was still at Smithfield when he purchased 230 acres of land in Hartford on 7 October 1797, subject to a mortgage.[1278] He was listed at Hartford in 1800 heading a household of one male under age 10, three males age 10–16, two males age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, two females under age 10, one female age 16–26, and one female age 26–45.[1279] His father's diary mentions receipt of a letter from Levi at Hartford in August 1803. It also noted that Levi's wife and Benjamin (their son) came from Nine Partners (Dutchess County, New York) and left her sister in "a very sad state of health."[1280] Levi was at Hartford in 1810 with one male under age 10, three males age 16–25, two males age 26–44, one male age 45 or more, one female age 10–16, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[1281]

When his father died in 1810, Levi inherited his copy of William Penn's *Selected Works*.[1282]

While he was at Hartford, Levi continued to buy land financed with mortgages, which led to a liquidity problem. On 1 January 1820, he sold three parcels of land, totaling over 400 acres, worth $14,250. Apparently that was not enough. On 2 February 1820, the

---

[1276] Doherty, *Settlers of the Beekman Patent*, 2:227.
[1277] Hartford Monthly Meeting website, *www.hartfordquakers.org*.
[1278] Hartford Deeds, 21:371, 646.
[1279] U.S. Census, 1800, Connecticut, Hartford County, Hartford, 234.
[1280] Benjamin Arnold Diaries.
[1281] U.S. Census, 1810, Connecticut, Hartford County, Hartford.
[1282] Smithfield Probate, 3:356.

Harford Superior Court issued a judgment against Levi for $11,671 on behalf of the Middle District Bank. Land was deeded to the bank for this judgment on 24 April 1820.[1283]

By 1820, Levi Arnold was in Poughkeepsie, Dutchess County, New York, with a household of one male age 16–18, one male age 45 or more, one female age 26–44, and one female age 45 or more.[1284]

The Dutchess County Quaker records show that Levi Arnold, his wife, Lydia, daughter Lydia H. Arnold, and son Thomas R. Arnold received a certificate to transfer from the Nine Partners Monthly Meeting to the Oswego Monthly Meeting (also in Dutchess County) on 21 2nd month [February] 1822.[1285]

Levi Arnold was at Poughkeepsie, Dutchess County, in 1830, next to David Arnold (presumably his eldest son), with a household of one male under age 5, one male age 70–80, one female age 20–30, and one female age 60–70.[1286]

Lydia Arnold, wife of Levi, died at Poughkeepsie 1 2nd month [February] 1831.[1287]

Children of Levi and Lydia (Harris) Arnold, the first eight recorded at the Providence Society of Friends:[1288]

i. **David[6] Arnold**, born 26 8th month [August] 1781.

ii. **Benjamin Arnold**, born 26 2nd month [February] 1783.

iii. **Nathan Arnold**, born 25 12th month [December] 1784.

iv. **Ephraim Arnold**, born 15 4th month [April] 1787.

[1283] Hartford Deeds, 40:49, 27:109.
[1284] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Dutchess County, Poughkeepsie.
[1285] Dutchess County Quaker Records, FHL microfilm #873511, Item 1.
[1286] U.S. Census, 1830, New York, Dutchess County, Poughkeepsie.
[1287] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.
[1288] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Births, 245.

v. **Simeon Arnold**, born 15 8th month [August] 1789.

vi. **Joseph Arnold**, born 13 2nd month [February] 1792.

vii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 27 2nd month [February] 1794.

viii. **Amey Arnold**, born 6 10th month [October] 1796.

ix. **Thomas R. Arnold**, mentioned in 1822 Friends record.

164. **ELEAZER[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, probably about 1747, a son of Amos and Sarah (Wilkinson) Arnold.[1289]

Eleazer married **OLIVE CARPENTER** at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 13 April 1766.[1290] She was a daughter of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Butterworth) Carpenter.[1291]

On 14 July 1772, Eleazer purchased 1 acre of land in Cumberland.[1292]

Eleazer Arnold, cordwainer (shoemaker), died at Cumberland 3 January 1773, when he was about 25 years old, leaving three small children. The inventory of his estate, dated 18 January 1773, included clothing, notes receivable from Samuel and David Arnold, and cash due from the town of Smithfield, as well as furniture, raw hides, shoemaker's benches and tools, pewter, stone- and chinaware, earthenware, and meat in a barrel.[1293]

Olive Arnold of Cumberland, widow of Eleazer, died 3 May 1775. The inventory of her estate, taken 5 June 1775, included clothing, furniture, one swine, corn, and rye. Amos Arnold was appointed administrator of her estate.[1294]

[1289] Named in his father's will. Birth date estimated as one year after the birth of a child who died just after birth; this birth year is also early enough to make a 1766 marriage date plausible.

[1290] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland, 8. She was called "Alice" in this record. The name "Olive" appears in the probate records.

[1291] Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield," 1:66.

[1292] Cumberland Deeds, 5:300.

[1293] Cumberland Probate, 5:182.

[1294] Cumberland Probate, 5:222.

Children of Eleazer and Olive (Carpenter) Arnold, born probably at Cumberland, all under age 14 in 1775:[1295]

i. **Lydia[6] Arnold**, born probably by 1767 (figuring from her marriage date); married Nathaniel Scott 1787. Called Lydia Scott in her grandfather's will.

ii. **Joseph Arnold**, born by 1772.[1296]

iii. **Susannah Arnold.**

[1295] Named in the will of their grandfather, Amos Arnold. "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 79.

[1296] Was age 14 by 11 November 1786 when he chose Amos Arnold as his guardian (Cumberland Probate, 6:61).

165. **SUSANNA[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 26 December 1749, a daughter of Amos and Sarah (Wilkinson) Arnold.[1297]

She married **NICHOLAS BROWN** at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 3 June 1770.[1298] He was born 22 October 1749, a son of Nicholas and Hopestill (Whipple) Brown.[1299]

At the outbreak of the American Revolution, 25-year-old Nicholas Brown took his musket, marched to Concord, Massachusetts, and fought in the Battle of Lexington. There he so injured his ankle that the leg had to be amputated. He ever after wore a wooden leg. He became chief elder in the Quaker Church.[1300] In the 1777 Rhode Island military census, Nicholas Brown was listed in Cumberland as age 16–50, unable to serve.[1301]

In 1782, Nicholas headed a household at Cumberland of two males age 15 or under, three females age 15 or under, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[1302]

Nicholas and Susanna deeded land in 1784, 1798, and 1811.[1303]

Nicholas was at Cumberland in 1790 with a household of three males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and three females.[1304] He was at Cumberland at the time of the 1800 and 1820 censuses also.[1305]

[1297] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[1298] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 8.
[1299] Aimee (Huston) Eck, *John Brown, Gentleman of Wannamoisett* (Minneapolis, 1951), 45.
[1300] Eck, *John Brown, Gentleman,* 90.
[1301] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 28.
[1302] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census,* 28.
[1303] Eck, *John Brown, Gentleman,* 45, 90.
[1304] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 27.
[1305] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence, Cumberland, 433; 1820, Rhode Island, Providence, Cumberland, 30.

Susanna died 2 February 1833 and Nicholas died at Cumberland a few weeks later, on 21 July 1833.[1306] He had written his will from Portsmouth, Rhode Island, on 12 January 1833; it was proved at Cumberland 2 September 1833. He mentioned his wife, "Susannah" Brown, and his sons Eleazer Brown; Jabez Brown, deceased, leaving a widow and heirs; and Benjamin Brown. His daughters were Cynthia Sweetland, wife of Oliver; Lydia Ray; and Lucy Headly. He also mentioned John C. Brown, son of Eleazer Brown.[1307]

Children of Nicholas and Susanna (Arnold) Brown, recorded at Cumberland:[1308]

i. **Eleazer Brown**, born 13 October 1773.

ii. **Lydia Brown**, born 23 May 1776.

iii. **Amey Brown**, born 22 November 1778.

iv. **Jabez Brown**, born 15 July 1781; died young.

v. **Benjamin Brown**, born 9 March 1784.

vi. **Jabez Brown**, born 13 August 1786.[1309]

vii. **Lucy Brown**, born 22 August 1788.

viii. **Cynthia Brown.**

[1306] Eck, *John Brown, Gentleman*, 90.

[1307] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 5:33.

[1308] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 86. Cynthia is not in the vital records but is mentioned in her father's will.

[1309] Not in the Cumberland records. Eck, *John Brown, Gentleman*, 90, citing gravestone in Sheldonville, Mass., Cemetery.

166. **RUFUS[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 8 February 1752, a son of Amos and Sarah (Wilkinson) Arnold.[1310]

He married first **NAOMI DOYLE** at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 16 December 1777.[1311] She was born about 1757,[1312] a daughter of Mary (Doyle) Young, wife of Hugh Young. She was mentioned in the 19 January 1777 will of Hugh Young of Cumberland, as "Naomi Doil," daughter of his wife, Mary Young.[1313] (Further proof of the relationship is that on 7 November 1807, Mary Young, widow of Attleborough, Massachusetts, sold 4 acres of land in Cumberland to her grandson, Eleazer Arnold.[1314])

After Naomi died in 1802, Rufus married, second, **NANCY (GLADDING) LISCOMB**. Nancy was born 24 December 1770, a daughter of Daniel and Susannah (Wardwell) Gladding. She had married Nathaniel Liscomb 24 January 1790, by whom she had two children. Nathaniel probably died 30 August 1802.[1315]

On 1 February 1773, Rufus's father deeded him half of a small parcel of land in Cumberland with a small dwelling house with one-quarter of a corn or gristmill and one-eighth of a blacksmith's shop. He was called "an infant under 21 years" even though it was just one week before his twenty-first birthday.[1316] On 10 July 1776, Rufus bought 6 acres of land in Attleborough, just across the border from Cumberland. He bought other land in Cumberland on 7 January 1779 and 2 August 1779.[1317]

[1310] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[1311] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 8.
[1312] Died 15 November 1802, in her 45th year.
[1313] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 3 (1980): 77.
[1314] Cumberland Deeds, 10:145.
[1315] Dorothy Chapman Saunders, "Some Descendants of John Liscomb Jr. of Bristol, R.I." *RIGR* 14 (1990): 233. Also "Cumberland Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 17 (1993): 22, identifies her as the wife of Rufus.
[1316] Cumberland Deeds, 5:233.
[1317] Cumberland Deeds, 5:384; 6:83, 138.

Rufus enlisted in Capt. Elisha Waterman's Minutemen Company 25 August 1775 and went to New Shoreham [Rhode Island] and on an expedition to Rhode Island in December 1775. He served as a private in the Smithfield and Cumberland Rangers under the command of Capt. George Peck in May 1776, October 1777, and October 1779.[1318]

Rufus and Naomi were living at Cumberland in 1782 with a household of three males under age 16, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[1319] Rufus was listed as a head of household in Cumberland near his brothers Enoch, Amos, and Ahab in 1790, 1800, and 1810.[1320]

"Mrs. Naomi Arnold, wife of Mr. Rufus Arnold," died 15 November 1802, in her 45th year. Nancy died 3 April 1815.[1321] Rufus died 7 November 1815 in his 64th year.[1322]

Children of Rufus and Naomi (Doyle) Arnold, recorded at Cumberland.[1323]

i. **Samuel[6] Arnold**, born 24 August 1778.

ii. **Eleazer Arnold**, born 7 July 1780.

iii. **Sarah Arnold**, born 6 January 1782.

iv. **Rufus Arnold**, born 30 July 1785.

[1318] Ray, *Founders and Patriots of the Town of Cumberland,* 17.

[1319] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6.

[1320] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 27; U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 433; 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 63.

[1321] "Cumberland Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 17 (1993): 46.

[1322] "Cumberland Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 17 (1993): 162.

[1323] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.

v. **Welcome Arnold**, born 8 August 1790.

vi. **Mary Arnold**, born 7 February 1793.

Son of Rufus and Nancy (Gladding) (Liscom) Arnold:[1324]

vii. **William Arnold.**

[1324] Greene, "Arnold Family," 94.

167. **ENOCH[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 6 March 1762, a son of Amos and Deborah (Comstock) (Arnold) Arnold.[1325]

He married, first, **LYDIA SWEETLAND** at Attleborough, Massachusetts, 1 May 1783.[1326] She was born at Attleborough 18 October 1762, a daughter of John Jr. and Lydia (Day) Sweetland.[1327] Her elder brother, William, married Enoch's twin sister, Sarah (#168), in 1779.

He was of Cumberland, Rhode Island, when he married, second, at age 67, **MARY (_____) CHEEVER** of Attleborough, a widow, 29 November 1829.[1328]

Enoch Arnold of Cumberland, blacksmith, purchased 23 acres of land in Cumberland on 21 March 1783, just a few days before his first marriage. On 12 January 1784, he exchanged parcels of land in Cumberland with his father.[1329] He inherited his father's blacksmith shop in 1792.

At the time of the 1790 census, Enoch was living at Cumberland near his father and his brothers Rufus and Ahab. His household included one male over age 16, two males under age 16, and three females.[1330]

On 20 June 1804, Enoch Arnold, blacksmith, purchased water privileges on Abbott's Run at Arnold Mills in Cumberland from Eleazer Arnold, trader, of Cumberland (son of his brother Rufus, #166).[1331] On 27 May 1806, Enoch purchased a parcel of land partly in Attleborough, Massachusetts, and partly in Cumber-

---

[1325] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[1326] *Attleborough Vital Records,* 573. Also recorded by Arnold in *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 8.
[1327] *Attleborough Vital Records,* 258.
[1328] *Attleborough Vital Records,* 310.
[1329] Cumberland Deeds, 6:394, 397, 398.
[1330] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 27.
[1331] Cumberland Deeds, 10:74.

land.[1332] On 27 August 1807, he was listed as a blacksmith of Cumberland when he purchased 6 acres of land there.[1333]

In 1800 his household included one male under age 10, one male age 10–16, one male age 26–45, three females under age 10, one female age 10–6, one female age 16–26, and one female age 26–45. In 1810 it included one male under age 10, one male age 16–26, one male over age 45, one female age 10–16, three females age 16–26, and one female over age 45. In 1820 the household had one male under age 10, one male age 16–26, two males age 45 or more, one female under age 10, and two females age 16–26.[1334]

Enoch died before 6 February 1832, when administration of his estate was applied for. Lewis Arnold and William A. Wolcott were appointed administrators. His inventory, dated 7 April 1832, was valued at $855.[1335]

Children of Enoch and Lydia (Sweetland) Arnold (_____):[1336]

i. **Betsey[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Lewis Arnold**, born about 1784 or 1786.[1337]

iii. **Lucy Arnold**, born about 1788.[1338]

iv. **George Arnold**, born 1792.

[1332] Cumberland Deeds, 10:73.

[1333] Cumberland Deeds, 10:75.

[1334] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 433; 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 63; 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 38.

[1335] Cumberland Probate, 16:210, 214, 241.

[1336] Greene, "Arnold Family," 95.

[1337] Age 66 in U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 118. Age 74 in 1860, Cumberland, 1876.

[1338] Married Halsey Walcott per Greene in "Arnold Family."Lucy Walcott, widow, age 62, in household next to Lewis Walcott in U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 118; age 72 in 1860 census, Cumberland, 187.

v. **Nancy Arnold** (twin).

vi. **Cynthia Arnold** (twin).

vii. **Lydia Arnold.**

168. **SARAH[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 6 March 1762, a daughter of Amos and Deborah (Comstock) (Arnold) Arnold.[1339] She was called Sarah Sweetland in her father's will of 10 1st month [January] 1792.[1340]

Sarah married **WILLIAM SWEETLAND** at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 9 December 1779.[1341] Their marriage intentions were recorded at Attleborough, Massachusetts, 2 October 1779.[1342] He was born at Attleborough 3 March 1754, a son of John, Jr. and Lydia (Day) Sweetland.[1343] His sister Lydia married Sarah's twin brother Enoch (#167) in 1783.

William was a minuteman who marched from Attleborough to Roxbury, Massachusetts, on the alarm of 19 April 1775 for a period of fifteen days. He also enlisted as an ensign for five months starting in July 1776 on the alarm caused by the Battle of Bunker Hill. He and one-fourth of the militia of Attleborough marched to Rhode Island from 21 April 1777 through 15 May 1777. He served as a lieutenant for a period of five months starting in July 1778. He again marched on 31 July 1780 to Tiverton, Rhode Island, on an alarm for six days of service plus two days of travel.[1344]

William and Sarah lived at Attleborough, where the births of their children were recorded. William was listed there in 1790 heading a household of three males age 16 or more and five females.[1345]

[1339] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[1340] Cumberland Probate, 6:322.
[1341] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Cumberland Marriages, 8.
[1342] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 574.
[1343] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 258. Date of birth also in Revolutionary War pension file #S17719.
[1344] *Mass. Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 15:300, 301. Also Revolutionary War pension file #S17719.
[1345] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts*, 40.

William was 78 years old and living at Attleborough when he applied for a pension, on 17 August 1832, for his service in the American Revolution.[1346]

Sarah died at Attleborough 8 November 1834, in her 73rd year. William died 9 January 1837, age 82 years.[1347] They are buried in Paine Cemetery in North Attleborough, Massachusetts, just east of Arnold Mills, Cumberland, Rhode Island.[1348]

Children of William and Sarah (Arnold) Sweetland, all except the first recorded at Attleborough:[1349]

i. **Deborah Sweetland**, born about 1780.[1350]

ii. **Arnold Sweetland**, born 21 June 1782; died 4 May 1785.

iii. **Phile Sweetland**, born 27 May 1784.

iv. **Charles Sweetland**, born 29 September 1786.

v. **Bowen Sweetland**, born 11 June 1789; died (by drowning) 5 August 1811.

vi. **William Sweetland**, born 20 December 1791.

vii. **Sarah Sweetland**, born 15 August 1794.

viii. **Lucetta Sweetland**, born 3 December 1797.

[1346] Revolutionary War pension file #S17719.

[1347] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 726.

[1348] Doug Sweetland, *A Partial Genealogy of the Swetland/Sweetland/Sweatland Family of America* (no place of publication, 2003), 564.

[1349] *Attleborough Vital Records*, 255–258. Deaths at 726.

[1350] Sweetland, *Swetland/Sweetland/Sweatland Family* , 564.

169. **AHAB[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 26 June 1764, a son of Amos and Deborah (Comstock) (Arnold) Arnold.[1351]

He married **RUTH HOWARD** as recorded at the Providence Society of Friends in 1786.[1352] She was born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 16 February 1765, a daughter of Samuel and Waitstill (Whipple) Howard.[1353]

Ahab was listed in the 1790 census at Cumberland, Rhode Island, with a household of one male over age 16, three males under age 16, and two females.[1354]

Sometime in the 1790s, Ahab became a merchant, as this letter with his Quaker prose indicates:[1355]

> Letter to William Tallman Jr. Merchant, New Bedford [Massachusetts] from Ahab Arnold, Charleston [South Carolina?] 7d 4m 1797. . . . petition of friend Howland wherein thou mentions thou should have shipped som oil to this market if thee had been any probability it would answer and likewise a consignment to me for sale. I am very much obliged to thee for thy goodwill . . . but am very glad thou did not send me any of it is very dull here and not that only — for there is not anything that will command the cash to any profit for cash is very short.

On 2 2nd month [February] 1807, Ahab Arnold of Cumberland sold a store and barn in Cumberland "on the hill near Arnold's Mills."[1356]

[1351] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.

[1352] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Marriages, 236, Ahab was erroneously called a son of Moses. The record of his children correctly calls him Ahab, son of Amos.

[1353] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 104.

[1354] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 27.

[1355] Rhode Island Historical Society, Mss 9004, vol. 1, folder 69.

[1356] Cumberland Deeds, 10:132.

In 1810 and 1820, Ahab was living in Providence.[1357]

As indicated in various newspaper advertisements, Ahab served as the agent and distributor for certain manufacturing operations, selling at both wholesale and retail. These included the Pomfret Manufacturing Company, Hope Manufacturing Company, Killingly Manufacturing Company, and Providence Woolen Manufacturing Company, mostly makers of textile goods. In March 1816, one of Ahab's sons was in the business, called Ahab Arnold & Son. By June it was known as Ahab Arnold & Sons. In February 1818 he was in partnership with Hezekiah Howe as Arnold & Howe. Among their offerings were 200 barrels of "superfine flour." By 1819 he was operating just as Ahab Arnold at 23 South Water Street in Providence and was selling molasses, cotton, flour, and other merchandise. The advertisements continued through at least April 1825.[1358]

When his son William died 28 July 1824, Ahab was living at 84 Westminster Street in Providence.[1359]

The records of the Providence Society of Friends show that Ruth died 8 4th month [April] 1822, sons William and Barton died in 7th month [July] 1824, and Ahab died 19 11th month [November] 1834, in his 71st year.[1360] The *Providence Gazette* noted Ruth's death, indicating that she was age 57 and a member of the Society of Friends.[1361]

[1357] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, West District, 116; 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence, 186.

[1358] Advertisements in the *Providence Gazette* and the *Rhode Island American,* found searching for "Ahab Arnold" on the Early American Newspapers database.

[1359] *Providence Gazette,* 28 July 1824, found at the Early American Newspapers database.

[1360] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.

[1361] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 136.

Children of Ahab and Ruth (Howard) Arnold:[1362]

i. **William[6] Arnold**, born 9 December 1786.

ii. **Willard Arnold**, born 6 September 1788.

iii. **Barton Arnold**, born 26 February 1790.

iv. **Silence Arnold**, born about 1792.[1363]

[1362] The first three at Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 76; all four recorded without dates at 7: Providence Friends Births, 245.

[1363] Called "Siley" in the Providence Friends records with no date of birth. Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 485, indicates that "Silence Arnold, only daughter of Ahab of this town, married Elisha Howe of Killingly at this town on 22 January 1815." She died 7 February 1869 at Orange, New Jersey, age 77 years, and was buried in Providence. Deaths from the *New York Evening Post* 1801–1890, online database.

170. **AMOS[5] ARNOLD** (*Amos[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Cumberland, Rhode Island, 27 January 1767, a son of Amos and Deborah (Arnold) Arnold.[1364]

He married **MARY NEWELL** at Cumberland 20 August 1797, described in the record as a daughter of Jason Newell.[1365] Mary was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 25 November 1773, a daughter of Jason and Sarah (Spalding) Newell.[1366] Mary probably died before her father wrote his will 6 December 1809, as she was not mentioned. He did, however, list her son, Alfred Arnold.[1367]

As Amos Arnold, merchant, he married, second, **SALLY CAMPBELL** of Attleborough, Massachusetts, at Providence 18 August 1811.[1368] She was born 13 November 1785 at Rehoboth (now Seekonk), Massachusetts, a daughter of John and Hannah (Richardson) Campbell.[1369]

Amos was listed at Cumberland in the 1800 census with a household of one male under age 10, one male age 26–45, two females age 26–45, and one female age 45 or more.[1370] His father had died in 1792 and perhaps his mother and a sister were living with him.

Amos probably moved to Providence, where he married Sally Campbell in 1811. Probably he was the Amos Arnold heading a household there in 1820 of one male under age 10, one male age 26–45, one male over age 45, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–45.[1371]

[1364] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 75.
[1365] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Marriages, 8.
[1366] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Cumberland Births and Deaths, 115 (although the record is in Cumberland, it states she was born in Smithfield).
[1367] "Cumberland Wills," *RIGR* 4 (1981): 92.
[1368] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 17: Providence Phenix Marriages, 54.
[1369] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth,* 77, 570.
[1370] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 432.
[1371] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence, 125.

At a Providence town meeting held in April 1824, Amos was appointed to a committee to "cause such pavements to be taken up in the publick streets in town, and re-laid as they shall think proper."[1372]

Amos, "age 81," Sally, "age 65," and daughter Harriet, "age 25," were listed in Providence in the 1850 census.[1373] He presumably died before 1860, as only Sally is listed in that census.[1374] Sally, listed in the record as "Sarah," died at Providence 28 May 1864 age 78 years 6 months.[1375]

Son of Amos and Mary (Newell) Arnold:

i. **Alfred[6] Arnold**, born about 1798 (age 52 in the 1850 census).[1376] Presumably the male under age 10 in the 1800 census; under age 21 when named in his grandfather's will of 1809.

Children of Amos and Sally (Campbell) Arnold:[1377]

ii. **Thomas Arnold**, born 1812.

iii. **Harriet Arnold**, born 1824.

[1372] *Rhode Island American*, 23 April 1824, Early American Newspapers database.
[1373] U.S. Census, 1850, Providence, Ward I, 53B.
[1374] U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, First Ward of Providence City, 24.
[1375] Rhode Island Vital Records, Deaths, 64:842.
[1376] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cumberland, 101.
[1377] Greene, "Arnold Family," 96.

171. **ESEKIEL[5] (ESEK) ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) is said to have been born 23 May 1746, probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, the eldest son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1378]

He is said to have married **ABIGAIL BAXTER** or **BARRETT** of Western (now Warren), Massachusetts, probably in 1769, based on the birth date of their oldest child.[1379] She was born 16 May 1752.[1380]

Esek moved to Glocester, Rhode Island, with his parents in 1759, when he was a young teenager. In May 1770, he was ensign of the Glocester Third Military Company.[1381] On 1 June 1770, Esek's father deeded him, "for love and goodwill," 34 acres of land in Glocester, "where I now dwell with dwelling house."[1382]

Esek bought land at Pomfret, Connecticut, about 10 miles west of Glocester, 11 January 1775 and 13 April 1776. He sold 110 acres there on 23 January 1777.[1383] On 28 March 1777, he purchased a farm in Western and Brookfield, Massachusetts, about 20 miles northwest of Pomfret.[1384] He was living at Western when he sold a parcel of land in Brookfield on 15 February 1799.[1385]

Esek is said to have served in the American Revolution from Massachusetts.[1386]

[1378] Signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189).

[1379] Anna Clough Sherman, in her manuscript, calls her Abigail Baxter. Greene, in "Arnold Family," 96, calls her Abigail Barrett of Western.

[1380] William Richard Cutter, *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs . . . Massachusetts* (New York, 1910), 4:2297. Year of birth supported by age at death.

[1381] Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island* 1:287.

[1382] Glocester Deeds, 8:447.

[1383] Pomfret Deeds, 6:103, 131, 145.

[1384] Worcester County Deeds, 80:254.

[1385] Worcester County Deeds, 81:237.

[1386] Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.

He was at Western in 1790 with a household of two males age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and six females.[1387]

Esek died at Western 12 November 1805, age 59, and is buried in the South Warren Cemetery.[1388] When he died, his widow, Abigail, was appointed administratrix of his estate. She was succeeded by sons Alfred and Oliver Arnold. An inventory included $2,666 of real estate and $15 of personal estate, including farm animals, two horses, a sleigh and harness, two oxen, tools, grain, barrels of meat, a soap barrel, two side saddles, and five beds with bedding.[1389]

Thankful Arnold, daughter of Esek and a minor above age 14, chose Alfred Arnold (her brother) as her guardian 25 October 1810.[1390] Oliver Arnold, also over age 14, chose Alfred as his guardian 9 April 1811.[1391]

A division of Esek's real estate, including $2,650 for land and $16 for a pew in the meetinghouse, was made 7 January 1812. Children who participated included Joseph (who was outside the Commonwealth), Sally, Anna, Abigail (signed for by Oliver Arnold, legal representative), Alfred, Lucy Gilbert, Thankful, Olive (signed for by Alfred Arnold, guardian), and Rhobe .[1392]

Abigail Arnold, widow of Esek, died at Western 2 February 1810, age 58, and is also buried in South Warren Cemetery.[1393]

[1387] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census of the United States: Massachusetts*, 243.
[1388] *Warren Vital Records*, 157.
[1389] Worcester County Probate, 38:512.
[1390] Worcester County Probate, 218:20.
[1391] Worcester County Probate, 218:21.
[1392] Worcester County Probate, 4:257.
[1393] *Warren Vital Records*, 157.

Children of Esek and Abigail (Baxter) Arnold:[1394]

i. **Joseph[6] Arnold**, born 2 April 1770.

ii. **Sarah (Sally?) Arnold**, born 10 December 1771.

iii. **Anna Arnold**, born 24 March 1774; presumably died young.

iv. **Anna Arnold**, born 30 April 1776.

v. **Alfred Arnold**, born 8 December 1780.

vi. **Rhobe Arnold**, born 13 October 1782.[1395]

vii. **Oliver Arnold**, born 3 January 1785.

viii. **Lucy Arnold**, born 18 February 1787.

ix. **Thanna Arnold**, born 13 May 1789; died young.

x. **Thanna (Thankful?) Arnold**, born 5 April 1791.

xi. **Olive Arnold**, born 2 April 1794.

xii. **Abigail Arnold**, listed in division of real estate.

[1394] Cutter, *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs*, 4:2297. The names of the children, except for the two who died young, appear in the division of real estate at Worcester County Probate, 4:257. The dates of birth are from the Cutter work and have not been confirmed in primary records.

[1395] Called Phebe by Cutter in *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs*. Year of birth supported by death record, "Rhobe Burroughs, wife of David and daughter of "Essek and Abagail Arnold, died 20 December 1849, age 67 (*Warren Vital Records*, 164).

172. **NEHEMIAH[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 15 March 1748, a son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1396]

He married **ALICE BROWN** of Swansea, Massachusetts, in 1774. She was born 12 August 1756, a daughter of James and Mary (Anthony) Brown.[1397] She was a sister of Jonathan Brown, who married Nehemiah's sister, Acsah Arnold (#180).

On 18 November 1771, Nehemiah purchased 45 acres of land in Glocester from his father. He sold 12½ acres of that land 9 April 1774, and on 24 October 1775, he and Alice sold the remaining 32½ acres.[1398]

Nehemiah was listed in the 1777 military census at Scituate, Rhode Island, as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1399] He is said to have served in the American Revolution from Massachusetts.[1400] In 1893 his great-grandson, Henry Tucker Arnold, of Plainfield, Connecticut, was reported to have the gun Nehemiah is said to have used.[1401]

On 19 April 1777, Nehemiah sold 30 acres of land in Scituate to his brother-in-law, William Colwell.[1402] Nehemiah probably lived in the part of Scituate that became Foster, Rhode Island, in 1781. He was a justice of the peace in Foster from 1781 through 1784.[1403]

Nehemiah is said to have been in business with his younger brother, Oliver, who was a sea captain routinely traveling to the

---

[1396] Signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189). Birth date from *Boston Evening Transcript,* 18 August 1920, #8205, citing a family Bible.

[1397] *Swansea Vital Records,* 39.

[1398] Glocester Deeds, 9:181, 182, 309.

[1399] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 83.

[1400] Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.

[1401] *American Ancestry* (Albany, N.Y., 1887–1899), 8:160.

[1402] Scituate Deeds, 6:414.

[1403] Smith, *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island,* 1:399, 413, 418, 428.

West Indies.[1404] This was probably in the 1780s, as Oliver was born about 1762.

He had moved to Providence and described himself as a housewright by 28 December 1785, when he and Alice sold land in Foster to Jonathan Brown of Foster for 125 silver dollars.[1405] On 10 November 1785 he appointed William Colwell of Foster, his brother-in-law, as his "lawful attorney."[1406] He again described himself as a housewright of Providence when signing a note payable with a storekeeper on 18 January 1797.[1407]

Nehemiah was at Providence in 1790 with a household of one male age 16 or more, four males under age 16, and three females.[1408] He was not found in the 1800 or 1810 census. In 1820 his household included one male age 26–44, one male age 45 or more, one female age 26–44, and one female age 45 or more.[1409] In 1830 he was living by himself, age 70–80, on the west side of the river in Providence, adjacent to James Arnold, presumably his son.[1410]

Nehemiah was one of the founders of the First Universalist Society in the Town of Providence, as noted in a document dated 10 April 1821.[1411]

Alice had joined the First Baptist Church in Providence 28 March 1804.[1412] According to her death notice, "Alice Arnold, wife of

---

[1404] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120.
[1405] Foster Deeds, 2:158.
[1406] Foster Deeds, 2:174.
[1407] Nehemiah Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 14.
[1408] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 36.
[1409] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence, 150.
[1410] U.S. Census, 1830, Rhode Island, Providence County, West Side of the River, 106.
[1411] Bayles, *History of Providence County,* 1:458.
[1412] Historical Catalog of the Members of the First Baptist Church, Providence, R.I., online database at *www.NewEnglandAncesters.org.*

Nehemiah, age 68 years, for many years a member of the First Baptist Church, died 18 March 1822."[1413]

Nehemiah Arnold, "born 1748, died 12 March 1833," is buried in the North Burial Ground, Providence.[1414]

Children of Nehemiah and Alice (Brown) Arnold, the first six probably born at Foster, the rest probably at Providence:[1415]

i. **Daniel[6] Arnold**, born 29 January 1775.

ii. **Phebe Arnold**, born in 1776.

iii. **Amy Arnold**, born 7 April 1778.

iv. **Mary Arnold**, born 13 August 1780.

v. **George Arnold**, born 3 October 1782.

vi. **Stephen Arnold**, born 22 September 1784.

vii. **Isaac Arnold**, born 15 May 1789.

viii. **Anthony Arnold**, born 14 May 1791.

ix. **James Arnold**, born 9 August 1793.

[1413] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 18: Providence Phenix Deaths, 237.

[1414] Rhode Island Historical Cemetery Database Index at *www.NewEnglandAncestors.org*.

[1415] *Boston Evening Transcript*, 18 August 1920, #8205, citing a family Bible.

173. **LUCY[5] ARNOLD** *(Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* is said to have been born 5 November 1748, a daughter of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1416]

She married **WILLIAM COLWELL** at Glocester, Rhode Island, 10 May 1772.[1417] He was born at Scituate, Rhode Island, 27 June 1740, a son of John and Margaret (Sprague) Colwell.[1418]

She married second **PHILIP WALKER** before 1811, when she was named as his wife in a deed.[1419] In 1811 Lucy was 63 years old and Philip was about 67.[1420] He was a widower, his wife Amey's death at Scituate in her 59th year having been reported 2 July 1808.[1421] Lucy probably died not long after their marriage, as the marriage of Philip Walker of Scituate to Mrs. Ann Luther was reported 6 November 1813.[1422]

On 4 May 1765 William's father deeded him 94 acres of farmland in Scituate. In 1773 he purchased 13 adjoining acres from his father, and in 1774 he bought 28 acres from William Pierce and 30 acres from Nehemiah Arnold (Lucy's brother). After purchasing 30 acres from his brother Christopher, his farm totaled nearly 200 acres. In 1788 he purchased additional land from Jonathan Brown of Foster (another brother of Lucy's) .[1423]

[1416] Identified as a daughter, as she signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189). Date of birth from secondary sources has not been verified by a primary source.

[1417] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Glocester Marriages, 13. The marriage record calls him a son of John Colwell of Scituate.

[1418] Ruth Eddy, *Robert Cowell of Providence and His Descendants* (Providence, 1936), 21.

[1419] Eddy, *Robert Cowell of Providence,* 21.

[1420] Philip died 5 April 1823, in his 79th year (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 19: Providence Phenix Deaths, 207).

[1421] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 19: Providence Phenix Deaths, 206.

[1422] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 18: Providence Phenix Marriages, 139.

[1423] Scituate Deeds, 5:560; 6:252, 346, 414; 7:236.

In 1774, William was a resident of Scituate with a household of two males over age 16, one female over age 16, and one female under age 16.[1424]

In the 1777 military census, he was listed as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1425] He served in the Continental Service during the American Revolution. His name is on a list of recruits from Providence dated 30 April 1781.[1426]

William Colwell was on the first tax list of Foster, Rhode Island, after division from Scituate dated 21 December 1781.[1427] On 10 November 1785 William Colwell of Foster was appointed as "lawful attorney" by his brother-in-law, Nehemiah Arnold.[1428] He purchased 60 acres of land in Foster on 15 October 1788.[1429] He was at Foster in 1790 with a household of two males age 16 or more, one male under 16, and nine females.[1430]

William died July 1793 and is buried in the John Colwell lot at Foster.[1431] In 1807, Lucy Colwell sold her son Arnold her one-third part of the real estate that she held as her right of dower. The following year, Arnold deeded back to her "60 acres, dwelling house, barn and shop in Foster." Lucy then sold half the farm to her three unmarried daughters, Anna, Amy, and Asha. On 2 February 1811 Anna and Asha sold to Daniel Cornell, the husband of Amy, "1/3 part of the farm that we purchased of our mother, Lucy Walker, wife of Philip Walker."[1432]

[1424] *Census of Rhode Island 1774*, 116.
[1425] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 84.
[1426] Eddy, *Robert Cowell of Providence*, 21.
[1427] "First Tax List of Foster, R.I.," *Rhode Island Roots* 12 (1986): 29.
[1428] Foster Deeds, 2:174.
[1429] Foster Deeds, 1:129.
[1430] U.S. Census, 1790, Rhode Island, Providence County, Foster, 282.
[1431] Rhode Island Cemeteries Project, *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/*.
[1432] Eddy, *Robert Cowell of Providence*, 21.

Children of William and Lucy (Arnold) Colwell:[1433]

i. **Abigail Colwell**, born 1773.

ii. **Patience Colwell**, born 30 June 1775.

iii. **Arnold Colwell**, born 7 October 1776.

iv. **Margaret Colwell**, born 7 September 1779.

iv. **Lovina Colwell**, born August 1780.

v. **Esther Colwell**, born 15 September 1783.

vi. **Anna Colwell**, born 25 May 1786.

vii. **Asha Colwell**, born 10 January 1788.

viii. **Amy Colwell**, born 26 September 1790.

[1433] Eddy, *Robert Cowell of Providence*, 21.

174. **WILLIAM**[5] **ARNOLD** (*Caleb*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Eleazer*[2], *Thomas*[1]) was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 31 May 1751, a son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1434]

He is said to have married **ISCAH MALAVERY** about 1773.[1435] She was born 2 October 1754, a daughter of John and Elizabeth (Comstock) Malavery.[1436]

In the next year, 1774, he was listed at Glocester with a household of one male over age 16 and one female over age 16.[1437]

William and his brother Othniel were both corporals in Capt. Stephen Kimball's Company of Col. Daniel Hitchcock's Regiment in 1775 during the American Revolution.[1438] He enlisted from Glocester for eight months in May 1775. He was stationed at Roxbury and Prospect Hill, near Boston, and was made a sergeant. From April 1776 through June 1781, he was called up as part of the militia nine times, serving a total of 24 months. In August 1778 he was quartermaster of Col. Charles Brown's Regiment during Sullivan's expedition against the Island of Rhode Island. In 1780 he was made a lieutenant of an artillery company.[1439]

On 20 August 1776, William and Iscah sold 100 acres of land in Glocester to Nathaniel Wade for £450, and on the same day he purchased 65 acres "I now dwell on" back from Wade for £400.[1440]

[1434] Signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189). Revolutionary War Pension file #S17243 includes date and place of birth, citing a family Bible.

[1435] *Commemorative Biographical Record of Tolland and Windham Counties, Connecticut* (Chicago, 1903), 1231, primary source not indicated.

[1436] *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* 341.

[1437] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 128.

[1438] Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island,* 21.

[1439] Revolutionary War Pension file #S17243.

[1440] Glocester Deeds, 9:345, 346.

William was a head of household at Glocester in 1782 with two males under age 16, three females under age 16, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[1441] In 1790 he was listed next to his brothers Jabez and Caleb in Glocester with a household of two males age 16 or more, three males under age 16, and five females.[1442]

Iscah is said to have died 4 November 1799.[1443]

William was at Glocester in 1800 heading a household of one male age 10–16, two males age 16–26, one male age 26–45, one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, one female age 10–16, and two females age 16–26.[1444]

He applied for a pension for his Revolutionary War service on 7 August 1832 from Glocester, aged 81 years.[1445]

Williamdied at his home in Glocester 9 May 1836.[1446] His will, written at Glocester 25 April 1836, was proved 11 June 1836. He mentioned sons Nathan Arnold, oldest; David Arnold, second; Caleb Arnold, third; and Elisha Arnold, youngest. He also mentioned daughters Marcy Hopkins, oldest; Lydia Stone, wife of William Stone, second; Patience Alexander, third; Mary Arnold, fourth, who received bedroom furniture; and Sarah Cutler, wife of Thomas Cutler.[1447]

[1441] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 7.

[1442] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 31.

[1443] *Commemorative Biographical Record of Tolland and Windham Counties*, 1231, primary source not indicated.

[1444] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.

[1445] Revolutionary War Pension file #S17243.

[1446] *Commemorative Biographical Record of Tolland and Windham Counties*, 1231, primary source not indicated.

[1447] Glocester Probate, 4:424. Also at "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 10 (1987): 58.

Children of William and Iscah (Malavery) Arnold, as named in the will:[1448]

i. **Nathan[6] Arnold**, born 18 July 1774.

ii. **Mercy Arnold**, born 26 September 1775.

iii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 19 March 1777.

iv. **Patience Arnold**, born 5 April 1779.

v. **David Arnold**, born 21 June 1781.

vi. **Caleb Arnold**, born 5 April 1784.

vii. **Elisha Arnold**, born 30 November 1786.

viii. **Mary Arnold**, born 9 April 1790.

ix. **Sarah Arnold**, born 4 April 1792.

[1448] Dates from *Commemorative Biographical Record of Tolland and Windham Counties*, 1231, primary source not indicated.

175. **JABEZ[5] ARNOLD** *(Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born in 1755 at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1449]

He is said to have first married **LUCINDA HUNTER,** probably about 1776, figuring from the birth date of their eldest child.[1450]

He married, second, **RACHEL PHETTEPLACE** at her father's home in Glocester, Rhode Island, in May 1788.[1451] She was born 14 April 1765, a daughter of Samuel and Ruth (Phillips) Phetteplace.[1452] She is mentioned in Samuel's 12 April 1813 will as his daughter Rachel Arnold.[1453] Rachel's sister Mercy married Edward Arnold (#177), a younger brother of Jabez.

According to a family anecdote, when Jabez and his brother Othniel were marching to the Battle of Bunker Hill, Othniel had a feeling he would be killed. He turned to Jabez and asked, "If I am killed in this battle, will you marry my sweetheart, Rachel Phetteplace? " Jabez promised that he would. Othniel was indeed wounded, and returned to his parents' home in Glocester, Rhode Island, where he died. Instead of marrying Rachel, Jabez is said to have married Lucinda Hunter, by whom he had three or four children. When she died, Jabez did marry Rachel, and they moved to New Berlin, Chenango County, New York. This story was verified by one of their sons, Welcome Arnold, who was born 11 May 1795 and died in February 1891.[1454]

[1449] Birth date from Revolutionary War pension file #W20630 cited in Virgil D. White, *Genealogical Abstracts of Revolutionary War Pension Files* (Waynesboro, Tenn., 1990-1992), 1:79. Parentage from an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester dated 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189).

[1450] Anna Clough Sherman manuscript. Called "Lucinda Hunter" in *Lineage Books . . . Daughters of the American Revolution* 28 (1899): 69, 286; 43 (1916): 178.

[1451] Revolutionary War pension file #W20630.

[1452] Edward G. Phetteplace, *Genealogies of the Phetteplace Family* (Norwich, N.Y., 1983), 73.

[1453] Phetteplace, *Phetteplace Family,* 73.

[1454] Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.

Jabez enlisted from Glocester to serve as a private in Capt. Stephen Kimball's Company of Col. Dan Hitchcock's Regiment on 1 May 1775.[1455] His initial enlistment was for eight months, and he reenlisted for one additional year. He marched to Boston and was stationed at Prospect Hill in Cambridge until the British left Boston. He then went to New York City and Long Island. He was in the hospital at the time of the Battle of Long Island. He participated in the retreat of the American Army in 1776 and was in the Battle of Princeton. He was stationed at winter quarters in Morristown, New Jersey, and was discharged on 1 February 1777. After returning to Glocester, he served two one-month tours with the militia in the fall of 1777.[1456]

Jabez was at Glocester in 1782 with a household of one male under age 16, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[1457] He was there in 1800 with a household of four males under age 10, one male age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, two females age 10–16, and one female age 26–45.[1458]

On 16 April 1783, Jabez purchased 40 acres of land "and the house in which he now dwells" from his father.[1459]

In 1799 Othniel Arnold, the eldest son of Jabez, settled at that part of Norwich, Chenango County, New York, that (in 1807) became New Berlin. Jabez arrived there in 1802 with five sons and two daughters: Benjamin, Thomas, Lucy, Lucretia, Eddy, Jabez, and Samuel. His son Welcome followed in 1805. Jabez settled on a farm about 1¼ miles west of New Berlin.[1460] On 19 June 1806,

---

[1455] Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island*, 21. Book says "Captain Asa" Kimball; pension file #W20630 says "Stephen" Kimball.
[1456] Revolutionary War pension file #W20630.
[1457] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 6.
[1458] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.
[1459] Glocester Deeds, 10:148.
[1460] James H. Smith, *History of Chenango and Madison Counties, New York* (Syracuse, N.Y., 1880), 387.

Jabez Arnold of Norwich sold 109 acres of land there to his brother Caleb.[1461]

He applied for a pension for his Revolutionary War service on 13 August 1832 from New Berlin, Chenango County, New York.[1462]

Jabez died 9 July 1839, "age 99" (but age 84 according to dates in the pension file). Rachel died 31 May 1854, age 89.[1463] Both are buried in the Arnold Cemetery, New Berlin, New York.[1464]

In his will, dated 1 July 1839 and proved 31 December 1839, Jabez Arnold of New Berlin left all real and personal property to his wife, Rachel, who was named sole executor. He named heirs Welcome Arnold; Othniel Arnold; Samuel Arnold; Eddy Arnold; Jabez Arnold; Charles Medbury and Lucretia, his wife; Eleazer Bishop and Belina, his wife; Thomas Arnold; James Arnold; Benjamin Arnold; and Edwin Mills and Rachel, his wife. The residence of the last four children was unknown; all others were in Chenango or Otsego counties, New York.[1465]

Children of Jabez Arnold and his first wife (Lucinda Hunter?) :[1466]

i. **Othniel[6] Arnold**, born about 1777; died 9 July 1851, age 74.[1467]

ii. **Benjamin Arnold.**

iii. **Thomas Arnold.**

[1461] Chenango County Deeds, I:42.
[1462] Revolutionary War pension file #W20630.
[1463] Both dates in Revolutionary War pension file #W20630.
[1464] Arnold Cemetery, New Berlin, at *www.rootsweb.com/~nychenan.*
[1465] Chenango County Probate, D:299.
[1466] John Hyde, *Historical Sketches of Old New Berlin* (New Berlin, New York, 1907), at *www.usgennet.org/usa/ny/county/chenango/hsoldnb.htm.*
[1467] From tombstone at Arnold Cemetery, New Berlin, at *www.rootsweb.com/~nychenan.*

Children of Jabez and Rachel (Phetteplace) Arnold:[1468]

iv. **Lucy Arnold**, born about 1788 (age 57 in 1845).

v. **Lucretia Arnold**, born about February 1790 (turned age 55 in February 1845).

vi. **Samuel Arnold**, born about 1792; died 9 September 1853, age 61, according to tombstone in Arnold Cemetery.

vii. **Welcome Arnold**, born 11 May 1795.[1469]

viii. **Eddy Arnold**, born about 1794 (age 51 in 1845) or 1798 (age 52 in 1850.[1470]

ix. **Jabez Arnold**, born about 1796 (age 49 in 1845) or 1800 (age 50 in 1850).[1471]

x. **William Arnold**, born about 1802; died 3 January 1821, age 18.[1472]

xi. **Belina Arnold**, married Eleazer Bishop; named as heir in father's will.

xii. **James Arnold,** named as heir in father's will.

xiii. **Rachel Arnold**, married Edwin Mills; named as heir in father's will.

[1468] Revolutionary War pension file #W20630 lists Lucy, Lucretia, Eddy, Jabez, Welcome, Samuel, and William along with ages in 1845 for most of them. All except William also listed in Hyde, *Historical Sketches of Old New Berlin*, at *www.usgennet.org/usa/ny/county/chenango/hsoldnb.htm.*

[1469] Hyde, *Historical Sketches of Old New Berlin*, at *www.usgennet.org/usa/ny/county/chenango/hsoldnb.htm.* Also age 55 in 1850 U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Chenango County, New Berlin, 151.

[1470] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Chenango County, New Berlin, 160.

[1471] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Chenango County, New Berlin, 160.

[1472] From tombstone at Arnold Cemetery, New Berlin, at *www.rootsweb.com/~nychenan.*

176. **CALEB[5] ARNOLD** *(Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 5 July 1757, a son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1473]

He is said to have married **MARY ARNOLD,** daughter of Stephen Arnold of Glocester, Rhode Island.[1474] They were probably married just before the 1782 Rhode Island census, when Caleb Arnold Jr. was listed heading a household of one male age 22–49 and one female age 22–49.[1475] Mary was born about 1769, figuring from her gravestone inscription.

Caleb first enlisted as a private in the American Revolution in March 1776, when he was living at Glocester, substituting for Reuben Rounds for a month and a half, stationed at Prospect Hill, Massachusetts, under Gen. George Washington and Gen. Nathaniel Greene. That year he enlisted in a company of light infantry at Glocester known as minutemen, as they were to be ready at all times to be called into service. He was initially a private but was later made a fifer and fife major. His company was activated numerous times from 1776 through 1781, when he continued to serve as fife major. His service totaled 13½ months.[1476]

On 16 April 1783, Caleb's father deeded him 33 acres of land in Glocester, representing "the southerly part of the farm where I now dwell," for £60, calling him "my beloved son."[1477]

Caleb was at Glocester in 1790 heading a household of one male age 16 or more, five males under age 16, and two females.[1478] In

---

[1473] Date of birth from Revolutionary War pension file #S12003. Parentage from an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester dated 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189).

[1474] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120. This Stephen Arnold has not been identified.

[1475] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.

[1476] Revolutionary War pension file #S12003.

[1477] Glocester Deeds, 10:157.

[1478] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island*, 31.

1800 he headed a household of two males under age 10, two males age 10–16, one male age 16–26, one male age 26–45, and one female age 26–45.[1479]

While still living at Glocester, 16 September 1797, Caleb purchased 109 acres of land in Norwich, Tioga County (which the next year became Chenango County), New York.[1480] In 1806, Caleb and Mary moved to the part of Norwich that became North Norwich.[1481] On 19 June of that year, Caleb purchased 109 acres of land in Norwich from his brother Jabez.[1482] They were there in 1810 with a household of one male under age 10, two males age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, and one female age 45 or more.[1483] By 1820 all the younger males in the household had moved on, and Caleb was listed next to his sons Stephen and Peleg.[1484]

In deeds dated 22 May 1808, 6 April 1813, and 9 April 1813, Caleb sold parcels of land in Norwich to his sons Stephen, Peleg, and William.[1485]

Caleb applied for a pension from his Revolutionary War service 13 February 1833 as a resident of Norwich, Chenango County, age 75.[1486]

Caleb and Mary are buried in White Store Cemetery at Norwich. He died in 1838, age 81 years, and she in 1841, age 81 years.[1487]

Children of Caleb and Mary (Arnold) Arnold:[1488]

[1479] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.
[1480] Chenango County Deeds, E:545.
[1481] Revolutionary War pension file S12003.
[1482] Chenango County Deeds, I:42.
[1483] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Chenango County, Norwich, 122.
[1484] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Chenango County, Norwich, 211.
[1485] Chenango County Deeds, O:25, QQ:208, 311.
[1486] Revolutionary War pension file S12003.
[1487] White Store Cemetery, *www.usgennet.org/usa/ny/county/chenango/Cemetery/whitestr.htm.*

i. **Stephen[6] Arnold.**

ii. **William Arnold**, probably born about 1785.[1489]

iii. **Peleg Arnold**, born Rhode Island about 1788 (age 61 in 1850 census).[1490]

iv. **John Arnold.**

v. **James Arnold.**

[1488] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120. The last two are from Greene, "Arnold Family," 98.

[1489] Probably the William Arnold who died in 1846, age 61 years, according to his tombstone and is buried at the White Store Cemetery along with his parents.

[1490] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Chenango County, Norwich. Also buried in the White Store Cemetery where his tombstone says, "died 1865, age 77 years."

177. **EDWARD[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) is said to have been born at Glocester, Rhode Island, 26 October 1759, a son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1491]

He married **MERCY PHETTEPLACE** at her father's home in Glocester in January 1782.[1492] She was born 29 April 1763, a daughter of Samuel and Ruth (Phillips) Phetteplace.[1493] Her sister Rachel married Edward's older brother Jabez (#75).

Edward was 17 years old when he enlisted as a drummer in the American Revolution on 14 May 1777. He fought at the Battle of Red Bank in New Jersey on 21 October 1777, when Fort Mercer on the Delaware River was unsuccessfully attacked by Hessian troops. He was at the Battle of Monmouth in June 1778. He fought at the Battle on Rhode Island in 1779 under Gen. John Sullivan.[1494]

Edward and Mercy were living at Glocester just after their marriage, when the 1782 Rhode Island census was taken.[1495]

They settled in Herkimer Township (probably the portion that was set off as part of Little Falls in 1829), Herkimer County, New York, by the time of the 1790 census, which listed them there with

---

[1491] Signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189). Year of birth supported by statement in Revolutionary War pension file #W20631 that he was age 58 on 25 April 1818.

[1492] Statements by those who attended the wedding, in Revolutionary War pension file #W20631.

[1493] Phetteplace, *Phetteplace Family*, 73, 120. Revolutionary War pension file #W20631, BLW #7087-160-55, cited in White, *Genealogical Abstracts of Revolutionary War Pension Files*, 1:79.

[1494] Revolutionary War pension file #W20631. See also Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island*, 192. It was said he was the first to climb the abatis at Yorktown (Anna Clough Sherman manuscript). However, he did not mention the Battle of Yorktown in his pension application. It took place in October 1781, and Edward said he was discharged on 7 May 1780 at Morristown, N.J., without mentioning a further enlistment.

[1495] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.

a household of one male over age 16, two males under age 16, and three females.[1496] They were there in 1800 with a household of one male under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, four females under age 10, one female age 10–15, one female age 16–26, and one female age 26–44.[1497] In 1810 they had a household of eight in Herkimer; in 1820 a household of eight in Herkimer; in 1830 a household of three in newly formed Little Falls; and in 1840 a household of three in Little Falls.[1498] In an 1840 Herkimer County pension list, Edward Arnold of Little Falls was listed as age 80.[1499]

Edward applied for a pension at Herkimer County 25 April 1818, , age 58. In an additional statement on 4 July 1820, at age 60, he stated that he owned no real estate and had personal property worth only $15. His family consisted of himself, his wife "infirm and unable to support herself," and daughters Tryphena, age 19, and Sabrina, age 14.[1500]

Edward died in Herkimer County 29 October 1842.[1501] He is buried in Church Street Cemetery in Little Falls, New York.[1502]

Mercy was living at Little Falls in 1850 at the age of 87 in the household of Alphonso Bart, age 29. In the same household was Mercy Farmer, age 52.[1503] She was still alive at the age of 91 at Little Falls on 16 March 1855, when she applied for a bounty land warrant for Edward's service. To prove she had been married to Edward, she obtained testimonies from three people who

---

[1496] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: New York*, 109.

[1497] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Herkimer Township, 449.

[1498] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Herkimer County, Herkimer, 194; 1820, Herkimer, 127; 1830, Little Falls, 83; 1840, Little Falls, 128.

[1499] 1840 Pension List of Herkimer County at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyherkim/census1840herkpension.html.*

[1500] Revolutionary War pension file #W20631.

[1501] Revolutionary War pension file #W20631.

[1502] Burial record at *www.lfhistoricalsociety.org.*

[1503] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Little Falls, 220.

attended their wedding, including her sister Naomi Steere, her brother David Phetteplace, and her sister Rachel Arnold (#75).[1504] She died in 1858 and is buried in the Church Street Cemetery, Little Falls.[1505]

Children of Edward and Mercy (Phetteplace) Arnold:[1506]

i. **Nancy[6] Arnold**, born 3 May 1782.

ii. **Esek Arnold**, born 17 October 1783.

iii. **Lucy Arnold**, born 23 November 1785.

iv. **Molly Arnold**, born 12 October 1786.

v. **Samuel Arnold**, born 15 July 1788.

vi. **Amy Arnold**, born 1 March 1789.

vii. **David Arnold**, born 22 March 1792.

viii. **Mercy Arnold**, born 9 April 1793.

ix. **Lavina Arnold**, born 11 March 1795.

x. **Sophia Arnold**, born 28 April 1799.

xi. **Tryphena Arnold**, born 6 May 1801.

xii. **Edward Arnold**, born 12 September 1803.

xiii. **Sabrina Arnold**, born 13 October 1805.

[1504] Revolutionary War pension file #W20631.

[1505] Burial record at *www.lfhistoricalsociety.org*.

[1506]Revolutionary War pension file #W20631 lists Nancy, Esek, Lucy, and Molly. All children listed with their birth dates in 1954 DAR application of Vera McLaughlin Banning of Roseberg, Oregon, National #429827. Phetteplace, in *Phetteplace Family*, lists seven of the children: Nancy, Esek, Lucy, Molly, David, Tryphena, and Sabrina.

178. **OLIVER[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born presumably at Glocester, Rhode Island, about 1762, a son of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1507]

Oliver married first **SOPHIA WALKER.**[1508]

He married second _____ **LAMPHERE**, at Tioga County, New York, perhaps about 1804.[1509]

Oliver served in Colonel John Topham's regiment in 1776 during the American Revolution.[1510]

In the early part of his life, he was in business with his brother Nehemiah as a sea captain, traveling to the West Indies. He moved to Tioga County (now Chenango County), New York.[1511] Perhaps he was the Oliver Arnold, age 86 (and thus born about 1763), living in the household of 35-year-old A. H. Rood at Barton, Tioga County, in 1850.[1512]

He is said to have died at Olean, Cattaraugus County, New York.[1513]

[1507] Signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189). Year of birth from Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120. Oliver should not be confused with the Oliver Arnold, son of Caleb, who married Azabah Davis at Foster, Rhode Island, 7 February 1788. That Oliver was born 8 September 1758 at Swansea, Massachusetts, a son of Caleb and Tabitha (Luther) Arnold. He served in the Revolution as well and obtained a pension. He lived at Foster, Rhode Island.

[1508] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120.

[1509] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120.

[1510] Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island,* 65.

[1511] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120.

[1512] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Tioga County, Barton, 7. The census says he was born in Pennsylvania, but Rood's wife and children listed above him were all born in Pennsylvania, so that easily could be an error.

[1513] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120.

Children of Oliver and Sophia (Walker) Arnold:[1514]

i. **Obadiah[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Arthur Arnold.**

iii. **Hannah Arnold.**

Children of Oliver and _____ (Lamphere) Arnold:[1515]

iv. **Franklin Arnold.**

v. **Samuel Arnold**, born Tioga County July 1807.

vi. **Eliza Arnold**, born 28 December 1809.

vii. **Hiram Arnold**, born 2 April 1811.

viii. **Guy Arnold**, born 22 March 1813.

ix. **Julia Arnold**, born 14 November 1814.

x. **John Arnold**, born 1816.

xi. **Owen Arnold**, born 6 December 1818.

xii. **Maria Arnold**, born July 1820.

xiii. **Perles Arnold**, born 22 July 1822; died as an infant.

[1514] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott*, 2:120.
[1515] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott*, 2:120.

179. **PATIENCE[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born about 1763, a daughter of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1516]

She married **EPHRAIM WILLIAMS** at Scituate, Rhode Island, 23 November 1780. He was born probably at Scituate 24 November 1755, a son of Benoni and Abigail (Smith) Williams of Scituate.[1517] Benoni was a great-grandson of Roger Williams, founder of Rhode Island, through his son Daniel and grandson Joseph.[1518] The marriage record identifies Patience as a daughter of Caleb of Glocester.[1519]

Two men named Ephraim Williams lived at Scituate during and after the American Revolution. Both were listed as age 16–50 and able to serve in the 1777 military census.[1520] The information in Ephraim's marriage record, military pension file deeds, and will help distinguish him from the other Ephraim.[1521]

Ephraim served as a private in Col. Archibald Crary's Regiment in 1776 and marched to Quebec in the American Revolution.[1522] According to his pension application, he volunteered in the fall of 1776 in Capt. Coomer Smith's Company of Col. Joseph Knight's Regiment of Rhode Island Militia for one year. At the end of his term, he volunteered for another six months. He was stationed at

---

[1516] Signed, as Patience Williams, with Ephraim Williams, an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784 (Glocester Deeds, 11:189). Age 80 in 1843 according to Revolutionary War pension file #W26021.

[1517] Revolutionary War pension file #W26021.

[1518] Bertha Williams Anthony, *Roger Williams of Providence R.I.* (Cranston, R.I., 1949), 2:157.

[1519] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Scituate Marriages, 35.

[1520] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census*, 86, 88.

[1521] The *DAR Patriot Index* says the other Ephraim was born in Rhode Island, married Philey Colvin, and died in 1797. Diary entry at *Register* 56 (1902): 13, reports the death of Ephraim Williams of Scituate 7 August 1797. That Ephraim was a son of Robert Williams of Johnston as shown by a deed of 5 May 1786 (Scituate Deeds, 8:479).

[1522] Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island,* 114.

Providence, Bristol, and Warwick, guarding the shore of Narragansett Bay. In April 1778, he was drafted and went on regular tours every other month in the same company guarding the shore. James Howard of Foster, age 73, testified he had known Ephraim for more than sixty years and that he knew he had served.[1523]

At the time of the 1782 Rhode Island census, Ephraim, who had been married for only two years, was at Scituate heading a household of one male under age 16, one female under age 15, one male age 22–49, one female age 22–49, one male age 50 or more, and one female age 50 or more (someone's parents?).[1524] In 1790 his household included one male over age 16, two males under age 16, and two females.[1525]

On 1 March 1781, Ephraim's father, Benoni, deeded him part of the homestead farm in Scituate "for love and goodwill." On 26 September 1781, Ephraim purchased another 18 acres from his father. He sold 70 acres of the land on 10 July 1782. On 5 April 1783, he purchased 240 acres of land in Scituate. He was called "of Foster" when he purchased 45 acres in Foster on 7 March 1787.[1526]

Ephraim and Patience lived at Scituate after the war. In 1800, they lived at Foster, Rhode Island, which had been formed from a part of Scituate in 1781. Ephraim owned land in the part of Scituate that became Foster as early as 21 December 1781, when he was taxed there.[1527] He applied for his Revolutionary War pension at Foster 17 September 1832, and stated that he had lived there for about thirty years.[1528]

[1523] Revolutionary War pension file #W26021.

[1524] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census,* 140. The other Ephraim had evidently been married longer and headed a household with three males under age 16, one female under age 16, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.

[1525] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 37.

[1526] Scituate Deeds, 7:263, 289, 330, 404; Foster Deeds, 3:49.

[1527] "First Tax List for Foster RI after Division from Scituate RI," *Rhode Island Roots* 12 (1986): 31.

[1528] Revolutionary War pension file #W26021.

Ephraim's household at Foster in 1800 included one male under age 10, one male age 16–26, one male age 26–45, and one female age 26–45.[1529] In 1810 he was in Foster with a household of one male age 10–16, one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, and one female age 45 or more.[1530] In 1830 he was listed adjacent to Caleb Williams in Foster, with one male age 70–80, one female age 20–30, and one female age 60–70.[1531] In 1840 he was again adjacent to Caleb with one male age 80–90 and one female age 70–80, with a note that the household included Revolutionary War pensioner Ephraim Williams, age 84.[1532]

Ephraim died at Foster 30 June 1843.[1533] His will, written 24 February 1835, was proved 7 August 1843. He mentioned his wife, Patience, and children Diana Carpenter, Cal[__] (probably Caleb) Williams, and Patience Phelps.[1534]

Patience applied for a widow's pension at Foster 14 August 1843, aged 80. Their daughter-in-law, Phila Williams, age 47, testified to the date of Ephraim's death and verified that Patience was his widow. Patience received a pension of $80 a year starting on 4 March 1848.[1535] She was listed in the 1850 census at Foster, age 87, with Caleb Williams, age 54, both born in Rhode Island.[1536]

[1529] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Foster, 162.
[1530] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Foster, 138.
[1531] U.S. Census, 1830, Rhode Island, Providence County, Foster, 252.
[1532] U.S. Census, 1840, Rhode Island, Providence County, Foster, 15.
[1533] Revolutionary War pension file #W26021.
[1534] "Foster Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 220.
[1535] Revolutionary War pension file #W26021.
[1536] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Foster, 4.

Children of Ephraim and Patience (Arnold) Williams, named in Ephraim's will:

i. **Diana Williams**, probably born about 1782.[1537]

ii. **Caleb Williams**, born about 1796 (age 54 in 1850).[1538]

iii. **Patience Williams.**

iv. **Benoni Williams.**[1539]

1537 Called Diana Carpenter in her father's will. Probably she was the Diana Williams, widow of Dr. Thomas O. H. Carpenter, late of Foster, who wrote her will 29 April 1846, proved 16 January 1846 ("Abstracts of Providence Wills," *RIGR* 7 [1984]): 201). That Diana Foster was buried in the Carpenter Lot in Foster with an inscription that had her born about 1782 and died 9 May 1846 (Rhode Island Cemeteries Project at *www.RootsWeb.ancestry.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/*).

1538 The name appears as "Cal__" in the will abstract. Caleb was living next to Ephraim and Patience in the 1840 census, and Patience was in his household in 1850.

1539 Not listed in will. Listed in Greene, "Arnold Family," 98.

180. **ACSAH[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) is said to have been born 27 May 1767, a daughter of Caleb and Patience (Brown) Arnold.[1540]

She married **JONATHAN BROWN** at Foster, Rhode Island, 20 May 1786. He was a son of James Brown of Foster and she was a daughter of Caleb Arnold, deceased, of Glocester.[1541] He was born at Swansea, Massachusetts, 4 April 1765, a son of James and Mary (Anthony) Brown.[1542]

Jonathan Brown was living at Foster in 1790 with a household of two males under age 16, one male over age 16, and four females.[1543] In 1800 his household included two males under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 26–45, one female under age 10, two females ages 10–15, and one female age 26–45.[1544]

Jonathan entered into numerous land transactions in Foster. He was "of Foster" as late as 1806, but in 1809 he called himself "of Providence."[1545] In 1810 Jonathan's household in Providence included two males under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, three females age 16–25. and one female age 26–44.[1546]

[1540] Signed an agreement of the heirs of Caleb Arnold of Glocester 4 February 1784, (Glocester Deeds, 11:189), as Jonathan Brown and Achsah Brown. Date from Anna Clough Sherman manuscript. Year of birth supported by a statement in Jabez Arnold's pension file, Revolutionary War pension file #W20630, dated 23 April 1845, in which she said she was age 78 years.

[1541] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Foster Marriages, 8.

[1542] *Swansea Vital Records,* 100. The *DAR Patriot Index* is in error in stating that the Jonathan Brown, born 30 January 1760 and died 8 September 1851 in New York, married Achsah Arnold. The pension file of that Jonathan #S12312 makes it clear that he was a different person.

[1543] U.S. Census, 1790, Rhode Island, Providence, Foster, 291.

[1544] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence, Foster, 486.

[1545] David W. Dumas, "An Arnold-Brown Correction," *Rhode Island Roots* 9 (1983): 91.

[1546] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence, South District, 147.

Jonathan's parents removed about 1800 to Hartford, Washington County, New York. Jonathan may have moved there after 1810 as well.[1547]

Acsah made a statement in the Revolutionary War pension file of her brother Jabez in support of a pension for his widow Rachel. She stated on 23 April 1845 that she was aged 78 years and lived in Providence. The justice of the peace who took her statement said she was "uncommonly intelligent and smart for a woman of her age."[1548]

It is said that Jonathan died in December 1827 and Acsah 25 May 1849.[1549]

Children of Jonathan and Acsah (Arnold) Brown:[1550]

i. **Patience Brown**, born 25 September 1787.

ii. **William Brown**, born 5 June 1789.

iii. **Cynthia Brown**, born 8 July 1791.

iv. **Arnold Brown**, born 12 March 1793.

v. **Lucy Brown**, born 19 February 1795.

vi. **Jonathan A. Brown**, born 15 April 1797; presumably died young.

vii. **Jonathan Brown**, born 30 December 1798.

viii. **Alice Brown**, born 18 August 1801; presumably died young.

ix. **Alice Brown**, born 9 November 1802, probably died young.

[1547] Dumas, *Rhode Island Roots* 9 (1983): 91. He could have been one of three Jonathan Browns listed in the 1820 census at Granville, Washington County.

[1548] Revolutionary War pension file #W20630.

[1549] Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.

[1550] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:120; also Anna Clough Sherman manuscript.

x. **Esek A. Brown**, born 15 November 1803.

xi. **James A. Brown**, born 22 February 1805.

xii. **Alice Almira Brown**, born 30 April 1807.

181. **ARBA[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was said to have been born in 1774, a son of Caleb and Anne (Arnold) Arnold.[1551]

He married **ISABELLA DAVIS.**[1552] She was a daughter of Joseph Davis and Lydia (_____) of Glocester, Rhode Island, who was called Isabella Arnold in Joseph's will written 28 December 1823.[1553] She was born about 1778 if she was the Isabella listed as age 72 in the 1850 census, as described below.

Arba and Isabella were probably married in the late 1790s. Arba was listed at Glocester in the 1800 census near several of his brothers with a household of one male age 16–26, one female under age 10, and one female age 16–26.[1554]

Arba was listed in the 1810 census at Norwich, Chenango County, New York, with a household of one male age 26–44, two females under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1555] On 23 April 1812, Arba Arnold was of Norwich when he purchased 20 acres of land in Norwich. On 8 October 1816 Arba and Isabella sold 50 acres of land in Norwich.[1556]

In 1820, called "Arbey," he was a little farther south in Guilford, Chenango County, New York. The household included one male age 10–15, one male age 26–44, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1557]

Isabella probably married, second, William Palmer, as Isabella Palmer, age 72, born in Rhode Island, was listed next door to her daughter, Lydia Rhodes, in the 1850 census, at Sergeant, McKean

---

[1551] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 211. Year of birth from *Boston Evening Transcript*, 13 September 1920, #8205.
[1552] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 211.
[1553] "Glocester Wills," *RIGR* 10 (1987): 60.
[1554] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.
[1555] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Chenango County, Norwich, 124.
[1556] Chenango County Deeds, V:181, 183.
[1557] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Chenango County, Guilford, 146.

County, Pennsylvania.[1558] Arba is said to have owned land in McKean County.[1559]

Children of Arba and Isabella (Davis) Arnold:[1560]

i. **Ann[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Lydia Arnold**, born about 1800 (age 50 in the 1850 census).[1561]

iii. **Mary Arnold.**

[1558] U.S. Census, 1850, Pennsylvania, McKean County, Sergeant, 32.

[1559] 2006 correspondence with Ms. Jeanette Gent of Portland, Oregon.

[1560] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 211.

[1561] Lydia Rhodes, age 50, born New York, in household of Joseph Rhodes, age 59, in U.S. Census, 1850, Pennsylvania, McKean County, Sergeant, 32.

182. **JOSEPH[5] ARNOLD** (*Caleb[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was said to have been born in 1776, presumably at Glocester, Rhode Island, a son of Caleb and Anne (Arnold) Arnold.[1562]

He married **BARBARA WESTCOTT**, who was born in Rhode Island, about 1781 (age 69 in 1850 census).[1563]

Joseph was listed at Glocester in the 1800 census with a household of one male age 16–26, one male age 45 or more, and one female age 26–45.[1564] Perhaps his father-in-law was living with him.

He may have been the Joseph Arnold of Norwich, Chenango County, New York, who purchased land in Oxford, Chenango County, on 10 December 1806.[1565] He was listed at Oxford in 1810 and at Smithville, Chenango County, New York, in 1820.[1566] His brothers Caleb, Jabez, and Arba were living in Chenango County at the time.

Joseph was of Truxton, Cortland County, New York, on 9 February 1818, when he purchased 100 acres of land there. Joseph and Barbara sold 15 acres of land there 14 May 1824, and they purchased 42 acres there 13 June 1827.[1567]

Joseph Arnold was at Truxton in 1830 with a household of one male age 15–20, two males age 20–30, one male age 40–50, one female age 10–15, one female age 20–30, and one female age

---

[1562] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 211. Year of birth from *Boston Evening Transcript*, 13 September 1920, #8205. The statements of his age in the censuses of 1850 (69) and 1860 (80) suggest he was born about 1780 or 1781. However, his mother was born 1733/4, making the 1776 birth date more likely.

[1563] Greene, "Arnold Family," 100. She was called Barbara "Duticott" in Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 211, but the name Duticott has not been found in New England in this time period.

[1564] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Glocester, 104.

[1565] Chenango County Deeds, I:364.

[1566] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Chenango County, Oxford; 1820, New York, Chenango County, Smithville.

[1567] Cortland County Deeds, G:157, M:154, N:139.

40–50.[1568] In 1840 he was recorded in Truxton next to George Arnold and Abram W. Arnold.[1569] Abram W. Arnold sold land to his father in Truxton on 16 January 1841.[1570] In 1850 Joseph and Barbara Arnold, both age 69 and born in Rhode Island, were in the household of George Arnold, age 45, born in Rhode Island.[1571] In 1860 Joseph Arnold, age 80, born in Rhode Island, remained in George Arnold's household, but Barbara was not listed.[1572] No cemetery record has been located for Joseph or Barbara.

Children of Joseph and Barbara (Westcott) Arnold:[1573]

i. **George[6] Arnold**, born about 1805 (age 45 in 1850 census).

ii. **Abram W. Arnold,** born about 1806 (age 54 in 1860 census). Moved from Cortland County, New York, to Cass County, Michigan.[1574]

iii. **Marcy Arnold.**

iv. **Charles Arnold.**

[1568] U.S. Census, 1830, New York, Cortland County, Truxton, 62.
[1569] U.S. Census, 1840, New York, Cortland County, Truxton, 89.
[1570] Cortland County Deeds, 5:714.
[1571] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cortland County, Truxton, 129.
[1572] U.S. Census, 1860, New York, Cortland County, Truxton, 20.
[1573] Richardson, *History of Woonsocket*, 211, lists all except Marcy, who is listed in Greene, "Arnold Family," 100.
[1574] U.S. Census, 1860, Michigan, Cass County, Jefferson, 151.

183. **AMEY[5] ARNOLD** (*Joshua[4] Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born about 1753, a daughter of Joshua and Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold) Arnold.[1575]

She was of Smithfield, Rhode Island, when she declared her intention to marry **JOHN BUCKLIN** of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, at Rehoboth 31 August 1770.[1576] They were married at Smithfield 30 October 1770.[1577] John was born 25 October 1747, a son of James and Mary (Peck) Bucklin, as recorded at Rehoboth, but with the notation "Cumberland," suggesting he may have been actually born at Cumberland, Rhode Island. The birth records of his older and younger siblings do not carry same notation.[1578]

John and Amey lived at Rehoboth and had children recorded there from 1771 through 1781. In 1790 John headed a household at Rehoboth of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, and six females.[1579]

Children of John and Amey (Arnold) Bucklin, recorded at Rehoboth:[1580]

i. **Mary Bucklin**, born 14 March 1771.

ii. **James Bucklin**, born 8 May 1773.

iii. **Amey Bucklin**, born 19 March 1775.

iv. **Joseph Bucklin**, born 10 March 1777.

v. **Sarah Bucklin**, born 16 June 1779.

[1575] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:118. The year is estimated at 1753, as her parents were married in 1752 and she was married in 1770.
[1576] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, 433.
[1577] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 22.
[1578] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, 562.
[1579] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts*, 52.
[1580] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, 562, for the first six; the rest from Greene, "Arnold Family," 103.

vi. **Nancy Bucklin**, born 31 October 1781.

vii. **Ruth Bucklin.**

viii. **Minerva Bucklin.**

ix. **John Bucklin.**

x. Unnamed daughter, died young.

xi. Unnamed daughter, died young.

184. **ISRAEL[5] ARNOLD** *(Joshua[4] Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 1 November 1754, a son of Joshua and Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold) Arnold.[1581]

He married first **DEBORAH OLNEY** at Smithfield 28 September 1775, a daughter of Jeremiah Olney.[1582]

He married, second, **CATHERINE JENKS** at Smithfield 15 November 1802, a daughter of Joseph and Sarah (Tinley) Jenks.[1583] In his will, dated at Smithfield 18 June 1803, Joseph Jenks named his wife Sarah and his daughter Catherine Arnold.[1584]

Israel served in the American Revolution. He was listed in Capt. Thomas Allen's Company of Col. John Cooke's Regiment on a roll dated 25 September 1776, doing duty on the Island of "Aquidneck."[1585] His militia unit was activated 7 December 1776, when the British took Newport, Rhode Island. He was chosen sergeant in Capt. Samuel Day's Company of Col. Jabez Bowen's Regiment. His unit went to Providence and then Warwick, Rhode Island, where they guarded the shore of the bay. His unit was then split into three groups, and each group served every third month from 1777 through 1779, when the enemy evacuated Newport. He served twelve months in total under Gen. John Sullivan and Gen. Joseph Spencer. During Sullivan's 1777 expedition to attack Newport, Israel served as a teamster carrying cannon to the Island of Rhode Island.[1586]

He was listed at Smithfield in the 1777 military census as age 16–50 and able to serve.[1587] He was listed at Smithfield in 1790 with a

---

[1581] Named in his father's will. Birth date from Revolutionary War pension file #S21050.

[1582] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 12.

[1583] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 13. Also Browne, *Jenks Family,* 54.

[1584] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR 7* (1984): 207.

[1585] Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island,* 53.

[1586] Revolutionary War pension file #S21050.

[1587] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 95.

household of one male over age 16, three males under age 16, and five females.[1588]

Israel farmed and operated stone quarries located on his land.[1589]

Although he did not move to Massachusetts, Israel purchased 200 acres of land in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, from his father on 22 November 1790.[1590] He sold a parcel of land there on 3 12th month [December] 1790.[1591] He sold his uncle, Stukely Arnold (#63), 100 acres of land there 8 June 1793, and another 100 acres 28 October 1796.[1592]

When his father died in 1818, Israel inherited two lots in the south part of Providence with farming and lime rock tools and rights in the Providence Library.

Israel applied for a pension for his Revolutionary War service on 17 March 1835, when he was 80, living at Smithfield. He explained that he was born in Smithfield, served from Smithfield, and lived there after the war. His widow applied for the balance due at the time of his death, and for a pension, on 19 May 1842.[1593]

Israel died 27 June 1840.[1594] His will, dated 7 May 1840, was probated 4 September 1841. He mentioned daughters Ada, Aimy, Mercy, Mary, and Anna; and sons Olney, Israel, Joshua, George, Jeremiah O. , Jenks, and Joseph. His inventory included ten shares in the Smithfield Lime Rock Bank and notes against Israel Arnold Jr., George Arnold, and Jeremiah O. Arnold. The will also listed

---

[1588] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 38.

[1589] *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,* 1:23, primary source not identified.

[1590] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, 1:429.

[1591] Berkshire County (North District) Deeds, 2:44.

[1592] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield, R.I.," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 335, citing Berkshire County Deeds, North District, 3:431 and 6:237.

[1593] Revolutionary War pension file #S21050.

[1594] Revolutionary War pension file #S21050.

hay, oats, corn, a cherry desk, a clock, a double-case silver watch, and other furniture and household goods.[1595]

Children of Israel and Deborah (Olney) Arnold, born probably at Smithfield:[1596]

i. **Israel[6] Arnold**, born 1776.

ii. **Olney Arnold**, born 27 October 1780.[1597] Called a son of Israel when he married in 1801.[1598]

iii. **Ada Harris Arnold.**

iv. **Anna Maria Arnold.**[1599]

v. **Mercy Arnold.**

vi. **Joshua Arnold**, born 20 August 1784.[1600]

vii. **Mary Arnold.**

viii. **George Arnold**, born 21 March 1788.[1601]

ix. **Lydia Ann Arnold**, born 20 September 1789.[1602] Called Ann Arnold, a daughter of Israel, when she married in 1810.[1603]

x. **Jeremiah O. Arnold**, born about 1798.[1604]

[1595] Smithfield Probate, 6:287, 303.
[1596] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott*, 2:122.
[1597] Arnold file, FHL microfilm #22323, Item 9.
[1598] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 3: Smithfield Marriages, 13.
[1599] Not listed in Greene in "Arnold Family."
[1600] Arnold File, FHL microfilm #22323, Item 9.
[1601] Arnold File, FHL microfilm #22323, Item 9.
[1602] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock*, 103. Month and day of birth from Greene, "Arnold Family," 197.
[1603] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 484.
[1604] Age 62 in U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 108.

xi. **Aimy Arnold**.[1605]

Children of Israel and Catherine (Jenks) Arnold, born probably at Smithfield:[1606]

xii. **Jenks Arnold**, born 2 October 1803.

xiii. **Joseph Arnold**, born 19 March 1805.

[1605] Listed as a daughter in Greene, "Arnold Family," 103. Also listed in Israel's will.

[1606] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:122. Also *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,* 1:23, primary source not identified. Both named in Israel's will.

185. **MARCY[5] ARNOLD** (*Joshua[4] Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 23 November 1757, a daughter of Joshua and Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold) Arnold.[1607]

She married **STEPHEN JENKS** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 19 November 1775. He was from North Providence, Rhode Island, when they were married.[1608] He was born at Providence 31 March 1756, a son of Stephen and Sarah (Hawkins) Jenks.[1609]

Stephen served in the American Revolution.[1610]

According to the birth records of their children, Stephen and Marcy were living at Smithfield in 1776; Spencer, Massachusetts (just north of Rhode Island), in 1778 and 1780 and afterwards in North Providence or Providence. They were at North Providence in 1790 with a household of one male over age 16, three males under age 16 and three females.[1611]

"Stephen Jenks Jr." served as a justice of the peace in North Providence from 1792 through 1810.[1612]

"Mrs. Marcy Jenks, wife of Stephen and daughter of Joshua Arnold, died at Pawtucket, Rhode Island, in her 60th year," 8 October 1816.[1613]

On 23 March 1818, Stephen married Marcy's sister, Ruth (#187), at Smithfield.[1614]

[1607] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:118.
[1608] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 48. Also at 2: North Providence Marriages, 24.
[1609] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 230. Also at 2: North Providence Births and Deaths, 48.
[1610] Browne, *Jenks Family,* 110.
[1611] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Rhode Island,* 32.
[1612] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island,* 1: 502, 526, 543, 557, 571, 584, 599; 2: 4, 19, 33, 50, 65, 79, 92, 105, 117, 131, 146.
[1613] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 530.
[1614] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 48.

Stephen died 21 November 1837.[1615]

Children of Stephen and Marcy (Arnold) Jenks, the first born at Smithfield, the next three at Spencer, Massachusetts, and the rest at North Providence:[1616]

i. **Arnold Jenks**, born 5 April 1776.

ii. **Sarah Jenks**, born 1776; died 23 October 1796.

iii. **Stephen Jenks**, born 8 April 1780; died 31 March 1785.

iv. **David Jenks**, born 5 December 1782.

v. **George Jenks**, born 19 October 1785.

vi. **Sabra Jenks**, born 3 June 1788.

vii. **Nathan Jenks**, born 24 January 1791; died 21 July 1801.

viii. **Lydia Jenks**, born 13 May 1793.

ix. **Lyndon Jenks**, born 7 January 1796.

x. **Alvin Jenks**, born 24 July 1798.

xi. **Jerahmel Jenks**, born 3 November 1800.

[1615] Browne, *Jenks Family*, 110.

[1616] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: North Providence Births and Deaths, 48; also Browne, *Jenks Family*, 110.

186. **SARAH**[5] **ARNOLD** (*Joshua*[4] *Joseph*[3], *Eleazer*[2], *Thomas*[1]) was born 23 December 1762, a daughter of Joshua and Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold) Arnold.[1617]

She married **BENJAMIN JENKS** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 12 March 1780. He was of North Providence, Rhode Island, when they were married.[1618] He was born at Providence 2 September 1758, a son of Stephen and Sarah (Hawkins) Jenks and a brother of Stephen Jenks who married two of Sarah's sisters, first Marcy (#184) and then Ruth (#187).[1619]

Benjamin served in the American Revolution. In his pension application, he stated that he enlisted 12 June 1775 in Capt. Joseph Holley's Company of Col. James M. Varnum's Regiment for eight months. Fourteen days prior to the end of his term, he re-enlisted for a further twelve months.[1620] He was in Col. John Topham's Regiment in 1776.[1621] He served as captain of the North Providence militia from 1792 through 1804.[1622]

On 25 June 1800, Benjamin signed eighteen deeds to purchase fractions of an 83-acre tract of land in North Providence from different co-owners. He mortgaged a 79-acre portion for $2,700 from Joshua Arnold, Israel Arnold, and Stephen Jenks on 28 January 1801 and sold 4 acres on 16 December 1801.[1623]

On 28 April 1808, Benjamin sold his brother Stephen his rights to the real estate of their "honored father," Stephen Jenks, in North Providence and Smithfield.[1624]

[1617] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:118; Browne, *Jenks Family,* 111.
[1618] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 48.
[1619] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 230.
[1620] Revolutionary War pension file #S44991 ("Benjamin Jincks").
[1621] Cowell, *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island,* 75.
[1622] Smith, *Civil and Military List of Rhode Island,* 1: 504, 518, 529, 547, 562, 576, 590, 604; 2: 9, 24, 40, 55, 71.
[1623] North Providence Deeds, 3:38–53, 57, 117.
[1624] North Providence Deeds, 3:271.

Benjamin entered into transactions to purchase land in Gainesville, Genesee County (now Wyoming County), New York, from the Holland Land Company on 19 July 1809, 10 July 1811, and 28 August 1818.[1625]

He was living at Gainesville on 15 April 1818 when he applied for his pension. He appeared in court 15 June 1820, age 64, and stated that he had not disposed of property in order to comply with the need requirements of the pension act. He filed papers indicating that he owned half interest in 45 acres of land, 3 acres of which were cleared, that he had not paid anything for it, and that purchase money was due in 1825. He owned "a two-year old heifer, an axe, a hoe, etc." He mentioned that he was married, and that he had a daughter age 28 and a granddaughter age 5. His daughter had been married, he said, but had parted with her husband, who had since left the country. Benjamin reported that he had rheumatism, and that his wife had been sick with asthma for many years.[1626]

Benjamin "Jinks" was listed as a head of household at Gainesville in 1820 with a household of four persons.[1627]

Children of Benjamin and Sarah (Arnold) Jenks, born at Pawtucket:[1628]

i. **Charlotte Jenks** (twin), born 20 January 1781.

ii. **Lucina Jenks** (twin), born 20 January 1781.

iii. **Sarah Jenks**, born 5 October 1782.

iv. **Benjamin Jenks**, born 14 February 1785; died 1 February 1788.

v. **Amy Jenks**, born 24 April 1787.

[1625] Livsey, *Western New York Land Transactions*, 65, 170, 224.
[1626] Revolutionary War pension file #S44991 ("Benjamin Jincks").
[1627] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Genesee County, Gainesville, 118.
[1628] Browne, *Jenks Family*, 111.

vi. **Welcome Jenks**, born 15 February 1790.

vii. **Alfred Jenks**, born 13 March 1793.

viii. **Barton Jenks**, born 29 July 1796; died 27 November 1820.

ix. **William Jenks**, born 18 April 1799.

x. **Ira Jenks**, born 30 August 1801.

xi. **Edwin Jenks**, born 25 March 1804.

xii. **Louisa Jenks**, born 1 March 1808.

187. **RUTH[5] ARNOLD** *(Joshua[4] Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was a daughter of Joshua and Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold) Arnold.[1629] She was born about 1766, calculated from her age at death.

Ruth was probably in her fifties when she married, as his second wife, **STEPHEN JENKS** at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 23 March 1818.[1630] Stephen was just a week short of turning 62. He was the widower of Ruth's sister Marcy (#185), whom he had married in 1775, and had eleven children, the youngest of whom was 17 years old when he remarried.

Stephen and Ruth were at North Providence in 1820 with a household of six persons, and in 1830 they were living there by themselves.[1631]

Stephen died 21 November 1837, probably at North Providence. On 7 May 1838, the North Providence probate records show that a committee was appointed to set off real estate for Ruth's right of dower in the estate of her late husband, Stephen Jenks.[1632]

The 1850 census lists Ruth as a widow living in Providence, age 85, in the household of Joseph Bucklin, age 73, and Mary Bucklin. Joseph was probably her nephew, born in 1777, son of her sister Amey Arnold (#183), who married John Bucklin. In 1860, Ruth was in Providence, age 94, in the household of Caroline Briggs, age 39, and three teenage Briggs girls.[1633]

Ruth died 3 March 1861 at the age of 95. Stephen and Ruth are buried in Mineral Springs Cemetery at Pawtucket, Rhode Island.[1634]

[1629] Whitman, *Ancestors of Stukely Westcott,* 2:118.

[1630] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Marriages, 48.

[1631] U.S. Census, 1820, Rhode Island, Providence County, North Providence, 119; 1830, North Providence, 224.

[1632] North Providence Probate, 4:214.

[1633] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence Ward 5, 359; 1860, Providence, Ward 5.

[1634] Rhode Island Cemeteries Project, *www.RootsWeb.com/~rigenweb/cemetery/cemetery191.html;* Browne, *Jenks Family,* 110.

188. **ELIZABETH[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 30 December 1759, a daughter of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1635]

She married **NATHAN LAPHAM**, probably about 1780, as their first child was born in 1781. Nathan was born 13 January 1761, a son of Joshua and Hannah (Sherman) Lapham of Dartmouth, Massachusetts, Smithfield, Rhode Island, and Adams, Massachusetts.[1636]

Nathan and Elizabeth were members of the Society of Friends and transferred from the East Hoosick Friends (Adams, Massachusetts) to the Society of Friends in Danby, Vermont.[1637] They were in Danby for the 1790 census (taken in 1791 in Vermont) with a household of two males age 16 or more, four males under age 16, and six females.[1638] In 1800 Nathan was listed as a freeman at Danby,[1639] and their household included three males under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, two females age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[1640]

According to J. C. Williams's history of Danby:

> Nathan Lapham came from Adams, Massachusetts, at an early date. Although commencing in life poor, he was successful in acquiring a fortune and became a large land holder. He manufactured potash at a very early day and kept a store in 1790 in connection with Joseph Button. He was also the owner of a sawmill . . . which was one of the first built in that vicinity. . . . He was one of the earliest members of the Quaker Society and was very plain and simple in his dress.[1641]

[1635] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.

[1636] Aldridge, *Laphams in America*, 53.

[1637] Aldridge, *Laphams in America*, 53. The book says they transferred 28 September 1809, but they were in Danby much before that.

[1638] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Vermont*, 38.

[1639] Williams, *History and Map of Danby*, 43.

[1640] *Heads of Families at the Second Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1800* (Montpelier, Vt., 1938), 110.

[1641] Williams, *History and Map of Danby*, 184.

Nathan and Elizabeth were still at Danby in 1833, when Nathan was again listed as a freeman there.[1642] They were said to have moved to Peru, Clinton County, New York; several of their children settled there.[1643]

Elizabeth died 19 November 1834, and Nathan died 28 September 1846.[1644]

Children of Nathan and Elizabeth (Arnold) Lapham:[1645]

i. **Lydia Lapham**, born 30 December 1781.

ii. **Paulina Lapham**, born 13 January 1789 (more likely 1783 or 1784).

iii. **Joseph Lapham**, born 24 February 1786.

iv. **Jesse Lapham**, born 1788.

v. **Cynthia Lapham**, born 9 May 1790.

vi. **Elisha Lapham**, born December 1792.

vii. **David Lapham**, born 10 April 1795.

viii. **Daniel Lapham**, born 26 January 1799.

ix. **Hannah Lapham**, born 11 August 1801.

x. **Anson Lapham**, born 8 February 1804.

[1642] Williams, *History and Map of Danby*, 53.
[1643] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1644] Aldridge, *Laphams in America*, 53.
[1645] Aldridge, *Laphams in America*, 53; Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336, citing E. Stephen Arnold.

189. **MARY[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 30 October 1761, a daughter of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1646]

She married **CORNELIUS HURLBUT** 28 February 1793.[1647] Cornelius was born at Woodbury (now Roxbury), Connecticut, 18 November 1752, a son of David and Hannah (Sanford) Hurlbut. He had married, first, Phebe Norton on 28 January 1790; she died in December 1790.[1648]

In 1786, Cornelius accompanied Nathan Leavenworth to Hinesburgh, Chittenden County, Vermont, where he purchased 100 acres of land.[1649] Cornelius was listed there in 1800 with a household of two males under age ten, one male age 26–44, and one male age 45 or more.[1650]

He and Timothy Rogers of Ferrisburgh, Addison County, Vermont, purchased land in Ferrisburgh as early as 30 11th month [November] 1793.[1651] Cornelius had moved there by 15 April 1808, when he as called "of Ferrisburgh" in a deed.[1652] On 5 12th month [December] 1811 Cornelius Halbut [Hurlburt] of Ferrisburgh and Timothy Rogers deeded 1½ acres of land to the Monkton Monthly Meeting of Friends. Cornelius is said to have lived near John W. Marton of the village of Middleburg in Ferrisburgh.[1653] (Ferrisburgh is located on the lower end of Lake Champlain in the western part of the state.) His household there in 1820 included one male under age 10, one male age 10–15, four males age 16–25, one male age 45 or more, two females age 16–25, two females age

---

[1646] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338. Also Mary, wife of Cornelius Hurlbut, was named in her father's probate records.
[1647] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338.
[1648] Henry H. Hurlbut, *The Hurlbut Genealogy* (Albany, 1888), 116.
[1649] Hurlbut, *Hurlbut Genealogy*, 115.
[1650] U.S. Census, 1800, Vermont, Chittenden County, Hinesburgh, 313.
[1651] Ferrisburgh Deeds, 11:626.
[1652] Hinesburg Deeds, 4:311.
[1653] *www.RootsWeb.com/~vermont/AddisonFerrisburg.html*, citing *History of Addison County, Vermont* (Syracuse, N.Y., 1886), 445, 452.

26–44, and one female age 45 or more.[1654] An 1864 obituary notice for Mary and Cornelius's daughter Lydia said she was a daughter of Cornelius "Harlburt," late of Ferrisburgh, Vermont.[1655]

Cornelius died at Ferrisburgh 11 September 1830. Mary is said to have died in the same room in which her husband died, about a year later, on 21 November 1831.[1656] Cornelius's will, written 9 5th month [May] 1829, named his wife Mary; daughters Phebe N. Hurlbut, Cynthia Hurlbut, and Lydia (Reese?) ; and son Elias A. Hurlbut. The inventory of his estate, taken 12 3rd month [March] 1831, was valued at $3,795, including 200 acres of land valued at $3,400.[1657]

Children of Cornelius and Mary (Arnold) Hurlburt, born at Hinesburgh, Vermont:[1658]

i. **Phebe N. Hurlbut,** born 2 March 1794.

ii. **Elias A. Hurlbut**, born 6 August 1795.

iii. **Lydia Hurlbut**, born 24 February 1797.

iv. **Cornelius Hurlbut**, died aged about 2 years.

v. **Cynthia Hurlbut**, born 27 September 1801.

vi. **Nathan C. Hurlbut**, born 14 February 1804.[1659]

[1654] U.S. Census, 1820, Vermont, Addison County, Ferrisburgh, 38A.

[1655] *www.RootsWeb.com/~m/essex/extracts.htm,* reading "Lydia H. Keese, widow of the Hon. Richard Keese and daughter of Cornelius Harlburt, late of Ferrisburgh, Vermont, died age 67 on the 17th instant," *The Elizabethtown Post,* 28 April 1864.

[1656] Hurlbut, *Hurlbut Genealogy*, 116.

[1657] New Haven Vermont Probate, 2:250, 253.

[1658] Hurlbut, *Hurlbut Genealogy*, 116.

[1659] Hurlbut–Hurlburt Genealogy, *www.hurlbut.info,* original source not disclosed.

190. **NATHAN[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 31 May 1762, a son of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1660]

He married **IRENE HATHAWAY** at Lanesboro, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, 30 January 1791. She was born 24 September 1767, a daughter of Isaac Jr. and Phebe (Bailey) Hathaway.[1661]

Nathan served in the American Revolution from Berkshire County, Massachusetts.[1662] "Nathan Arnold of Adams" was a private in Capt. Levi Brown's Company of Col. Asa Barns's Berkshire County Regiment, enlisting 30 October 1781 and marching for nine days on an alarm to join Gen. John Stark at Saratoga.[1663]

Nathan and Irene moved from Adams, Massachusetts, to Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, by ox team, probably just after they were married. Fairfield became a major center for the production of cheese, and Irene was said to have made the first cheese there by pressing it under the corner of a log fence.[1664] Nathan Arnold was of the town of Norway, Herkimer County, on 17 April 1794, when he purchased land on the north side of the Mohawk River "near the Little Falls," from his brother Elisha.[1665]

On 7 February 1815, Nathan and his brother-in-law, Daniel Fenner (#193), both of Fairfield, purchased 60 acres of land in Fairfield, and a few weeks later, on 24 May, Nathan purchased 102 acres there.[1666]

[1660] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1661] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338, citing Bible record for date of birth.
[1662] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338, citing *DAR Lineage Books* 15:338 and 32:3.
[1663] *Mass. Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War,* 1:302.
[1664] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338, citing *History of Herkimer County New York* (1879), 78, 157, 243; N. S. Benton, *History of Herkimer County* (1856), 398.
[1665] Oneida County Deeds, 3:437 (prior to the formation of Herkimer County).
[1666] Herkimer County Deeds, 8:411, 9:85.

On 12 April 1817, John Hathaway of Hudson, Columbia County, New York, [brother-in-law?], gave Nathan a power of attorney to sell land he owned in Herkimer County.[1667] Nathan purchased 100 acres of land in Herkimer at a sheriff's auction 2 February 1818 and sold that land 21 March 1820.[1668] On 21 September 1819, he purchased 50 acres of land in Aurelius, Cayuga County, from his brother George (#198) and sold it back to him 10 September 1822.[1669]

In the 1825 state census of Fairfield, Nathan headed a household of five males and four females, including two males subject to militia duty (ages 14–45), one married female under age 45, one unmarried female age 16–45, and one unmarried female under age 16, and a farm with 130 improved acres of land, forty cattle, six horses, eighty-three sheep, and twenty-nine hogs producing 70 yards of fulled cloth, 80 yards of flannel or woolen cloth, and 150 yards of linen cloth.[1670]

On 23 April 1833, Nathan purchased a tract of land from a cousin, Job Arnold (#136), his wife Hannah, and their son Dexter for $5,700. A few days later, on 17 May 1833, Nathan sold that land to his son Parley, for $4,116.[1671] He sold another parcel of land to his son Silas on 13 July 1833.[1672]

Irene died at Fairfield 5 February 1836, age 69 years 2 months 22 days.[1673] She is buried in Eaton's Bush Cemetery.[1674]

In 1850, Nathan Arnold, age 86, born in Rhode Island, was living with his son Silas at Fairfield.[1675]

[1667] Herkimer County Deeds, 11:647.
[1668] Herkimer County Deeds, 13:221, 16:471.
[1669] Cayuga County Deeds, V:469, Z:287.
[1670] Fairfield 1825 State Census at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/census/1825Fairfield1.html.*
[1671] Herkimer County Deeds, 28:310, 423.
[1672] Herkimer County Deeds, 28:545.
[1673] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338.
[1674] Eaton's Bush Cemetery, *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html.*

Nathan died at Fairfield 31 March 1855, age 92 years 10 months.[1676] He is buried next to Irene in Eaton's Bush Cemetery. His will, written 28 May 1849, was proved in 1855. He noted that he had "heretofore disposed of the principal part" of his property among his children. He left his personal property in five portions to daughter Mary Wight, wife of Samuel C. Wight; Lydia Bradford, wife of Hopestill Bradford; Susan Eaton, wife of (Leonard?) Eaton; Emily Witmarth, wife of Joseph Witmarth; and the children of his deceased daughter (Anna?) Henry. The probate records also mentioned Parley Arnold, Nathan Arnold, and Silas E. Arnold.[1677]

Children of Nathan and Irene (Hathaway) Arnold, born at Fairfield:[1678]

i. **Sally[6] Arnold**, born 24 December 1791.

ii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 27 March 1793.

iii. **Mercy Arnold**, born 5 December 1795.

iv. **Bailey Arnold**, born about 1798; died 2 September 1843, aged 45 years 8 months.

v. **Parley Arnold**, born 22 February 1799.

vi. **Irene Arnold**, born 6 May 1801.

vii. **Susan Arnold**, born 7 July 1803.

viii. **Nathan Arnold**, born 5 September 1805.

ix. **Mary Ann Arnold**, born 39 May 1807.

x. **Silas Edmonds Arnold**, born 15 June 1809.

xi. **Emily Beulah Arnold**, born 8 July 1812.

[1675] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 192.
[1676] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1677] Herkimer Probate, K:64, and estate papers, FHL microfilm #847497.
[1678] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 338.

191. **JERUSHA[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born in 1765, a daughter of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1679]

She married **JONATHAN MILLER,** presumably at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, in the 1780s.[1680]

Jonathan was probably the Jonathan Miller at Adams, Berkshire County, in 1790 heading a household of one male over age 16, two males under age 16, and three females.[1681]

Jonathan and Jerusha were living at Norway, Herkimer County, New York, when Jonathan purchased land there on 1 November 1793. Two days later they sold that parcel to Jerusha's brother Stukley (#194).[1682] On 11 November 1795, they sold a parcel of land to Enoch Arnold (#208).[1683] On 23 June 1798, Jonathan was of Fairfield, Herkimer County, when he purchased 100 acres of land there.[1684]

Jonathan was listed at Fairfield, Herkimer County, in 1800 heading a household of three males under age 10, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1685]

Jerusha and Jonathan are said to have settled in Keeseville, New York, and raised a family there.[1686] Keeseville is on the Au Sable River, partly in Au Sable Township, Clinton County, and partly in Chesterfield Township, Essex County. It was part of Peru, New York, through 1839.

We have not found Jonathan in census, land, or probate records after 1800, and we do not have the names of his and Jerusha's children.

[1679] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.

[1680] They were named in Jerusha's father's probate records (Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 [1932]: 336).

[1681] *Heads of Families at the 1790 Census: Massachusetts,* 23.

[1682] Herkimer County Deeds, 3:434, 438.

[1683] Herkimer County Deeds, 28:464.

[1684] Herkimer County Deeds, 11:70.

[1685] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 573.

[1686] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.

192. **ELISHA[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 29 January 1768, a son of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1687]

He married **MARY GRIFFIN**, probably in the late 1790s.[1688] She was a daughter of Lemuel and Elizabeth (Potter) Griffin of Danby, Vermont.[1689] Information in the 1850 census indicates that she was born in Rhode Island about 1780.

Elisha was living in Herkimer County, New York, on 8 June 1792 when he purchased a tract of land on the north side of the Mohawk River "near the Little Falls for £141."[1690] He was of the town of Norway, Herkimer County, when he sold this land to his brother Nathan (#190) on 17 April 1794 for £200.[1691]

He had moved back east to Danby, Vermont, by 13 April 1797, when he purchased 425 acres of land in the town of Peru. A few months later, on 2 January 1798, he purchased an additional 141 acres.[1692] Elisha and his brothers Stukely (#194) and Joseph (#195) are said to have moved from Danby to Peru.[1693] The county history calls Elisha one of the early Quaker immigrants and says he arrived in town in 1795, "with all his worldly goods done up in a pocket-handkerchief," and settled on the banks of the Arnold Brook. He must have had a big pocket-handkerchief, judging from all of the land he purchased. He subsequently owned a large farm of nearly 1,000 acres situated 2 miles north of the Union meeting-house. In the typical flattering language of a nineteenth-century "mug book," he was described as a "man of prominence, wealth, and influence and of uncommon intellectual attainments."[1694]

[1687] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1688] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 339.
[1689] Williams, *History and Map of Danby*, 150.
[1690] Oneida County Deeds, 1:148 (before the formation of Herkimer County).
[1691] Oneida County Deeds, 3:437 (before the formation of Herkimer County).
[1692] Clinton County Deeds, B:32, 165.
[1693] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 337.
[1694] *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York* (Philadelphia, 1880), 340.

From 1810 to 1813, he made numerous purchases of land in Peru and Plattsburgh.[1695]

Elisha was the owner of Arnold Iron Mine on Arnold Hill near Peru, New York, and a partner in working the iron ore in the firm of Arnold, Stickney and Southmayd.[1696] The mine was discovered in 1806 when Samuel Baker saw a piece of iron ore beneath roots of a pine tree that had been blown over. It was on a tract of land owned by a Judge Winters of New York City. Baker and his partners, Eliphalet Stickney and John Southmayd, took Elisha into their confidence. Elisha went to New York and, after long negotiations, purchased the land from Judge Winters for $800. The mine commenced operations in about 1810. When it was sold in 1864, it had produced about $700,000 worth of ore.[1697]

Elisha was a member of the New York State Legislature for a considerable time and served in both houses. He was a member of the Assembly in 1808 and a member of the Senate 1812–1815. In 1819 he began four years' service as the first judge of the Clinton County Court of Common Pleas.[1698]

In the 1850 census, Elisha was listed as age 82, born in Rhode Island, and Mary as age 70, born in Rhode Island. In their household was Mary Coogan, age 24, born in Canada, and Nathan Arnold, age 40, born in New York.[1699]

Elisha died at Keeseville, New York, 22 February 1854. Mary died 28 February 1859.[1700]

Child of Elisha and Mary (Griffin) Arnold:[1701]

i. **Silas[6] Arnold.**

[1695] Clinton County Deeds, Book D.

[1696] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 339, citing *Reminiscences and Early History of Old Peru* (1913), 45, 46, 48.

[1697] *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties*, 226.

[1698] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 339.

[1699] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Clinton County, Peru.

[1700] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 339.

[1701] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 339.

193. **LYDIA[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 29 June 1770, a daughter of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1702]

Lydia married **DANIEL FENNER** at Adams, Massachusetts, 12 January 1792.[1703] He was born 1 January 1770, a son of Thomas and Phebe (Hayes) Fenner.[1704]

Daniel witnessed a deed at Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, on 15 December 1791, a month before his wedding.[1705] He and Lydia settled there soon after their marriage. They were listed there in the 1800 census, adjacent to Lydia's brother Nathan Arnold (#190) with a household of two males under age 10, one male age 26–44, one female age 26–44, and one female age 45 or more.[1706] In 1810 their household included one male under age 10, two males age 10–15, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[1707]

Daniel was listed as a major in the Herkimer County militia on 12 March 1810.[1708]

"Daniel Fenner of Fairfield" purchased 22 acres of land in Fairfield from Thomas Fenner (his father or brother?) 16 April 1812. He and his brother-in-law Nathan Arnold (#190) purchased 60 acres of land in Fairfield 7 February 1815.[1709]

[1702] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.

[1703] Adams, Mass., Vital Records, FHL microfilm #760652.

[1704] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340. Also the will of Thomas Fenner of Herkimer County, N.Y., dated 29 October 1822, mentions his wife Phebe and son Daniel, deceased, and Daniel's children George, Nathan, and Daniel and daughters Amy Griffis and Lydia A. Fenner (Abstracts of Wills . . . NY State database, citing Herkimer County Probate, D:299).

[1705] Herkimer County Deeds, 5:468.

[1706] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 551.

[1707] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 211.

[1708] Appointed Officers of the Local Militia, Herkimer County, N.Y., April 1808–March 1817, *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyherkim/regiments/earlymilitia2.html.*

[1709] Herkimer County Deeds, 7:17, 8:411.

Daniel died at Fairfield 1 April 1817, age 46 years 3 months.[1710] His will, written 23 November 1816, was proved 4 April 1817. In it, he mentioned his wife, Lydia, and his children George, Nathan, Amy, Daniel Jr., and Lydia A. His right in the meetinghouse was to be "divided among my children." He left his real estate to his brother Thomas and his three sons.[1711]

Lydia Fenner, age 80, born in Massachusetts, was living with her son Daniel, age 45, at the time of the 1850 census.[1712] She died at Fairfield 25 April 1855, age 85.[1713]

Children of Daniel and Lydia (Arnold) Fenner:[1714]

i. **Drusilla Fenner.**

ii. **George Fenner**, born Fairfield 23 October 1794.

iii. **Nathan Fenner**, born about 1798 (age 52 in 1850 census).[1715]

iv. **Amy Fenner**, born probably about 1801.[1716]

v. **Daniel Fenner**, born about 1805 (age 45 in 1850 census).

vi. **Lydia A. Fenner.**

[1710] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340. Also tombstone at Eatonville Cemetery, cited at Microfilm #6, Brown Collection.
[1711] Abstracts of Wills . . . NY State database, citing Herkimer County Probate, B:457.
[1712] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 189.
[1713] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340. Also tombstone at Eatonville Cemetery, cited at Microfilm #6, Browne Collection.
[1714] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340.
[1715] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 189.
[1716] Called Amy Griffis in her grandfather's 1822 will cited above. Probably the Amy Griffis, age 49, born New York, in U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Trumbull County, Warren, 377.

194. **STUKELY[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born in 1772, a son of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1717]

He married **LYDIA HILL** at Adams, Massachusetts, 7 January 1793.[1718]

Soon after their marriage, on 3 November 1793, Stukely and Lydia were of Herkimer, Herkimer County, New York, when he purchased 50 acres of land there from his sister Jerusha's husband, Jonathan Miller (see #191).[1719]

Shortly thereafter, Stukely evidently moved back east to Danby, Vermont, as he and his brothers Elisha (#192) and Joseph (#195) moved from Danby to Peru, Clinton County, New York, about 1797.[1720] Stukely purchased 105 acres of land in Peru on 3 September 1798.[1721]

He died at Peru 19 November 1800, at the age of 28, leaving three young children.[1722] Lydia married, second, Joseph Benson before 11 November 1803, when she was described as "formerly the wife and relict of Stukely Arnold late of Peru."[1723]

Stukely did not leave a will. On 23 July 1801, his brother Elisha and Henry Greer of Peru were appointed administrators of his estate.[1724] On 9 November 1802, the administrators petitioned the surrogate court for permission to sell land in Peru "from the estate of Stukely Arnold to his brother, Joseph Arnold, the Elder, of Peru (#195)." The transaction took place 25 May 1803.[1725]

[1717] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1718] Adams, Mass., Vital Records, FHL microfilm #760652.
[1719] Oneida County Deeds: 3:428 (before formation of Herkimer County).
[1720] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 337.
[1721] Clinton County Deeds, B:206.
[1722] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1723] Clinton County Deeds, C:197.
[1724] Abstracts of Wills . . . NY State database.
[1725] Clinton County Deeds, C:415.

Children of Stukely and Lydia (Hill) Arnold:[1726]

i. **Matilda[6] Arnold**, born 14 January 1794.

ii. **Silas Arnold**, born 8 October 1796.

iii. **Nathan Arnold**, born 23 December 1798.

[1726] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340.

195. **JOSEPH[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 6 May 1774, a son of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1727]

He married **RACHEL IRISH** at Danby, Vermont, 4 May 1800. She was born 10 September 1780, a daughter of Jonathan and Deborah (Wilbor) Irish of Tiverton, Rhode Island, Danby, Vermont, and Au Sable Forks (then part of Peru), Clinton County, New York).[1728]

Joseph and his brothers Elisha (#192) and Stukely (#194) moved from Danby, Vermont, to Peru, Clinton County, New York, about 1797.[1729] After returning for his wedding, Joseph took his bride to Peru, where they were listed in the 1800 U.S. Census as one male age 26–44 and one female age 16–25.[1730]

On 25 May 1803, Joseph purchased a parcel of land from the estate of his brother Stukely. On the same day he sold the land to his brother Elisha.[1731]

Joseph Arnold, age 76, born in Rhode Island, was listed in Peru, New York, for the 1850 census with Rachel Arnold, age 67, born in Vermont. (She was really age 69.) Next to them in the listings were their sons Henry, age 31, and Sidney, age 29, both born in New York.[1732]

Joseph died at Peru 16 September 1852. Rachel died 12 August 1858.[1733]

[1727] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1728] Willis Luther Irish, *Descendants of John Irish* (Freeport, Maine, 1964), 435.
[1729] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 337.
[1730] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Clinton County, Peru.
[1731] Clinton County Deeds, C:147, 415.
[1732] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Clinton County, Peru, 152.
[1733] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340.

Children of Joseph and Rachel (Irish) Arnold:[1734]

i. **Stukely[6] Arnold**, born 25 April 1801.

ii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 27 January 1803.

iii. **Caleb Arnold**, born 3 December 1805.

iv. **Joshua Arnold**, born 3 March 1808.

v. **Nathan Arnold**, born 8 October 1809.

vi. **Elisha Arnold**, born 28 November 1811.

vii. **Mary Arnold**, born 11 May 1814.

viii. **Darius Arnold**, born 4 July 1816.

ix. **Henry Arnold**, born 8 March 1819.

x. **Sidney Arnold**, born 12 April 1821.

[1734] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 340. Also the last seven recorded at the Peru, New York, Monthly Meeting of the Society of Friends, FHL microfilm #17364.

196. **MERCY[5] ARNOLD** *(Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born 6 May 1776, a daughter of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1735]

She married **CHARLES WALKER JR.** at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, 21 March 1799.[1736] He was born 30 October 1778,[1737] a son of Charles Walker who owned land in lot 54 on Upper or East Road in Adams, next to and south of Stukely Arnold's land.[1738]

On 14 December 1809, Charles Walker Jr. was on a committee of the First Baptist Church of Christ in Cheshire, Berkshire County, to appoint a Baptist preacher. On 17 October 1812, the church took up "the matter of difficulty of Brother Walker concerning singing in publick worship" and voted that "we believe that singing in part of the solemn worship of God is acceptable if performed by the saints." On 2 March 1816, the church gave Brother Charles Walker Jr. a letter of recommendation and dismissal "to any church of our faith and order."[1739]

Charles was probably listed in Adams with his father in the 1800 census as age 16–25.[1740] He was probably the male age 26–44 in the 1810 census of Charles Walker and Son.[1741] In 1820 he was listed as Charles Walker Jr. with a household of one male under age 10, two males age 10–15, one male age 16–18, one male age 26–44, two females under age 10, one female age 10–15, one female age 16–25, two females ages 26–44, one female age 45 or more, and four persons engaged in agriculture.[1742]

[1735] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1736] Adams, Mass., Vital Records, FHL microfilm #760652.
[1737] Microfilm #9, Browne Collection.
[1738] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 341.
[1739] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection, Cheshire Church Records, 103, 82, 85.
[1740] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Adams, 133.
[1741] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Adams, 165.
[1742] U.S. Census, 1820, Massachusetts, Adams, 68.

Charles and his father emigrated to Saybrook, Ashtabula County, Ohio, in 1821.[1743] Charles was listed there for the 1830 census with a household of nine persons.[1744]

Charles died at Saybrook 26 April 1847.[1745] In his will, dated 26 February 1844, he left his son Elisha his bed, bedding, clock, and other personal property. He also mentioned three sons, Ora A. , Smith, and Alden; and two daughters, Lydia Jenks and Alma. The inventory of his estate included a clock, a desk, a bed and bedding, an umbrella, three chairs, one stand, one trunk, a bearer note of Elisha Walker for $400, and $32 due from Lydia Jenks.[1746]

Children of Charles and Mercy (Arnold) Walker, order not certain:[1747]

i. **Lydia Walker**, born 26 September 1799.[1748]

ii. **Elisha Walker**, born Massachusetts 1802 (age 49 in 1850).[1749]

iii. **Ora A. Walker**, born Massachusetts about 1807 (age 43 in 1850).[1750]

iv. **Smith Walker**, born Massachusetts 11 August 1809 (age 40 in 1850).[1751]

[1743]Mrs. Gertrude Van Rensselaer Wickham, ed., "Memorial to the Pioneer Women of the Western Reserve," Part I, July 1896, 137–140, extracted as "Saybrook Women" at *www.RootsWeb.com/~ohashtab/pioneer/PWSAYBROOK.htm.*

[1744] U.S. Census, 1830, Ohio, Ashtabula County, Saybrook, 159.

[1745] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 341.

[1746] Ashtabula County Probate, 152:56, 62.

[1747] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 341. Only the first six are listed in the "Saybrook Women" article; perhaps the others died young.

[1748] Microfilm #9, Browne Collection.

[1749] U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Ashtabula County, Saybrook, 313. Year 1802 at *Biographical History of Northeastern Ohio* (Chicago, 1893), 312.

[1750] U.S. Census, 1850, Illinois, Will County, Joliet, 24.

[1751] U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Ashtabula County, Saybrook, 310. Exact date at *Biographical History of Northeastern Ohio*, 312.

v. **Alma Walker**, born Massachusetts about 1813 (age 37 in 1850).[1752]

vi. **Alden Walker**, born Massachusetts about 1816 (age 34 in 1850).[1753]

vii. **Ruth Walker.**

viii. **David Walker.**

ix. **George Walker.**

x. **Mary Walker.**

[1752] Identified as wife of Ralph Abel in "Saybrook Women" article, U.S. Census, 1850, Illinois, Winnebago County, Roscoe, 386, "Almy Abel, age 37, born in Massachusetts in household of Ralph Abel."

[1753] U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Geauga County, Claridon, 231.

197. **SILAS[5] ARNOLD** *(Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born about 9 May 1779, a son of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1754]

He married his cousin **BELINDA "LYNDA" ARNOLD** at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, 12 January 1800.[1755] She was born presumably at Adams about 1781, a daughter of Comfort Arnold and his first wife (#66).

Silas purchased 27 acres of land in Smithfield 18 September 1790, when he was 21 years old.[1756] He was appointed to administer his father's estate in 1804 as the oldest son still residing in Massachusetts. In 1810 Silas headed a household in Adams with three boys and three girls ages 15 or younger.[1757]

Silas is said to have moved to Peru, Clinton County, New York, where his older brothers Stukely (#194), Elisha (#192) and Joseph (#195) had settled in the 1790s. [1758] He did not stay there long, however.

On 15 May 1818, Silas and "Lynda" were of Brutus, Cayuga County, New York, when they sold three parcels of land in Brutus.[1759] He headed a household at Brutus in 1820, with eight children in the household.[1760] His son Silas died in Cayuga County in 1821 at the age of 6 months 11 days.[1761]

Silas and Belinda were members of the Baptist Church at Brutus (later called the First Baptist Church of Sennett), Cayuga County, along with Belinda's brother Joseph Arnold (#195). The

---

[1754] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336. Day and month of birth calculated from age at death on tombstone.
[1755] Adams, Mass., Vital Records, FHL microfilm #760652.
[1756] Smithfield Deeds, 8:158.
[1757] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 135.
[1758] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1759] Cayuga County Deeds, V:27, X:258, Z:13.
[1760] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cayuga County, Brutus, 23.
[1761] Old Sennett Cemetery at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/cem.*

church records show their dates of death.[1762] (Sennett was formed from a part of Brutus in 1827.)

Silas died 27 April 1838, age 58 years 11 months 16 days; he is buried in Old Sennett Cemetery.[1763]

The will of "Silas Arnold of Brutus, Cayuga County," written 9 November 1835, was proved 7 August 1838. He provided his wife, Lynda, with use and occupation of half of the farm house "where I now live," $65, one horse wagon and cutter, one cow, one hog, and six sheep. He named his eldest daughter, Nancy Page, wife of Jason Page of Schroeppel, Oswego County; Cynthia Baldwin, wife of James Baldwin of Preble, Cortland County; Mary Brown, wife of Erasmus Brown of Brutus; Lynda Dow, wife of Stephen Dow of Unadilla, Livingston County, Michigan; three sons Nathan Arnold, Almon C. Arnold of Mount Morris, Livingston County, New York, and youngest son, Elijah Arnold, who was named executor. He also named granddaughter Lynda Arnold, daughter of William Arnold, and grandson Nathan Merritt Arnold, both under age 21.[1764]

Belinda is listed in the 1850 census at Brutus, Cayuga County, as age 69, born in Massachusetts.[1765] She died March 1857, according to the Baptist Church records.[1766]

Children of Silas and Belinda (Arnold) Arnold:

i. **Nancy[6] Arnold**, born Massachusetts about 1801; called eldest daughter in father's will.[1767]

[1762] Records of the Baptist Church at Sennett at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga.*

[1763] Old Sennett Cemetery at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/cem.*

[1764] Cayuga County Probate, D:81.

[1765] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cayuga County, Brutus, 409.

[1766] Records of the Baptist Church at Sennett at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga.*

[1767] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cayuga County, Brutus, 409: Nancy Page, age 49, born in Mass., with Jesse Page.

ii. **Cynthia Arnold**, born Massachusetts about 1801.[1768]

iii **William Arnold**, born about 24 October 1804.[1769]

iv **Nathan Arnold**, born Massachusetts about 1807.[1770]

v. **Mary Arnold**, born New York about 1809.[1771]

vi. **Almon C. Arnold**, born New York in 1811.[1772]

vii. **Lynda Arnold**, born about 1817.[1773]

viii. **Elijah Arnold**, possibly born about 1819; called youngest son in father's will[1774]

ix. **Silas[6] Arnold, Jr.** , born about 10 July 1820; died 21 January 1821, age 6 months 11 days.[1775]

[1768] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cortland County, Preble, 328: Cynthia Baldwin, age 49, born in Mass., with James Baldwin.

[1769] Died 31 October 1834, aged 30 years 7 days, according to tombstone at Tuscarora, Mount Morris Township, Livingston County, N.Y., read by Mark Denman.

[1770] U.S. Census, 1850, Michigan, Washtenaw County, Saline, 362: Nathan S. Arnold, age 43, born in Mass.

[1771] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Chautauqua County, Charlotte, 223: Mary Brown, age 41, born in N.Y., with Erasmus Brown.

[1772] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cayuga County, Victory, 151: "Almond" Arnold, age 39, born in N.Y.; 1860, Michigan, St. Joseph County, Burr Oak, 194: age 48, born in N.Y.; 1900, Ohio, Sandusky County, Green Creek, 9: Almon Arnold, born 1811, N.Y.

[1773] U.S. Census, 1850, Michigan, Washtenaw County, Sylvan, 305: Lynda Dow, age 33, born in N.Y., with Steven Dow.

[1774] Possibly the Elijah Arnold, age 31, born in N.Y., at U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Livingston County, Springwater, 255.

[1775] Old Sennett Cemetery at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/cem.*

198. **GEORGE[5] ARNOLD** (*Stukely[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born at Adams, Massachusetts, in 1783, a son of Stukely and Lydia (Edmunds) Arnold.[1776]

He married first **WAITY SMITH** at Adams 9 December 1804, after declaring intentions 17 November 1804. Both were of Adams.[1777]

He married, second **CLARISSA CASE**, who was mentioned in his 1857 will and was listed in his household in 1860 as Clarissa Arnold, age 60.

George headed a household at Adams in 1810 that included three males under age 10, one male age 26–44, and one female age 16–25.[1778]

George was living at Brutus, Cayuga County, New York, 1 February 1816, when he purchased 70 acres of land in Aurelius, Cayuga County.[1779] On 21 September 1819, George sold 50 acres of land in Aurelius to his brother, Nathan Arnold (#190) of Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York; he purchased it back 10 September 1822.[1780] George was listed at Aurelius in 1820 with a household of three males age 10–15, one male age 26–44, two females under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1781] He was still at Aurelius 26 March 1823, when he and Waity, his wife, sold 50 acres of land there.[1782]

The obituary of their daughter, Waity, who was born at Aurelius in 1819, says the family moved when she was an infant to Mount

---

[1776] Clark, "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield," *NYGBR* 63 (1932): 336.
[1777] Adams Marriages and Intentions, Rollin Cooke Collection, Adams, Mass., Vital Records, FHL microfilm #760652.
[1778] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 161.
[1779] Cayuga County Deeds, 5:115.
[1780] Cayuga County Deeds, V:469, Z:287.
[1781] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cayuga County, Aurelius, 43.
[1782] Cayuga County Deeds, Z:292.

Morris, Livingston County, New York.[1783] If this is true, it was a short stay.

In 1825, they moved to Machias, Cattaraugus County, New York.[1784] George purchased land there from the Holland Land Company 17 August 1827, 10 July 1828, and 31 August 1819. His eldest son Samuel, who turned 21 in about 1825, also purchased land on 9 July 1828 and 8 April 1829.[1785] In an 1834 list of landowners in Machias, George had 88 acres, Samuel 81 acres, and son Alden 46 acres.[1786]

In her old age, daughter Waity told about their home. Her father had to cut a road through the last mile of a dense growth of timber to their land, where he built a log house. An oven that her mother used for baking was built on one side of the house, of the same stone and mortar used for the foundation. She baked rye and "Indian" bread and mince and pumpkin pies. Waity's interviewer reported that "later a frame house was built and a brick oven was one of the luxuries in their home.. The farm work and razing of stumps were done by oxen, as horses were seldom seen."[1787]

An early incident in the Arnold family at Machias is relayed in the county history:

> In the fall of 1828 three daughters of George Arnold, ranging from ten to seventeen years of age, started out one pleasant Sunday morning in quest of wintergreen berries. They did not intend to go farther than half a mile from the house, but, after entering the woods, lost their way, and began wandering. Go whichever direction they would, it was all, all wilderness; no opening could be found. As they did not return at dinner-time, their people became alarmed, and began to halloo for them, but got no answer.

[1783] Obituary of Waity Arnold Ashcraft, who died 27 December 1912, in "A Circle of Friends in Cattaraugus County, New York," at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycattar/pioneer/sparks.htm.*

[1784] *History of Cattaraugus County, N.Y.* (Philadelphia, 1879), 356–368.

[1785] Livsey, *Western New York Land Transactions,* 78, 79, 145, 146, 214.

[1786] *History of Cattaraugus County,* 356–368.

[1787] "Circle of Friends and Family in Cattaraugus County"; see note 1783.

> In the afternoon search was begun by a few neighbors, there numbers constantly increasing as the news spread through the settlements that lost children were in the woods. Nightfall came, and still no tidings of the lost ones. A drenching rain-storm set in, and the search was discontinued, except by two men, who volunteered to remain out all night and listen for any unusual sound or cry of distress. By this time the search had been carried over into Ashford, three or four miles northwest of Mr. Arnold's house. Late in the night these two men heard a cry as if of a female or a panther, they could not determine which, but concluded not to investigate further until morning. They then proceeded to a settler's house in Dutch Hollow, and remained until daylight.
>
> The following day a militia company was to meet at Machias Corners for training. They assembled early, and, learning of the lost children postponed their contemplated military evolutions and joined in the search. At daybreak the two men who had been out through the night sought the locality from whence proceeded the cry of the night before, and there, away up on a high bluff, near the creek, were found the girls, shivering with hunger, cold, and fear, but otherwise unharmed.
>
> They had walked the woods and called for help all through the long night. Once they passed very near and disturbed some animals, which they described as making a noise like little pigs. There, no doubt, were young cubs. Although this happened fifty years ago, the girls (now quite elderly ladies) are all here to-day, viz., Mrs. Chester Ashcraft and Mrs. Nathan Ashcraft, of Machias, and Mrs. Mercy Read of Arcade.[1788]

George was listed at Machias near his sons Samuel and Alden in the 1835 New York state census. His household included two males and three females. One male was subject to military duty and eligible to vote, and one female was unmarried and age 16 or more.[1789] He was at Machias in the 1830 and 1840 censuses. In 1850 his household included George Arnold, age 67, born in Massachusetts; "Weighty" Arnold, age 64, born in Massachusetts;

[1788] *History of Cattaraugus County*, 356–368.

[1789] "Abstracts of the 1825 and 1835 Census of Cattaraugus County," *Tree Talks* 37 (1997): 41.

Daniel Arnold, age 26, born in New York; and Phebe Arnold (presumably Daniel's wife), age 24, born in New York. George was in Yorkshire, Cattaraugus County, in 1860, age 77, living with Clarissa Arnold, age 60.[1790]

George Arnold of Machias purchased a parcel of land in Yorkshire 22 February 1856.[1791]

On 17 February 1857, George Arnold of Yorkshire, age 74, wrote his will. He died 22 July 1864. In his will, proved 3 October 1864, he left his property to his wife, Clarissa Case, and authorized her to sell real estate if needed for her support. Any property remaining on the death of his wife was to be distributed to his children in equal proportions. Clarissa C. Arnold was named executor.[1792]

George's probate petition of 16 August 1864 lists the following children:[1793]

> Samuel Arnold of Rio, Knox County, Illinois; Philip Arnold of Yorkshire, Cattaraugus County, New York; Alden Arnold of Domestick, Williams County, Ohio; Lydia, wife of Chester Ashcroft of Machias, Cattaraugus County, New York; Mercy, wife of A. Reed of China, Wyoming County, New York; Waity, wife of A. Ashcroft of Machias, Cattaraugus County, New York; Daniel Arnold of Rio, Knox County, Illinois.

Children of George and Waity (Smith) Arnold, the first four born in Massachusetts and the last three in New York:

i. **Samuel Arnold**, born about 1805 (age 45 in 1850).[1794]

[1790] U.S. Census, New York, Cattaraugus County, Machias, 1830, 169; 1840, 28; 1850, 478A; 1860 (Yorkshire), 296.

[1791] Cattaraugus County Deeds, 42:57.

[1792] Cattaraugus County Wills, 3:645.

[1793] Cattaraugus County Probate file photocopied by Sharon Fellows, County Historian.

[1794] U.S. Census, 1850, Illinois, Knox County, Township 11, 354.

ii. **Philip Arnold**, born about 1807 Massachusetts (age 53 in 1860).[1795]

iii. **Alden Arnold**, born 14 May 1809 (age 41 in 1850).[1796]

iv. **Lydia Arnold**, born about 1812 (age 68 in 1880).[1797]

v. **Mercy Arnold**, born about 1817 (age 33 in 1850).[1798]

vi. **Waity Arnold**, born Aurelius, Cayuga County, 28 February 1819.[1799]

vii. **Daniel Arnold**, born about 1824 (age 26 in 1850).[1800]

[1795] U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Williams County, Mill Creek, 29; 1860, Illinois, Knox County, Rio, 554.

[1796] U.S. Census, 1850, Ohio, Williams County, Mill Creek, 29; 1860, Mill Creek, 132. Charles Arnold cites a family Bible record provided in 2002 by a Heather Arnold for the date on his website, "ARNOLD — Thomas of Providence RI (1599-1674) — Some of his ARNOLD Descendants," *http://worldconnect.RootsWeb.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=tharnoldri&id.*

[1797] U.S. Census, 1880, New York, Cattaraugus County, Machias. Identified as the wife of Chester Ashcraft in *History of Cattaraugus County,* 356–368. She was the eldest of the three daughters lost in the woods.

[1798] Identified as Mercy Read of Arcade, one of the three girls lost in the woods, in *History of Cattaraugus County,* 356–368. U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Wyoming County, China (includes the town of Arcade), 347: Mercy Reed, wife of Alanson Reed.

[1799] Obituary of Waity Arnold Ashcraft, in "Circle of Friends and Family in Cattaraugus County," at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycattar/pioneer/sparks.htm.*

[1800] Living with George and Waity in U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cattaraugus County, 478A.

199. **BENJAMIN[5] ARNOLD** *(Samuel[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 4 3rd month [March] 1758, a son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold.[1801]

He married **ISABEL GREENE** at the Narragansett Society of Friends 5 4th month [April] 1786.[1802] A certificate from the Providence Friends dated 7 3rd month [March] 1785 stated that Benjamin Arnold of North Providence was cleared for marriage with Isabel. She was born at Warwick, Rhode Island, 18 June 1764, a daughter of Paul and Sarah (Hall) Greene.[1803] In his will of 16 February 1805, Isabel's father, Paul Greene of Warwick, named grandchildren Hannah G. Arnold and Aza Arnold, children of his daughter Isabel.[1804]

Isabel died 12 8th month [August] 1790 at the age of 35 years, a month after the birth of her last child, who died at the age of 1 day, as recorded by the Providence Society of Friends.[1805]

Benjamin married, second, **RACHEL HARRIS** at Smithfield 5 6th month [June] 1793, a daughter of David and Abigail (Farnum) Harris.[1806] In his will of 19 February 1801, Rachel's father, David Harris of Smithfield, named his daughter Rachel Arnold.[1807]

"Benjamin Arnold, blacksmith" purchased a 1½-acre lot in North Providence, near Pawtucket Falls, from Thomas and Mary Arnold in 1785. He sold a blacksmith's shop at Pawtucket Falls in 1791.[1808]

[1801] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.
[1802] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Narragansett Friends Marriages, 131.
[1803] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 1: Warwick Births and Deaths, 175.
[1804] "Warwick Wills," *RIGR* 7 (1984): 315.
[1805] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Deaths, 265.
[1806] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Providence Friends Marriages, 236.
[1807] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 84.
[1808] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," citing North Providence Deeds, 2:201, 2:311.

In the 8th month [August] of 1804, Benjamin and his wife Rachel sold a blacksmith's shop at Pawtucket Falls, "below the dam." On 31 August 1804, Benjamin's brother, John (#200), wrote their brother Samuel (#201) telling him that Benjamin had sold his interests in North Providence and "is going to the country, but is not sure where." John thought he should go near Nine Partners in Dutchess County, New York.[1809]

Benjamin and Rachel did move to Dutchess County. They were listed at Stanford, Dutchess County, in census records from 1810 through 1830. In 1810 their household included 4 girls and 2 boys. In 1830 it included one male age 70–80 and one female age 60–70.[1810]

Benjamin received a distribution from his father's estate on 15 April 1814.[1811]

The will of Benjamin Arnold of Stanford, Dutchess County, New York, was proved 25 April 1837. He mentioned his sons Thomas Arnold of Stanford and Asa Arnold of North Providence, Rhode Island; daughter Rachel Gurney, wife of Henry H. Gurney; and Isabella Brown, daughter of Abiah Brown and Hannah G. Brown, deceased daughter. David Arnold of Poughkeepsie, New York, was named guardian for Isabella's inheritance.[1812]

Children of Benjamin and Isabel (Greene) Arnold, as recorded by the Providence Society of Friends:[1813]

i. **Hannah[6] Greene Arnold**, born 22 6th month [June] 1786.

[1809] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," citing letters given to the Rhode Island Historical Society in 1897 by Edward T. Raymond of Worcester, Mass.

[1810] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Dutchess County, Stanford, 261; 1820, 141; 1830, 417.

[1811] Smithfield Probate, 3:540.

[1812] Dutchess County Probate Packet 3532, FHL microfilm #915156. David was a son of Benjamin's first cousin Levi Arnold.

[1813] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Births, 245.

ii. **Asa Arnold**, born 4 10th month [October] 1788.

iii. **Daughter**, born 7 7th month [July] 1790; died 8 7th month [July] 1790, aged 1 day.

Children of Benjamin and Rachel (Harris) Arnold:[1814]

iv. **Thomas Arnold**, born 5 11th month [November] 1794.

v. **Rachel Arnold.**

vi. **Isabella Arnold,** not mentioned in father's will.

vii. **Eliza Arnold,** not mentioned in father's will.

[1814] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Providence Friends Births, 245, for Thomas. The other children are listed in Clarke, *The Greenes of Rhode Island*, 321. Asa, Thomas, Rachel, and Isabella are listed in the 1856 will of their aunt, Anna Arnold, cited in Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."

200. **JOHN**[5] **ARNOLD** (*Samuel*[4], *Joseph*[3], *Eleazer*[2], *Thomas*[1]) was born 28 2nd month [February] 1760, a son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold.[1815]

John married **ABIGAIL SMITH** in about 1794, as their first child was born in 1795. She was born about 1765 (figuring from her age at death) and died at Baltimore, Maryland, 15 January 1798, age 33 years.[1816]

His second wife was **CHARLOTTE "ABBY" TROOP**, a widow from Virginia or Maryland,[1817] whom he married about 1799, as their son was born in 1800.[1818]

When John was just short of 20 years old, in 1st month [January] 1780, the Smithfield Society of Fiends noted that

> John Arnold hath of late at least attended one place of merriment and frolicking and has very much declined the use of the plain language . . . and too much neglected the attendance of our religious meetings.

After a committee visited with him, he was disowned in 3rd month [March] 1780.[1819]

John's response was to leave town and go to sea. Toward the end of the American Revolution, he was captured by the British when he was on board the brig *Sallie* bound for Virginia. *Sallie* was owned by three of John's uncles. John was held prisoner in New York. Moses Brown wrote a letter on his behalf on 22 March 1782 and received a reply some weeks later that John had been released.[1820]

[1815] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.

[1816] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 85.

[1817] Greene, "Arnold Family," 107.

[1818] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," 14.

[1819] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308.

[1820] Smithfield Friends records, FHL microfilm #1308, citing Moses Brown Papers at the Rhode Island Historical Society.

John joined his younger brother, Samuel (#201), in business as a merchant in Baltimore, Maryland. John wrote their brother Jonathan (#204) from Baltimore on 8 January 1798, stating, "We arrived here 20 days after we left Providence. There is little doing here at present." However, John's wife, Abigail, died there a week later, 15 January. On 18 February 1798, Samuel wrote, "Brother John left on Sunday morning the 18th with his lovely little daughter" (Louisa was about 2½ years old) on a sloop for Newport. "Our brother could not pay much attention to our business. It will take him three months to get the necessary information of the state of our business for me to leave it." On 17 May 1798, Samuel wrote, "I have now the pleasure of advising you that our brother John arrived safe the night before last, and appears as healthy as I have seen him this long time." Subsequent correspondence was addressed to "John and Samuel Arnold, Merchants, Baltimore."[1821]

After John's marriage to Charlotte in about 1799, a series of family letters tell something of John and his family. On 24 November 1803, Charlotte wrote John's parents telling of his "sweet little daughter" Louisa, then with her grandparents. On 27 November 1803 John wrote his father that he was going to Spain in a few days. On 4 February 1804 he wrote his brother from Bilbao, Spain, telling of a long voyage and bad weather. On 29 July 1804 he wrote his brother Samuel from Charleston, stating that he had just arrived from Bordeaux. On 31 August 1804 he wrote again to Samuel of their brother Benjamin, who had sold his interests in North Providence and "is to go to the country, but is not sure where." John thought he should go near Nine Partners, Dutchess County, New York. On 16 August 1805 he wrote his parents and said he was going to Gottenburg, Sweden.[1822]

[1821] Jonathan Arnold file.

[1822] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," 14–16, citing letters given to the Rhode Island Historical Society in 1897 by Edward T. Raymond of Worcester, Mass.

In 1806, when John was 46 years old, he was on a voyage to the West Indies when his vessel was captured by a French privateer at the end of June, within an hour's sail of his port of destination..[1823] According to his obituary, he was captured by pirates and stripped of all his wealth. He made his escape from captivity and crossed the mountains of St. Domingo. His exertions ruined his health and brought on a fever. He died 30 August 1806, on board the brigantine *Seaflower* en route from St. Domingo to Baltimore. He had been going to sea for more than twenty-five years.[1824]

Child of John and Abigail (Smith) Arnold:[1825]

i. **Louisa Mary[6] Arnold**, born 6 November 1795.

Child of John and Charlotte "Abby" (Troop) Arnold:[1826]

ii. **John Richard Arnold**, born about 1800; died 27 August 1823, in his 23rd year.

[1823] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," citing a letter of Elizabeth Steever dated 8 September 1806 given to the Rhode Island Historical Society in 1897 by Edward T. Raymond of Worcester, Mass.

[1824] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*,13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 133.

[1825] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," citing the 1856 will of her aunt, Anna Arnold, listing Louisa Mary Pearson as the sole heir of John.

[1826] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."

201. **SAMUEL[5] ARNOLD** (*Samuel[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 4 3rd month [March] 1773, a son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold.[1827]

Samuel's marriage to **PHEBE JACKSON** in Providence was noted in the *Providence Gazette* of 29 September 1798, which said that Samuel was a merchant in Baltimore.[1828] She was born about 1775 (figuring from her age at death), a daughter of Capt. Richard and Susan (Waterman) Jackson.[1829] She died 5 November 1821, aged 46 years 30 days.[1830]

He next married **FREELOVE SOPHIA BARNES** on 6 November 1823. Both were living at Providence.[1831] She was born about 1790 (calculating from her age at death), a daughter of David Leonard and Joanna (Jenks) (Russell) Barnes.[1832] She died 30 August 1824, aged 34 years 8 months.[1833]

Samuel was living at Providence when he married, third, **MARGARET LOUISA LYMAN** of North Providence 5 November 1827.[1834] She was born 24 November 1786, a daughter of Col. Daniel and Mary (Wanton) Lyman.[1835] She died 18 May 1865, aged 78 years.[1836]

[1827] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.

[1828] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 482.

[1829] Donald Lines Jacobus, *The Waterman Family, Volume III, Descendants of Richard Waterman* (Hartford, Conn., 1954), 28.

[1830] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 136.

[1831] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 488.

[1832] For information on Freelove's parents, see William Reed Deane, "Genealogical Memoir of the Leonard Family," *Register* 5 (1851): 408, and Browne, *Jenks Family,* 62.

[1833] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 84; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,*13: Providence Gazette Deaths, 138.

[1834] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 17: Providence Phenix Marriages, 61.

[1835] Lyman Coleman, *Genealogy of the Lyman Family* (Albany, 1872), 208.

[1836] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."

As indicated in a series of letters to his younger brother, Jonathan (#204), Samuel established himself as a merchant in Baltimore as early as 21 May 1796, when he was 23 years old. On 18 October 1796, Samuel asked Jonathan to "put on board one barrel of cider and one barrel of apples which father will deliver."[1837]

On 21 June 1797 Samuel wrote 20-year-old Jonathan that he had heard Jonathan was spending time at Mr. Jackson's and Mr. Waterman's. Samuel said, "You will there find the company I spent most of my leisure time with whilst in Providence . . . what I think must be agreeable to any young person." The next year, Samuel returned to Providence, where he married Mr. Jackson's daughter.[1838]

In 1797 Samuel wrote, "Business is exceedingly dull." He wrote Jonathan, "I am anxiously expecting the book on book keeping which I desired you to send." In 1798, "Business continues to be very dull."[1839]

In 1798 the merchant trader's business may have been dull, but it was difficult. The French had started seizing American ships in the Caribbean; decrees issued in Paris indicated that they had launched an undeclared war on American shipping.[1840] Samuel wrote on 7 April 1798, "We have now considerable property out abroad, but think should we be fortunate enough to get it all home safe, we shall make no more adventures whilst the times continue so precarious." On 19 June 1798 he noted that "the prevailing opinion is that we shall have a war soon. On Saturday last a subscription was opened at the exchange to raise money to build two ships of war."[1841] Several months later, on 3 October 1800, a treaty was signed with France, ending the conflicts.[1842]

[1837] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1838] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1839] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1840] David McCullough, *John Adams* (New York, 2001), 477.
[1841] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1842] McCullough, *John Adams*, 552.

In what evidently had been the plan all along, Samuel's older brother John (#200) joined him in Baltimore in 1798. Subsequent correspondence was addressed to "John and Samuel Arnold, Merchants, Baltimore."[1843]

Not all the business news was bad. On 11 September 1798, John wrote, "I am happy to hear of the safe arrival of the *Liberty*. Our brother left for Providence on 29 August; he will be able to sort out the business of the ship."[1844]

A few days after arriving in Providence in September 1798, Samuel married Phebe Jackson. A letter dated 22 October 1798 was addressed to Samuel Arnold, "now in Providence." Samuel wrote to Jonathan on 15 November 1798 saying that they had arrived in Baltimore.[1845]

At some point Samuel and Phebe returned to Rhode Island. In 1810, he was living at Providence near his father-in-law, Richard Jackson Sr., with a household of one male age 16–26, one male age 26–45, one female age 10 or younger, one female age 10–16, and one female age 26–45.[1846]

Samuel Arnold established a distillery in Smithfield about 1816. As it proved unprofitable, in 1826 he and his cousin, former governor Lemuel H. Arnold, converted it into a printing plant under the name of Arnoldville Printing Company.[1847]

Samuel died 7 November 1842.[1848] He left no will. His assets included a pew in the Unitarian Church of Providence.[1849]

[1843] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1844] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1845] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1846] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, Providence North District, 328.
[1847] Steere, *History of Smithfield,* 142.
[1848] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 84.
[1849] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."

Children of Samuel and Phebe (Jackson) Arnold:[1850]

i. **Susan G.[6] Arnold**.

ii. **Anna Elizabeth Arnold**, born 21 June 1799.[1851]

Samuel and Freelove Sophia (Barnes) Arnold had one child who died in infancy.[1852]

[1850] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."

[1851] Birth date also on gravestone ("Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 [1995]: 84).

[1852] Greene, "Arnold Family," 108.

202. **ELIZABETH[5] ARNOLD** (*Samuel[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 29 3rd month [March] 1775, a daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold.[1853]

She married **CHRISTOPHER BROWN** before 20 November 1792, when she signed a deed with him.[1854] He was born about 1763 (figuring from his age at death).[1855] He was probably a son of Christopher and Lydia (Jenks) Brown of Smithfield, Rhode Island; Christopher Brown mentioned his son Christopher, under age 21, in his will written 23 January 1778.[1856]

Christopher entered into various deeds in Smithfield in 1792, 1793, and 1800.[1857]

On 23 March 1801, Elizabeth's sister Mercy (#203) wrote their brother Jonathan, about an accident that Elizabeth's son Nathan had had nineteen days earlier. She spoke of the "misfortune little Nathan had; it will be a great awhile before he can walk." She added a note in the same letter, dated 25 March, stating that she had returned late that evening from Christopher's.[1858]

Christopher Brown died 8 July 1809 in his 46th year; he is buried in the Arnold Cemetery in what is now Lincoln, Rhode Island.[1859]

His will, written 28 June 1809 at Smithfield, was proved 29 July 1809. He mentioned his wife Elizabeth Brown, "who is to bring up my children not yet 21." He named five sons and one daughter: John, Nathan, Richard, Christopher, Samuel, and Abigail.[1860]

[1853] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.
[1854] Smithfield Deeds, 9:148.
[1855] Elizabeth was called the widow of Christopher Brown on her tombstone.
[1856] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 12 (1989): 32.
[1857] Smithfield Deeds, 9:148, 189, 194, 465; 11:4.
[1858] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1859] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 85.
[1860] "Smithfield Wills," *RIGR* 14 (1991): 87.

Elizabeth Brown, age 85, was living at Smithfield with her son John, age 65, at the time of the 1860 census.[1861]

She died 17 September 1866, "aged 91 years, 6 months."[1862]

Children of Christopher and Elizabeth (Arnold) Brown, named in their father's will:

i. **John Brown**, born about 1795 (age 65 in 1860 census).

ii. **Abigail Brown**, born about 1798; died 16 November 1864 in her 79th year.[1863]

iii. **Nathan Brown**, born perhaps about 1799, figuring from the March 1801 letter about his accident.

iv. **Richard Brown.**

v. **Christopher Brown**, born about 1804; died 3 August 1890, aged 86 years.[1864]

vi. **Samuel Brown.**

[1861] U.S. Census, 1860, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield, 426.
[1862] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 85.
[1863] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."
[1864] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield."

203. **MERCY[5] ARNOLD** (*Samuel[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 16 8th month [August] 1777, a daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold.[1865]

Mercy married **GEORGE SMITH** as reported in the *Providence Gazette* of 23 March 1805.[1866] He was born 20 September 1775, a son of Benjamin and Mary (_____) Smith.[1867]

In the 1850 census, George was listed at Smithfield, Rhode Island, as age 74, a farmer, born in Rhode Island, and "Marcy" was listed as age 72, born in Rhode Island. No children were listed with them.[1868]

Mercy died 14 April 1859. George died a few days later, on 29 April 1859. Both are buried in the Arnold lot of Smithfield, now Lincoln, Rhode Island.[1869]

The inventory of Mercy's estate was filed 18 July 1859, showing shares in two Providence banks valued at $1,221 and bank deposits of $586. The inventory of George's estate, filed 30 July 1859, showed furniture and other assets valued at only $288. It was stated that at the time of death, George was indebted to various persons for more than the value of his inventory.[1870]

Child of George and Mercy (Arnold) Smith:[1871]

i. **Sarah Smith.**

[1865] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.

[1866] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 15: Providence Gazette Marriages, 341.

[1867] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 83; gravestone names his parents and his date of birth.

[1868] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield Districts 2 and 3, 129.

[1869] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 83; gravestone names his parents and his date of birth.

[1870] Smithfield Probate, 11:34, 52, 53.

[1871] Greene, "Arnold Family," 108.

204. **JONATHAN[5] ARNOLD** (*Samuel[4], Joseph[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born 6 8th month [August] 1777, a son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Arnold.[1872]

Jonathan was living at Smithfield, Rhode Island, when he married **ABIGAIL RANDALL** at North Providence, Rhode Island, 12 January 1806. She was born about 1786 (calculating from her age at death), a daughter of John and Mercy (Mowry) Randall of North Providence.[1873]

At age 19, Jonathan moved to Providence to live and work with his cousin Thomas Arnold, a merchant (#141). His older brother Samuel, was working as a merchant in Baltimore, Maryland, and wrote a series of letters to Jonathan from 1796 through 1798. In 1797 Samuel wrote 20-year-old Jonathan that he had heard Jonathan was spending time at Mr. Jackson's and Mr. Waterman's. Samuel said, "You will there find the company I spent most of my leisure time with whilst in Providence . . . what I think must be agreeable to any young person."[1874]

With brothers and cousins involved in international trade, Jonathan gave serious consideration to going to sea. A problem was that the French had started seizing American ships in the Caribbean and, through decrees issued in Paris, had launched an undeclared war on American shipping.[1875] On 7 April 1798, Jonathan's brother Samuel wrote, "You wish me to give you some advice. First it is my decided opinion that you not go to sea. Our brother John is now with you. He can tell you from experience what a seafaring life is; he followed the same almost 20 years." On 8 August 1798, Samuel wrote, "I am sorry to observe you have a notion of trying the seas." On 14 October 1798, his brother John (#200) wrote, "I should be glad to hear what you intend to do the

---

[1872] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 7: Smithfield Friends Births and Deaths, 181.

[1873] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 2: North Providence Marriages, 7; 14: Providence Gazette Marriages, 483.

[1874] Jonathan Arnold file.

[1875] McCullough, *John Adams*, 477.

winter. You mentioned to me some time past of Thomas Arnold's fitting a ship to Europe and you had some thought of going on her. I think you had better not go to sea these difficult times."[1876]

About this time, Jonathan joined his brothers' merchant firm in Baltimore. On 8 June 1799, Dan B. Wheeler wrote him from Providence, "I have heard of your arrival in Baltimore. Recollect my dear fellow the difficulties attending a seafareing life." On 30 7th month [July] 1799, his sister wrote him "c/o John and Samuel Arnold, merchants, Baltimore."[1877]

Jonathan was 22 years old when a friend of his, John Crow, who was working in Charleston, South Carolina, wrote on 15 September 1799, "Respecting your opinion of the Baltimore ladies, you say you have not seen a handsome [one] since you came to Baltimore. There is a great many fine looking and very sociable young ladies in this place, but the[y] want the bloom of the Northern Ladies."[1878]

Jonathan was back in Providence on 9 March 1800, but by 1 July he had returned to Baltimore. He was at Smithfield on 4 June 1803 when his brother John wrote him, "I wish very much to no [*sic*] what your determinations are with respect to going to sea." He was at Smithfield on 12 January 1806 when he married. His papers include an 1814 tax receipt from Smithfield and a receipt dated 10 July 1816 for a $1 duty on a chaise (two-wheeled carriage).[1879]

The 1850 census of Smithfield lists Jonathan Arnold, age 72, farmer, with Abigail, age 62, and three of their sons, all born in Rhode Island: John R. , age 42, machinist; Samuel age 37, farmer: and James, age 32, laborer.[1880]

[1876] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1877] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1878] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1879] Jonathan Arnold file.
[1880] U.S. Census, 1850, Rhode Island, Providence County, Smithfield Districts 2 and 3, 131.

Jonathan Arnold died 15 July 1852 "in his 75th year," and is buried in the Arnold Cemetery of Smithfield, now Lincoln, Rhode Island.[1881]

"Abigail Arnold, wife of Jonathan Arnold and daughter of John and Mercy Randall died 31 December 1869 in her 84th year" and is buried next to her husband.[1882]

Children of Jonathan and Abigail (Randall) Arnold:[1883]

i. **John R.[6] Arnold**, born 25 December 1806.

ii. **Maria Arnold**, born 11 August 1808.

iii. **Mercy Arnold**, born 21 January [1811?].

iv. **Samuel Arnold**, born 29 May 1813.

v. **Elizabeth Arnold**, born November 1815.

vi. **James Arnold**, born 14 October 1817.

vii. **Louisa Arnold**, born 15 July 1821.

viii. **Christopher Arnold**, died young.[1884]

[1881] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 84. Sons John R., Samuel, and James are buried in the same lot.

[1882] "Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *RIGR* 19 (1995): 84.

[1883] Chapin, "Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield," citing correspondence with Judge Edward T. Raymond, son of Jonathan and Abigail's daughter, Mercy (Arnold) Raymond. This source also cites the 1856 will of Jonathan's sister, Anna Arnold, who mentioned heirs of her late brother: Jonathan Arnold, James M. Arnold, Maria Arnold, Elizabeth Cooks, Louisa Green, and Marcy Raymond.

[1884] Greene, "Arnold Family," 203.

205. **JOHN B.[5] ARNOLD** (*Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 4 April 1763, a son of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold[1885]

He married **LUCY HUNT** probably at Smithfield in about 1791 (figuring from the 1792 birth year of their first child). She was born 9 June 1770, a daughter of Adam and Mary (Austin) Hunt.[1886]

According to a note in their family Bible, John and Lucy moved from Smithfield to Herkimer County, New York, in March 1793.[1887] On 20 February 1797, John Arnold of Fairfield, Herkimer County, sold land on the north side of the Mohawk River to his brother George Arnold (#207).[1888] John was listed in the 1800 census in Fairfield with a household of two males under age 10, one male age 26–45, four females under age 10, and one female age 26–45. Listed next to them were John's brother George (#207) and his father, Enoch.[1889]

In 1825 John was living in Fairfield with a household of three males and five females, four of the females unmarried between ages 16 and 45. He had a farm of 30 improved acres, thirteen cattle, two horses, twenty-five sheep, and five hogs.[1890]

Lucy died 1 January 1838, "age 66 years, 6 months and 21 days." John died 20 January 1844, "age 81 years, 9 months and 15 days."[1891] They are buried in Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, Herkimer County, New York.[1892]

John's will, dated 25 March [1840?], was proved 12 April 1847. He mentioned daughter Ursula M. Robinson. Daughters Lucy M.

[1885] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.
[1886] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.
[1887] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.
[1888] Herkimer County Deeds, 12:451.
[1889] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 574.
[1890] 1825 New York State Census, Herkimer County, Fairfield at *www.RootsWeb.com/!nyherkim/census/1825Fairfield.*
[1891] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.
[1892] Headstones from Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, N.Y., at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html.*

Arnold and Abby Eliza Arnold were to receive one-third of the land and half the house. Son James A. Arnold was to receive two-thirds of the land and half the house "where I now reside."[1893] The following children were notified regarding the reading of the will: Alfred Arnold of Milo, Yates County (New York); Henrietta Henderson of the same place; John H. Arnold of Newport, Herkimer County; Silas R. Arnold of Sault Ste. Marie, Michigan; Mary A. Wood of Herkimer County; Lucy M. Arnold; Sabra Shaw, wife of Henry Shaw of Fairfield, Herkimer County; Abby E. Reed, wife of Horace Reed of Manheim Herkimer County; Ursula M. Robinson, wife of Daniel Robinson of Kingston, Ulster County (New York); and Ann F. Reece, wife of Isaac Reece of Laporte, Indiana.[1894]

Children of John and Lucy (Hunt) Arnold:[1895]

i. **Alfred[6] Arnold**, born 2 September 1792.

ii. **Enoch Arnold** (twin), born 16 January 1794.

iii. **Mary Ann Arnold** (twin), born 17 January 1794.

iv. **Henrietta F. Arnold**, born 28 November 1795.

v. **John H. Arnold**, born 14 April 1797.

vi. **Lucy Maria Arnold**, born 16 February 1799.

vii. **Ann F. Arnold**, born 24 November 1800.

viii. **Sabra Arnold**, born 17 November 1802.

ix. **Abel Hunt Arnold**, born 17 September 1804.

x. **Abby Eliza Arnold**, born 10 September 1806.

xi. **Ursula Matilda Arnold**, born 9 August 1808.

xii. **Silas R. Arnold**, born 17 August 1810.

xiii. **James A. Arnold**, born 13 December 1813.

[1893] Herkimer County Probate, H:255.
[1894] Herkimer County Estate Papers, FHL microfilm #847496.
[1895] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.

206. **PATIENCE[5] ARNOLD** *(Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 5 May 1767, a daughter of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold.[1896]

She married **ISAAC DEXTER** before 1802, when her father called her Patience Dexter in his will.[1897] Isaac was born in Rhode Island about 1724 (as he was 76 in the 1850 census). It is not known if they were married in Rhode Island or in Herkimer County, New York.

Patience's brother John (#205) moved to Herkimer County in 1793 and her parents followed sometime after 2 October 1795, when they sold their homestead farm in Smithfield.[1898]

Isaac and Patience lived three miles above Little Falls on the Mohawk River.[1899] In 1810, Isaac was listed next to his brother-in-law, George Arnold, at Fairfield, Herkimer County, with a household of one male under age 10, one male age 26–45, one female under age 10, and one female age 26–45.[1900]

On 1 October 1811, Isaac Dexter of Fairfield purchased 285 acres of land at Cincinnatus (now Freetown), Cortland County, New York. He sold 235 acres of this land to his son William A. Dexter of Freetown 22 January 1830.[1901]

In 1820 Isaac headed a household at Freetown of one male age 10–16, one male age 45 or more, one female under age 10, one female age 16–26, and one female age 45 or more.[1902]

[1896] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.

[1897] The name Isaac is given by Greene in "Arnold Family," 109. Patience's father's will is at Herkimer County Wills, B:377.

[1898] Smithfield Deeds, 9:263.

[1899] Greene, "Arnold Family," 109.

[1900] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 209.

[1901] Cortland County Deeds, D:201, P:543.

[1902] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cortland County, Freetown, 505.

According to the family Bible, Patience died on 16 November 1823.[1903]

In the 1825 state census of Freetown, Isaac's household included 4 males, (two age 18–45, subject to militia duty), one under age 16, and one eligible to vote. Two females included one unmarried age 16–45 and one unmarried under age 16.[1904] The probate records of Patience's brother Enoch (#208), dated 17 July 1841, listed his siblings and children of his deceased siblings. Included were Patience's likely children William A. Dexter of Freetown and Sabra Young, wife of Reuben Young.[1905]

In 1850, Isaac Dexter, age 76, born in Rhode Island, was living in the household of William A. Dexter, age 43, at Freetown.[1906]

Presumed children of Isaac and Patience (Arnold) Dexter, as listed in the probate file described above:

i. **William A. Dexter**, born about 1807 (age 43 in 1850 census).

ii. **Sabra Dexter.**

[1903] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.

[1904] "Abstracts of 1825 New York State Census of Cortland County," *Tree Talks* 25 (1985): 3.

[1905] Herkimer County Probate, FHL microfilm #847496.

[1906] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cortland County, Freetown, 247.

207. **GEORGE[5] ARNOLD** (*Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 17 January 1770, a son of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold[1907]

He married **ELIZABETH GRIMES,** who was born in 1778, probably at Herkimer County, New York.[1908] They were probably married about 1799 since they had a son born about 1800. Perhaps she was a daughter of William Grimes who was at Herkimer, Herkimer County, in 1800.

After Elizabeth died in 1824, George may have married, second, **MARY (KNIGHT) EATON**, widow of Wyman Eaton. On 12 January 1827, Eleanor Eaton and George Arnold and Mary his wife, all of Fairfield, Herkimer County, sold two parcels of land in Fairfield that had been owned by "Wyman Eaton, deceased."[1909]

According to a notation in the family Bible of his brother, John B. Arnold (#205), George came to Fairfield with his parents and siblings in March 1793. On 20 February 1797, George purchased a parcel of land there from his brother John.[1910]

He was listed there in the 1800 census with a household of one male under age 10, one male age 26–45, and one female age 26–45.[1911]

In 1825 their household in Fairfield included three males and four females. George was farming on 30 improved acres and had thirteen cattle, two horses, thirty-one sheep, and eleven hogs.[1912]

[1907] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.

[1908] Headstone from Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, N.Y., at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html.*

[1909] Herkimer County Deeds, 19:426, 427.

[1910] Herkimer County Deeds, 12:451.

[1911] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 574.

[1912] 1825 New York State Census, Herkimer County, Fairfield, at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/census/1825Fairfield1.html.*

In 1850 George Arnold, age 80, born in Rhode Island, was living at Fairfield in the same household as Lauren Arnold, age 36, William W. Wood, age 28, and Olive C. Wood, age 30.

Elizabeth died in 1824 and George in 1856.[1913]

George Arnold of Fairfield wrote his will 2 July 1844. He died 23 May 1856, and his will was proved 1 September 1856. His will and probate papers mentioned the following children: Olive C. Wood, wife of William C. Wood of Newport, Herkimer County; Enoch Arnold of Union, Monroe County, New York; George Arnold of Rochester, Monroe County; Paul Arnold; Mary A. Brown, wife of Charles S. Brown of Hartford, Cortland County, New York; Emily Bosworth, wife of Josiah Bosworth of Chenango County, New York; Elizabeth Lucinda Hardendorf, wife of Abraham Hardendorf of Herkimer; William G. Arnold; and Lauren Briggs Arnold, who received the remainder of the homestead farm in Fairfield.[1914]

Children of George and Elizabeth (Grimes) Arnold, order not certain (all except Diana listed in will and probate records):

i. **Enoch[6] Arnold**, born about 1800.[1915]

ii. **Diana Arnold**, born 1801.[1916]

iii. **George Arnold**, born 1 August 1803.[1917]

[1913] Headstone from Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, N.Y., at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html.*

[1914] Herkimer County Probate, K:244.

[1915] U.S. Census, 1860, New York, Monroe County, Union, 579: Enoch Arnold, age 60, presumably the one male under age 10 in the 1800 census.

[1916] Headstone from Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, N.Y., at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html,* identified as their daughter.

[1917] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 172. The probate records say he lived in Rochester, N.Y. The Bible has a notation that he died at Rochester.

iv. **Paul Arnold.**

v. **Mary A. Arnold.**

vi. **William G. Arnold**, born in 1809.[1918]

vii. **Elizabeth Lucinda Arnold**, born about 1809.[1919]

viii. **Emily Arnold**, born about 1812.[1920]

ix. **Lauren Briggs Arnold**, born about 1814.[1921]

x. **Olive C. Arnold**, born about 1820.[1922]

[1918] Headstone from Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, N.Y., at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html.*

[1919] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Newport, 163: Elizabeth Hardendorf, age 41, with Abraham Hardendorf.

[1920] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Chenango County, Pharsalia, 138: "Amelius" Bosworth, age 38, with Josiah Bosworth.

[1921] U.S. Census, 1850, age 36, as noted above.

[1922] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 188: Olive C. Wood, age 30, with William W. Wood, age 29, in household of George Arnold, age 80.

208. **ENOCH[5] ARNOLD** *(Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* may have been born about 1771, presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a son of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold.[1923]

He was listed as a head of household at Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, in 1820 with one male age 26–44, one male age 45 or more, one female age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[1924]

On 26 May 1832, Enoch Arnold of Fairfield sold William Arnold (his brother, #211) of Fairfield land "lately owned by Daniel Fenner [#193, married to a cousin] which bordered lands of Enoch, John and George Arnold."[1925]

Enoch died at Fairfield 3 December 1838, having never married. His siblings were named as heirs in his probate file.[1926]

[1923] Enoch was listed in his father's will. "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171, shows that Enoch died 13 December, age 67 years. However, Herkimer County Probate, FHL microfilm #477496, which should be more reliable, shows he died 3 December 1838. If he was age 67 at his death, he would have been born about 1771.

[1924] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield.

[1925] Herkimer County Deeds, 28:463.

[1926] Herkimer County Probate, FHL microfilm #477496.

209. **PHEBE[5] ARNOLD** (*Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold[1927]

She married **JOHN WOOD** before 1802, when she was called Phebe Wood in her father's will. John may have been a son of another John Wood who died 8 March 1847, age 84 (born about 1763) and is buried in Eaton's Bush Cemetery. His wife Rachel, who is also buried there) died 13 July 1851, age 84 years 2 months (born about 1767.[1928]

Phebe had moved with her parents to Herkimer County, New York, about 1793. John and Phebe lived three miles above Little Falls, New York, on the Mohawk River.[1929]

Perhaps he was the John W. Wood listed at Fairfield, Herkimer County, near Enoch, John, and George Arnold, Phebe's father and brothers, in the 1800 census. His household included four younger males, one male age 26–44, two young females, and one female age 26–44.[1930]

John Wood of Fairfield purchased land in Fairfield 8 July 1806 with a deed witnessed by his brother-in-law George Arnold. On 4 November 1806 he purchased land "now in the possession of John Wood."[1931] On 29 April 1816, John Wood Jr. of Fairfield is mentioned in a deed. On 21 March 1818, he purchased 220 acres of land "except 60 acres conveyed to Daniel Fenner (#193) and Nathan Arnold (#190).[1932]

He may have been the "John Wood 2" listed in Fairfield in the 1825 state census next door to his brother-in-law, William Arnold,

---

[1927] Greene, "Arnold Family," 110.

[1928] Eaton's Bush Cemetery, Eatonville, N.Y., at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/cemeteries/eatoncem.html*.

[1929] Greene, "Arnold Family," 110.

[1930] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 574.

[1931] Herkimer County Deeds, 4:263, 264.

[1932] Herkimer County Deeds, 14:138, 11:532.

with a household of four males and four females, no males between ages 18 and 45, two males qualified to vote, one married female under age 45, one unmarried female between ages 16 and 45 and one unmarried female under age 16. The family had 88 improved acres of land, six cattle, seven horses, thirty sheep, and fourteen hogs. Their son, Arnold Wood, headed a separate household in the census.[1933]

Children of John and Phebe (Arnold) Wood:[1934]

i. **Arnold Wood.**

ii. **George Wood.**

Presumably others.

[1933] Fairfield, 1825 census at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/census/1825Fairfield1.html.*

[1934] Greene, "Arnold Family," 110.

210. **LYDIA[5] ARNOLD** (*Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, a daughter of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold[1935]

She married **WILLIAM D. GRAY**[1936] before 1802, when she was called Lydia Gray in her father's will.

Lydia moved with her parents to Herkimer County, New York, about 1793. William and Lydia lived at Little Falls on the Mohawk River.[1937]

William D. Gray was listed in 1800 at Fairfield, Herkimer County, heading a household of one male age 26–45, two females under age 10, and one female age 26–45. They lived near Enoch, John, and George Arnold, Lydia's father and siblings.[1938]

In the 1825 state census of Fairfield, William D. Gray headed a household of three males and five females, none of the males between the ages of 18 and 45, no married females under age 45, and four unmarried females between ages of 16 and 45. They were living on 1 acre of land with two cattle and two hogs, and they manufactured 30 yards of fulled cloth and 50 yards of linen.[1939]

William D. Gray of Little Falls witnessed the will of John B. Arnold , Lydia's brother (#205), on 25 March [1840?].

In 1840 William D. Gray headed a household in Little Falls of three males age 20–30, one male age 60–70, three females age 30–40, and one female age 60–70.[1940]

[1935] Greene, "Arnold Family," 109.
[1936] Greene, "Arnold Family," 109.
[1937] Greene, "Arnold Family," 109.
[1938] U.S. Census, 1800, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 574.
[1939] Fairfield 1825 census at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/census/1825Fairfield1.html*.
[1940] U.S. Census, 1840, New York, Herkimer County, Little Falls, 39.

William died before 28 April 1841, when his widow, Lydia, applied for administration of his estate. Isaac N. Gray, probably a son, was appointed as administrator.[1941]

Likely son of William D. and Lydia (Arnold) Gray:

i. **Isaac N. Gray** (administrator of William's estate).

Others not identified.

[1941] Herkimer County Letters of Administration, G:93.

211. **WILLIAM[5] ARNOLD** (*Enoch[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1]*) was born presumably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 27 February 1780, a son of Enoch and Mary (Briggs) Arnold[1942]

The name of his wife is not known.[1943]

William probably came to Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, in March 1793 with his parents and siblings, as noted in the family Bible of his brother John B. Arnold (#205).

In 1825 William was living in Fairfield with a household of two males (both qualified to vote) and two females. He had a large farm of 100 improved acres with twenty-two cattle, two horses, forty sheep, and nine hogs.[1944]

In 1830 William was a head of household at Fairfield with two males ages 40–49, one female age 15–19, and one female age 20–29.

On 26 May 1832, William Arnold of Fairfield purchased a parcel of land in Fairfield from Enoch Arnold (his brother, #208).[1945]

In 1840 the household included three males under age 5, one male age 50–59, one female age 5–9, one female age 10–14, and one female age 20–29.[1946] In 1850 William was listed as age 69 living at Fairfield with Roxey Arnold, age 34 (perhaps a daughter-in-law), and nine children ranging in age from 3 months to 16 years.[1947]

[1942] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.

[1943] Two deeds from 1818 suggest that William may have been married to Patience Arnold, from an unrelated Arnold family. The deeds are for the sale of land in Fairfield by Ana Arnold, widow, John Arnold, Ana Arnold, daughter of the widow, Patience Arnold, and William Arnold, all of Fairfield. Herkimer County Deeds, 12, 65, 101.

[1944] Fairfield 1825 New York State Census at *http://herkimer.nygenweb.net/census/1825Fairfield1.html.*

[1945] Herkimer County Deeds, 28:463.

[1946] U.S. Census, 1830 and 1840, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield.

[1947] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Herkimer County, Fairfield, 188.

William died in 1856.[1948]

Possible children of William Arnold:[1949]

i. **George[6] Arnold.**

ii. **Charill Arnold**, married William Once (Owens?).

[1948] "Arnold Bible Records," *TAG* 59 (1983): 171.

[1949] As listed in Jane S. Raynor, "Historical Events of the Early Settlers of Fairfield, White Creek and Vicinity," at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nyherkim/fairfield/raynor2.html*. However, this list may not be reliable. She also lists Lucinda or Elizabeth Arnold, wife of Abraham Hardendorf, but that person clearly was a daughter of William's brother George as indicated in George's will. She also listed _____ Arnold, "the professor." This is also probably an error, as Lauren Briggs Arnold, son of George, was a professor, according to a note in the Bible records.

212. **JOSEPH[5] ARNOLD** *(Comfort[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 11 February 1770, a son of Comfort Arnold and his first wife.[1950]

He married **ANNA BOWEN** probably at Adams, Massachusetts, 20 October 1791. Anna, a daughter of Hezekiah and Susanna (Edwards) Bowen, was born 30 October 1772.[1951] As noted later, Martin Bowen, a brother of Anna, moved to Cayuga County, New York, from Berkshire County, Massachusetts, with Joseph and Anna.

In 1800, Joseph headed a household at Cheshire, Massachusetts (just south of Adams) of three males under age 10, one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, two females under age 10, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–44. He was at Adams in 1810 heading a household of two boys and two girls.[1952]

The records of the Church of Christ in Adams (later known as the First Baptist Church of Christ in Cheshire) show that Joseph Arnold was received as a member by letter 6 April 1805. Joseph and Anna Arnold were members in 1807, and Joseph was listed as a deacon on 1 April 1809.[1953]

Joseph was living at Adams on 30 April 1808 when he purchased 150 acres of land in Brutus and Aurelius, Cayuga County, New York, for $1,500. On 28 September 1811, Joseph and Anna were living at Brutus when they sold 7 acres of land.[1954] They moved to the part of Brutus that became the town of Sennett. With them was Martin Bowen. Joseph settled a half-mile west, and Martin a mile

---

[1950] Date of birth calculated from age at death on tombstone is 13 April 1770. The February date is from Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

[1951] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection, for date of marriage and date of birth. The age at death on her tombstone verifies birth in 1772. Browne's Bowen file verifies her parentage and notes that she was named in her father's will.

[1952] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 135.

[1953] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

[1954] Cayuga County Deeds, J:514, O:47.

and a half northeast, of the village.[1955] In April 1811 Joseph was baptized as an adult at the Baptist Church of Brutus, later called the Baptist Church at Sennett. Joseph's sister Belinda and her husband, Silas Arnold (#197), were also members of the Baptist Church.[1956]

In 1820 Joseph's household in Brutus included himself, Anna, four boys, and four girls.[1957]

On 21 December 1827, Joseph was appointed guardian of 5-year-old Mary Brown Arnold, daughter of his deceased brother, Comfort Arnold Jr. (#214).[1958]

Anna Arnold, wife of Joseph, died 5 May 1829, age 57, and is buried in the Old Sennett Cemetery, in Sennett, New York.[1959]

Joseph was listed in the 1830 and 1840 censuses of Sennett, which had been formed from Brutus in 1827.

Joseph died 18 July 1845, age 75 years 3 months 5 days, and is buried in the Old Sennett Cemetery as well.[1960]

It was said that none of their children were living in 1879.[1961]

Likely children of Joseph and Anna (Bowen) Arnold:

i. **Benjamin[6] Arnold**, born Massachusetts about 1793.[1962]

[1955] Elliot G. Storke, *History of Cayuga County, 1789–1879* (Syracuse, N.Y., 1879), 342.

[1956] Records of the Baptist Church at Sennett at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/church/senbap.htm.*

[1957] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cayuga County, Brutus, 21. Next to them were Hezekiah Bowen and Benjamin Arnold.

[1958] Onondaga County, New York, Guardians, A:33, cited in letter of W. Herburt Wood of Elbridge, N.Y., to William B. Brown dated 28 April 1933, microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

[1959] Old Sennett Cemetery at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/cem.*

[1960] Old Sennett Cemetery at *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/cem.*

[1961] Storke, *History of Cayuga County,* 342.

ii. **Joseph P. Arnold**, listed near Joseph, Benjamin, and Horatio in the 1830 census.

iii. **Horatio Arnold**, listed near Joseph, Benjamin, and Joseph P. in the 1830 census.[1963]

iv. **Alanson Brown Arnold**, born Sennett, New York, 19 September 1812.[1964]

[1962] Listed near Joseph in the 1830 census, New York, Cayuga County, Sennett, 228. Listed in Sennett in 1850, 380B, age 56, born in Massachusetts; in 1870, 8, age 78, born Massachusetts. He and wife Susan (identified in the census records) deeded land to Comfort Arnold and John Haskins in 1818, Cayuga County Deeds, T:409, 410.

[1963] Perhaps he was the Horatio Arnold, born about 1803 in Mass., listed in 1850 at Mount Carmel, Wabash, Ill.

[1964] Gilbert Warren Chapin, *The Chapin Book,* (Hartford, Conn., 1924), 2:1731. The book says his name might have been Alanson Blake Arnold and that he died 3 August 1885 at Lake Geneva, Wisc. This is not in agreement with the statement above that all children were deceased by 1879.

213. **MARY[5] "POLLY" ARNOLD** *(Comfort[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, about 1777, a daughter of Comfort and Mary (Brown) Arnold.[1965]

As "Polly Arnold" she married **SETH COMSTOCK** at Adams, Massachusetts, 15 February 1798.[1966] Seth was born about 1773, figuring from his age at death. He was probably a son of Daniel and Patience (Jenckes) Comstock.[1967]

It is said that Seth moved from Smithfield to Providence, Rhode Island, with his father after his mother died. He, his brother William, and their father were early settlers in Ohio, after which Seth and his father returned to Providence.[1968]

Seth moved to Adams before he was married there in 1798. He was there in 1800 heading a household of one male age 16–25, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 16–25, and one female age 26–44.[1969] In 1810 his household included one male under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 26–44, two females under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1970]

On 7 April 1818, Seth and Mary Comstock deeded land in Adams to Daniel Smith and Ira Richardson.[1971]

They probably moved that summer to the part of Aurelius, Cayuga County, New York, that became Fleming in 1823. They were recorded there in the 1820, 1830, and 1840 censuses.[1972]

[1965] Named in father's will (Cayuga County Probate, C1:229). Birth year based on age given as 73 in the 1850 census.
[1966] Adams Vital Records, FHL microfilm #760652.
[1967] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 52.
[1968] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 52
[1969] U.S. Census, 1800, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 135.
[1970] U.S. Census, 1810, Massachusetts, Berkshire County, Adams, 136.
[1971] Comstock, *Descendants of Samuel Comstock,* 53.
[1972] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cayuga County, Aurelius, 45; 1830, New York, Cayuga County, Fleming, 210; 1840, Fleming, 161.

Mary's father had moved there by 1818; her stepmother, Mary (Brown) Arnold, died there 7 September 1818.

On 13 December 1822, Seth and Mary Arnold of Aurelius sold parcels of land in Brutus to her stepmother and father, Judith Arnold and Comfort Arnold.[1973]

Seth and P. Alanson are listed in an old account book from Fleming as purchasing bolts and screws, two pounds of nails, latches, and screws on 2 November 1843.[1974]

Seth died at Fleming 2 April 1848. He and four of their children are buried in the same lot at Fleming with Mary's parents.[1975]

Seth's probate record of April 1848 shows that Mary Comstock was executrix of the estate and names the following as heirs: Pamela Alexander, wife of John Alexander of Howard, Steuben County, New York; Sarah Clark, wife of Alanson Clark of Fleming; George Clark of Seneca Hills, Seneca County; Calom Wheaton and David Wheaton of Lisle, Broome County, New York; and Lyman Comstock of Fleming. The inventory was valued at $183 and was primarily cash on hand of $120 and notes receivable.[1976]

Mary was listed in 1850 as age 73, born in Massachusetts, living at Fleming with the family of her daughter Sarah and son-in-law Alanson M. Clark, age 30.[1977] She has not been found in the 1860 census. Perhaps she moved away with one of her children, as she is not buried with her husband.

[1973] Cayuga County Deeds, Z:106, 107.

[1974] *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/ledger/flem1843.html.*

[1975] Arnold-Comstock Cemetery, Fleming, N.Y., *www.RootsWeb.com/~nycayuga/cem/cem51.htm.*

[1976] Cayuga County Probate, Box 22.

[1977] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cayuga County, Fleming, 208.

Children of Seth and Mary "Polly" (Arnold) Comstock:[1978]

i. **Pamela Comstock**, born Massachusetts about 1799.[1979]

ii. **Chloe Comstock**, born about 1804; died 20 May 1840, age 36 years.

iii. **Daniel Comstock**, born 24 November 1806.

iv. **Mary A. Comstock**, born 23 May 1809 (1808 in *Comstock Genealogy*).

v. **Sarah Comstock**, born about 1819 (age 31 in 1850 census).[1980]

[1978] Chloe, Daniel, and Mary are identified as children in the cemetery records. They and Pamela and Sarah are listed as children by Comstock in *Comstock Family in America,* 133. Also in the cemetery records is Eliza Comstock, born in 1817, not identified as a daughter. Perhaps she was the wife of Daniel.

[1979] Comstock, in *Comstock Family,* says she married John H. Alexander and moved to Howard, Steuben County, N.Y. She is found there in the 1860 census, page 95, age 61.

[1980] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, Cayuga County, Fleming, 208: Sarah C. Clark, age 31, wife of Alanson Clark.

214. **COMFORT[5] ARNOLD** *(Comfort[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Smithfield, Rhode Island, about 1787, a son of Comfort and Mary (Brown) Arnold.[1981]

Comfort married first **SYBIL BURT** presumably at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, by 1807.[1982]

He married second **CHLOE** _____ before 1822.[1983]

Comfort's first marriage was not successful. In the *Pittsfield Sun* of 3 July 1807, he advertised that Sybil "has left his bed and board and refuses to cohabitate with him and he declines to be responsible for her." She wrote a reply on 31 July 1807, published 8 August 1807, stating that Comfort could not support her and conduct himself as a man and husband, and was incapable of providing for the support and maintenance of a family. She claimed that Comfort's father had turned her out of doors.[1984]

Presumably Comfort moved with his parents to Cayuga County, New York, by 1814.

In his father's will, written there at the town of Fleming, 17 November 1825, Comfort inherited one-third of his father's farm and half of the buildings "on the east side of the road." He and his family were living with his parents at the time.

Comfort died at Fleming before 31 December 1827, when Chloe married, second, William D. Crapo. This marriage was noted in a guardianship record of that date, in which Comfort's brother Joseph Arnold of Sennett, Cayuga County, was named guardian of Comfort's daughter, Mary Brown Arnold, and William D.

[1981] Named in father's will (Cayuga County Probate, C1:229). Birth year estimated from marriage year of 1807. He named his daughter Mary Brown Arnold, and his father married Mary Brown in 1786.

[1982] Microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

[1983] Named as his wife in his father's will of 1825. Daughter born 5 July 1822.

[1984] Newspaper clipping cited in letter from W. Hubert Wood of Auburn, N.Y., of 8 October 1946 at microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

Crapo was listed as her stepfather. The record states that she was 5 years old "the 5th of July last."[1985]

Child of Comfort and Chloe (_____) Arnold:

i. **Mary Brown Arnold,** born 5 July 1822.[1986]

[1985] Onondaga County, New York, Guardians, A:33, cited in letter of W. Herburt Wood of Elbridge, N.Y., to William B. Brown dated 28 April 1933, at microfilm #4, Browne Collection.

[1986] Named in Comfort's father's will and the guardianship records, Onondaga County, New York, Guardians, A:33.

215. **AMARILLA[5] ARNOLD** *(Comfort[4], John[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born probably at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, perhaps about 1789, a daughter of Comfort and Mary (Brown) Arnold.[1987]

She married **JOHN HASKINS** perhaps about 1815. She was called Amarilla Haskins in her father's will[1988]

On 14 March 1818, Benjamin Arnold (probably a son of Joseph Arnold, #212) of Brutus and Susan, his wife, sold adjoining property in Brutus to John Haskins of Brutus and Comfort Arnold of Aurelius.[1989] John sold property in Brutus "in his actual possession now being," to Comfort Arnold of Aurelius on 12 October 1819.[1990]

In his will, dated 17 November 1825, Comfort Arnold mentioned his daughter, Amarilla Haskins, and left her property in Brutus "now in the possession of John Haskins." He also left $50 to Polly M. Haskins, daughter of Amarilla, when she reached the age of 18 years.[1991]

In 1820 John Haskins headed a household in Brutus of one male under age 10, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[1992] His household at Brutus in 1830 included one male under age 5, two males age 5–9, one male age 30–39, one female age 10–15, one female age 40–49, and one female age 70–79.[1993]

Child of John and Amarilla (Arnold) Haskins:

i. **Polly M. Haskins,** named as a daughter of Amarilla in grandfather's 1825 will.

[1987] Named in father's will (Cayuga County Probate, C1:229). Her brother Comfort Jr. was born about 1787, and she was age 40–49 in 1830.
[1988] Cayuga County Probate, C1:229.
[1989] Cayuga County Deeds, T:409, 410.
[1990] Cayuga County Deeds, V:493.
[1991] Cayuga County Wills, C1:229.
[1992] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, Cayuga County, Brutus, 23.
[1993] U.S. Census, 1830, New York, Cayuga County, Brutus, 189.

216. **DAVID[5] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[4], Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 8 March 1745, a son of Jeremiah and Lydia (Arnold) Arnold.[1994]

He married **ANNE HOLROYD** at Providence, Rhode Island, 26 November 1769.[1995] She was born at Providence 9 October 1751, a daughter of John and Amey (Potter) Holroyd.[1996] In his will, dated 14 April 1753, John Holroyd of Providence, cordwainer (shoemaker), named his wife Amey and his daughter, Anne Holroyd, under age 21.[1997]

David Arnold served in the American Revolution from Rhode Island and in the U.S. Navy. In October 1775, he sailed on the sloop *Providence* bound for Philadelphia as a lieutenant. In a fleet of seven or eight vessels, they sailed for New Providence in the Caribbean and took that island with a large quantity of military stores in February or March 1776. They were in action against a British fleet off Long Island. In July 1776 they took a British brig with sixteen guns and brought it to Providence. In total, he served as lieutenant in the navy for 12 months and 18 days. He also served in the militia as an orderly sergeant for 2 months and 18 days, in Col. Daniel Hitchcock's Regiment.[1998]

David's household in Providence in 1774 included one male age 16 or more, one male under age 16, one female age 16 or more, and two females under age 16.[1999] In the 1777 military census, he was listed in Providence as age 16–60 and able to serve.[2000] In 1782 his household in Providence included one male under age 16,

---

[1994] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[1995] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8. She was called Anne "Holdright" in the marriage record.
[1996] *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births and Deaths, 228. Called daughter of John in her marriage record.
[1997] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 4 (1981): 157.
[1998] Revolutionary War pension file #W23465.
[1999] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 38.
[2000] *Rhode Island 1777 Military Census,* 70.

three females under age 16, one female age 16–21, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[2001]

David applied for a pension for his Revolutionary War service on 8 October 1832 from Providence County, Rhode Island, at the age of 88 years. His widow applied 19 July 1836, and four of their six children applied on 7 June 1839 for the balance due to their mother on her death.[2002]

David died at Providence 25 October 1833.[2003] His will, written 22 October 1833, was proved 21 November 1833. He mentioned his wife Anne Arnold but did not list his children.[2004]

Anne died 30 January 1837.[2005]

Children of David and Anne (Holroyd) Arnold:[2006]

i. **William[6] Arnold**, born 31 August 1770.

ii. **Lydia Arnold**, born 1772; died 1776, by drowning.

iii. **Nancy Arnold**, born January 1774.

iv. **Alice Arnold**, born December 1776.

v. **Turpin Holroyd Arnold**, born 21 February 1778.

vi. **Charles Arnold**, born 13 September 1781.

vii. **Sally Arnold**, likely daughter, born about 1781; "daughter of David" ; died Providence 1795 in her 14th year.[2007]

[2001] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census*, 5.
[2002] Revolutionary War pension file #W23465.
[2003] Revolutionary War pension file #W23465.
[2004] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 6 (1983): 120.
[2005] Revolutionary War pension file #W23465.
[2006] Greene, "Arnold Family," 204. Most of the children are also listed on 1971 DAR application of Daphne May Brownell of DeLand, Fla., National #507465.

viii. **Eunice Arnold**, born 21 September 1783.

ix. **Lydia T. Arnold**, born 18 October 1786.

x. **John Arnold**, born 22 November 1789.

xi. **Amy Arnold,** born 1 August 1792.

[2007] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 15: United State Chronicle Deaths, 472.

217. **ALICE[5] "ALSEY" ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[4], Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, 4 April 1747, a daughter of Jeremiah and Lydia (Arnold) Arnold.[2008]

She married **AARON PECK** at Providence, Rhode Island, 18 June 1767.[2009] He was born 20 6th month [August] 1743, a son of Thomas and Mary (Kinsley) Peck.[2010]

Aaron and Alice's children were recorded at Providence, but the family evidently moved to North Kingston, Rhode Island, for a period of time. Their daughter Lydia died and was buried there in 1771. Aaron was listed there for the 1774 census with a household of one male age 16 or more, two males under age 16, one female above age 16, and one female under age 16.[2011] Aaron was also at North Kingston in 1782, when his household included two males under age 16, two females under age 16, one male age 22–49, and one female age 22–49.[2012]

Alice died before 29 October 1780, when Aaron married, second, Amey Spencer of North Kingston.[2013] Aaron and Amey had six children from 1784 through 1791.[2014] Amey Peck, wife of Aaron, died at Providence 11 May 1814, a member of the Society of Friends.[2015] Aaron evidently married, third, Rachel W. _____, as she was mentioned in his 1820 will.

Aaron died at Providence 17 May 1822, in his 79th year.[2016] He was of Providence when he wrote his will 17 April 1820. It was proved 17 June 1822. He mentioned his wife, Rachel W. Peck; his son Aaron; daughters Amey Knowles and Nancy Davis, wife of

---

[2008] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 3: Smithfield Births and Deaths, 89.
[2009] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 8.
[2010] *Swansea Vital Records,* 36.
[2011] *Census of Rhode Island 1774,* 81.
[2012] Holbrook, *Rhode Island 1782 Census,* 92.
[2013] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Marriages, 146.
[2014] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 238.
[2015] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 171.
[2016] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 14: Providence Gazette Deaths, 172.

James Davis; and three grandchildren, William E. Peck, Josephene Peck, and Ann Peck.[2017]

Children of Aaron and Alice (Arnold) Peck, recorded at Providence:[2018]

i. **David Peck**, born 27 September 1767.

ii. **Lydia Peck**, born 29 October 1769; died 13 September 1771; buried North Kingston.[2019]

iii. **Amey Peck**, born 6 August 1772.

iv. **Nancy Peck**, born 12 April 1775.

v. **Condace Peck**, born 14 December 1777.

vi. **Aaron Peck**, born 5 June 1779.

[2017] "Providence Wills," *RIGR* 5 (1982): 211.

[2018] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Providence Births, 238.

[2019] Beaman, *Washington County, Rhode Island, Births from Gravestones,* 409.

218. **ICHABOD[5] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[4], Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* is said to have been born in April 1776, a son of Jeremiah and Elizabeth (_____) (_____) Arnold.[2020]

Ichabod married first **DORCAS SARLE** about 1797 (as their first child was born in 1798). She was a daughter of Joseph Sarle of Cranston, Rhode Island.[2021] Joseph Sarle married Robe Budlong at Cranston 30 December 1779.[2022] If she and not an earlier wife was the mother of Dorcas, Dorcas may have been born about 1780.

Ichabod Arnold of Ogdensburg, New York, married second the widow **MARY (_____) HURD** of Ontario (presumably Canada) at Ogdensburg 27 October 1831.[2023]

Ichabod purchased 10 acres of land with a dwelling house and a cooper's shop in Cranston, Rhode Island, for $350 on 5 December 1798. His father had been buried in Cranston in 1796. He and Dorcas sold their Cranston property for $375 on 24 January 1800.[2024] He and his brother Jeremiah were listed in the census at Cranston in 1800. Ichabod's household included one male under age 10, one male age 26–44, two females under age 10, two females age 16–25, and one female age 45 or more.[2025]

Ichabod moved to Ogdensburg in the town of Oswegatchie, St. Lawrence County, New York, about 1803.[2026] (Ogdensburg is on the St. Lawrence River. The town of DeCalb was formed from

---

[2020] James Arnold Collection, FHL microfilm #1839088.

[2021] When he wrote his will 26 March 1818, Joseph Sarle of Cranston mentioned his daughter, Dorcas Arnold, wife of Ichabod Arnold. "Abstracts of Cranston Wills," *RIGR* 10 (1987): 51.

[2022] Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island,* 2: Cranston Marriages, 22.

[2023] Pre-1850 Vital Records, *www.RootsWeb.com/~nystlawr/1850_VR_VITALS.htm,* citing the 3 November 1831 issue of the *St. Lawrence Republican and General Advertiser.*

[2024] Cranston Deeds, 6:5, 20.

[2025] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cranston, 330.

[2026] James Arnold Collection, FHL microfilm #1839088. He is listed as one of the first settlers of the village of Edenton in J. H. French, *Gazetteer of the State of New York* (Syracuse, N.Y., 1860), 576.

Oswegatchie in 1806 and is just a little south on the Oswegatchie River.) Ichabod was listed in DeCalb for the 1810 census with a household of two males under age 10, one male age 10–15, one male age 26–44, one female under age 10, one female age 10–15, and one female age 26–44.[2027] He was listed in Oswegatchie in 1820 with a large household.[2028] In 1830 his household included one male age 15–20, two males age 20–30, one male age 40–50, one female under age 5, one female age 5–10, and two females age 20–30.[2029]

Ichabod's brother-in-law George Knight, husband of Dorcas's sister Rhobe, also moved to Ogdensburg and bought land to clear and farm. Letters written by Dorcas and Rhobe to their family back in Rhode Island between 1807 and 1826 reveal considerable information about them.[2030] The letters indicate that both families were poor farmers. George Knight also worked as a cooper, while Ichabod Arnold operated a small-scale lumbering operation. Ichabod was frequently quite ill and "bore up by dosing himself with opium." Rhobe wrote that on 28 February 1813 (during the War of 1812), "the British come a crost and take our village and Did a Good Deil of Dammage and take about 63 prisners." Ichabod was one of the prisoners, but he was paroled.

In 1814 the area was swept by a Methodist-fueled revival. In a letter dated 26 January 1814, Dorcas thanked her father "for learning me to read So that I Can read the scriptures." Ichabod became a trustee in the Ogdensburg Methodist Church when it was incorporated 22 February 1825.[2031]

Dorcas's last letter was dated 9 December 1826.

[2027] U.S. Census, 1810, New York, St. Lawrence County, DeCalb, 354.
[2028] U.S. Census, 1820, New York, St, Lawrence County, Oswegatchie, 164.
[2029] U.S. Census, 1830, New York, St, Lawrence County, Oswegatchie, 237.
[2030] Sarle Family Papers at the William L. Clements Library, University of Michigan, summarized at *www.clements.umich.edu/Webguides/S/SmSarle.html.*
[2031] "Rededicate M.E. Church December 16," *The Ogdensburg Advance,* 6 December 1923, at Northern New York Library Network, Historical Newspapers website, *http://news.nnyln.net/index.html.*

Ichabod is said to have died in 1870 in Missouri.[2032]

Children of Ichabod and Dorcas (Sarle) Arnold:[2033]

i. **Jeremiah[6] Arnold**, born 27 April 1798.[2034]

ii. **Anna Arnold**, born about September 1799.

iii. **Joseph Arnold**, born Cranston 7 March 1801.

iv. **George Arnold**, born Rhode Island about 1803.[2035]

v. **Thomas Arnold**, born St. Lawrence County, New York, about 1806.

vi. **Rhoda Arnold**, born about 1808.

vii. **Benjamin Arnold**, born about 1810.

viii. **Elisha J. Arnold**, born about 1812. Perhaps he was the Joseph Arnold born in 1812 mentioned in the letters.

ix. **Nancy Arnold**, born 1817.

[2032] James Arnold Collection.

[2033] The first eight children are from *Boston Evening Transcript*, 18 December 1935 #1278, with no indication of the original source. The letters mention daughter Anna Arnold, who married Joseph Cole as the eldest. They also mention Joseph Arnold born in 1812. Perhaps the first Joseph died and the middle initial of Elisha J. Arnold stood for Joseph. Also mentioned was Nancy Arnold, born in 1817.

[2034] James Arnold Collection.

[2035] U.S. Census, 1850, New York, St. Lawrence County, Oswegatchie, 150: George Arnold, age 47, born in R.I.

219. **JEREMIAH[5] ARNOLD** *(Jeremiah[4], Jeremiah[3], Eleazer[2], Thomas[1])* was born perhaps about 1778, a son of Jeremiah and Elizabeth (_____) (_____) Arnold.[2036]

He is said to have married _____ **FENNER.**[2037]

He was probably the Jeremiah Arnold living at Cranston, Rhode Island, in 1800, where his brother Ichabod (#218) also lived. His household included one male under age 10, one male age 16–25, and one female age 16–25.[2038] His father, also named Jeremiah, had died there four years earlier.

Jeremiah is said to have lived at India Point in Providence.[2039] India Point is in the southeastern part of the city where the Seekonk River enters Providence Harbor. It was an early center of shipping. Jeremiah was listed at South Providence in the 1810 census with a household of one male under age 10, one male age 10–16, four males ages 26–45, one female under age 10, and one female age 26–45.[2040]

It is said he moved "west," where he had a large family.[2041] No further record has been found.

Child of Jeremiah and _____ (Fenner) Arnold:[2042]

i. **Fenner[6] Arnold.**

[2036] James Arnold Collection. Estimated year of birth is two years after that of his brother Ichabod.

[2037] James Arnold Collection.

[2038] U.S. Census, 1800, Rhode Island, Providence County, Cranston, 330.

[2039] James Arnold Collection; Greene, "Arnold Family," 113.

[2040] U.S. Census, 1810, Rhode Island, Providence County, South Providence, 276.

[2041] James Arnold Collection; Greene, "Arnold Family," 113.

[2042] Greene, "Arnold Family," 113.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Key to Short References

Full references are given in the bibliography for most key sources cited. The following brief forms are used for sources cited frequently.

NYGBR — *The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*

Register — *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*

RIGR — *Rhode Island Genealogical Register*

TAG — *The American Genealogist*

Anna Clough Sherman manuscript

Sherman, Anna Clough. Untitled manuscript written by great-granddaughter of Jonathan and Acsah Brown. Ca. 1900. Present location unknown.

Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island

Austin, John Osborne. *The Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island.* Albany, N.Y.: J. Munsell's Sons, 1887; repr. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1969.

Ballou, *Ballous in America*

Ballou, Adin. *An Elaborate History and Genealogy of the Ballous in America.* Providence, 1888.

Bartlett, *Records of Rhode Island*

Bartlett, John Russell. *Records of the Colony of Rhode Island,* 10 vols. Providence, 1856–1865.

Census of Rhode Island 1774

Census of the Inhabitants of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations 1774. Providence, 1858.

Greene, "Arnold Family"

Greene, Welcome Arnold. "Notes on Genealogy of the Arnold Family." Typescript at Knight Memorial Library, Providence, R.I. 1914; based on manuscript compiled starting in the 1840s.

Pitman, "Some Arnolds of Smithfield"
Pitman, H. Minot. "Some Arnolds of Smithfield, R.I." *Rhode Island History* 13 (1954). Reprinted in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals,* Vol. 1. Baltimore, 1983.

Providence Town Records
Early Records of the Town of Providence, 21 vols. Providence, 1892–1915.

Rhode Island 1777 Military Census
Chamberlain, Mildred Mosher. *The Rhode Island 1777 Military Census.* Baltimore, 1985.

Whitman, *Westcott Genealogy*
Whitman, Roscoe L. *History and Genealogy of . . . Stukely Westcott.* N.p., 1932.

Most vital records are found in the bibliography under Vital Records. Exceptions are the following:

Rehoboth Vital Record Arnold, James N. *Vital Record of Rehoboth 1642–1896.* Providence, 1897.

Swansea Vital Records Rounds, H. L. Peter. *Vital Records of Swansea, Massachusetts to 1850.* Boston, 1992.

References

"Abstracts of Glocester Wills." *RIGR* 2 (1986).

Aldrich, Alvin James. *The George Aldrich Genealogy.* 6 vols. Decorah, Iowa, 1971–1988.

Aldridge, Bertha Bortle Beal. *Laphams in America.* Victor, N.Y., 1953.

Angell, Avery F. *Genealogy of the Descendants of Thomas Angell.* Providence, 1872.

Anthony, Bertha Williams. *Roger Williams of Providence R.I.* 2 vols. Cranston, R.I., 1949.

Arnold, Benjamin. Diaries. Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 11.

Arnold, Elisha Stephen. *The Arnold Memorial.* Rutland, Vt., 1935.

[Arnold, James.] James Arnold Collection. Knight Memorial Library, Providence. FHL microfilm #1839088.

Arnold, James N. *Vital Record of Rehoboth, 1642–1896.* Providence, 1897.

Arnold, James N. *Vital Record of Rhode Island, 1636–1850.* 9 vols. Providence, R.I., 1891–1897.

Arnold, Jonathan. File at Rhode Island Historical Society, Miscellaneous Manuscripts, Mss 9001-A, Box 13.

Arnold, Richard D. *Arnold Families of Saratoga County, New York.* Schenectady, N.Y., 1992.

"Arnold Bible Records." *The American Genealogist* 59 (1983).

Austin, John O. "John Bartlett of Rehoboth." *Newport Historical Magazine* 6 (1888): 30 Reprinted in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals,* 2 vols. Baltimore, 1983.

Austin, John Osborne. *The Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island.* Albany, N.Y., 1887.

Ballou, Adin. *An Elaborate History and Genealogy of the Ballous in America.* Providence, 1888.

Barber, Gertrude A. *Columbia County, New York, Abstracts of Wills, 1786–1851.* 8 vols. Typescript at Family History Library, Salt Lake City.

Bartlett, John Russell. *Records of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations in New England.* 10 vols. Providence, 1856–1865.

Bartlett, Thomas Edward. *The Bartletts: Ancestral, Genealogical, Biographical, Historical. Comprising an Account of the American Progenitors of the Bartlett Family, with Special Reference to the Descendants of John Bartlett, of Weymouth and Cumberland.* New Haven, Conn., 1892.

Bassett, William. *History of the Town of Richmond, Cheshire County, New Hampshire from Its First Settlement, to 1882.* Boston, 1884.

Bayles, Richard M. "History of the Arnold Family." Unpublished manuscript. 1891. Arnold file, Rhode Island Historical Society. FHL microfilm #22323, item 9.

Bayles, Richard M. *History of Providence County.* 2 vols. New York, 1891.

Beaman, Alden Gamaliel. *Washington County, Rhode Island Births and Marriages from Gravestone Inscriptions, 1688–1850.* Vital Record of Rhode Island, New Series, Vol. 3. Princeton, Mass., 1977.

Benson, Richard H. *The Read Family of Salem, Massachusetts.* Boston, 2005.

Bolton, Ethel Stanwood. *American Samplers.* Boston, 1921.

Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages and Deaths 1630–1699. Ninth Report of the Record Commissioners. Boston, 1908.

Bourne, Russell. *The Red King's Rebellion.* New York, 1990.

Bowen, Richard LeBaron. *Early Rehoboth.* 4 vols. Concord, N.H., 1945–1950.

Branch, Rev. E. E. *History of Ionia County.* 2 vols. Indianapolis, 1916.

Brayton, Clifford Ross, Jr. *Brayton Family History.* Rochester, N.Y., 1978.

Browne, William Bradford. "Chad Brown and His Descendants." *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* 80 (1926).

Brown, William Bradford. *Genealogy of the Jenks Family of America.* Concord, N.H., 1952.

Buck, Clifford M. *Dutchess County Tax Lists, 1718–1787.* Rhinebeck, N.Y., 1990.

Buck, Clifford, and William McDermott. *Eighteenth Century Documents of the Nine Partners Patent.* Collections of the Dutchess County Historical Society, Vol. X. Baltimore, 1979.

Chamberlain, Mildred Mosher. *The Rhode Island 1777 Military Census.* Baltimore, 1985.

Chapin, Howard M. *Rhode Island in the Colonial Wars,* 2 vols. Providence, 1918, 1920; repr. in one vol., Baltimore, 1994.

Chapin, Howard M. *Rhode Island Privateers in King George's War, 1739–1748.* Providence, 1926.

Chapin, William Waterman. "Genealogy of the Descendants of Dr. Jonathan Arnold of Providence, R.I., and St. Johnsbury, Vt." Unpublished typescript. 1910. Rhode Island Historical Society. FHL microfilm #22323, Item 8.

Chapin, William Waterman. "Genealogy of the Family of Jonathan Arnold of Smithfield, R.I." Unpublished typescript. 1910. Rhode Island Historical Society. FHL microfilm # 22323, Item 7.

Churchill, John C., and others. *Landmarks of Oswego County, New York.* Syracuse, N.Y., 1895.

Clark, Etta Mary Arnold. "Stukely Arnold of Smithfield, R.I. and Adams, Mass.; His Children Who Were Pioneers of New York State, with Many of Their Descendants." *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record* 63 (1932).

Clarke, Louise Brownell. *The Greenes of Rhode Island.* New York, 1903.

Coleman, Lyman. *Genealogy of the Lyman Family.* Albany, N.Y., 1872.

Collin, John Francis. *History of Hillsdale, Columbia County, New York.* Philmont, N.Y., 1883.

Commemorative Biographical Record of Tolland and Windham Counties, Connecticut. Chicago, 1903.

Comstock, C. B. *Some Descendants of Samuel Comstock of Providence R.I., Who Died about 1660.* New York, 1905.

Comstock, John A. *History and Genealogy of the Comstock Family in America.* Los Angeles, 1949.

Cowell, Benjamin. *Spirit of '76 in Rhode Island.* Boston, 1850.

Coyle, Franklin Stuart. *Welcome Arnold (1745–1798), Providence Merchant: The Founding of an Enterprise.* Ann Arbor, Mich., 1980.

"Cumberland Wills." *Rhode Island Genealogical Register* 3 (1980).

Cutter, William Richard. *Genealogical and Family History of Western New York.* New York, 1912.

Cutter, William Richard. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs Relating to the Families of the State of Massachusetts.* 4 vols. New York, 1910.

DAR Patriot Index, Centennial Edition. 3 vols. Washington, D.C., 1990.

Dictionary of American Biography. New York, 1928–1958.

Doherty, Frank J. *Settlers of the Beekman Patent.* 8 vols. to date. Pleasant Valley, N.Y., 1990–.

Dunkle, Robert J., and Ann S. Lainhart. *Deaths in Boston 1700–1799.* 2 vols. Boston, 1999.

Dunkle, Robert J., and Ann S. Lainhart. *Inscriptions and Records of the Old Cemeteries of Boston.* Boston, 2000.

The Early Records of the Town of Providence. 21 vols. Providence, 1892–1915.

Eck, Aimee Huston. *John Brown, Gentleman of Wannamoisett.* Minneapolis, 1951.

Eddy, Ruth. *The Eddy Family in America.* Boston, 1930.

Eddy, Ruth Story Devereux. *Robert Cowell of Providence and His Descendants.* Providence, 1936.

Fairbanks, Edward T. *The Town of St Johnsbury, Vt.* St. Johnsbury, Vt., 1914.

Fiske, Jane Fletcher. *Thomas Cook of Rhode Island.* 2 vols. Boxford, Mass., 1987.

French, J. H. *Gazetteer of the State of New York.* Syracuse, N.Y., 1860.

Greene, Welcome Arnold. "Notes on Genealogy of the Arnold Family." Unpublished typescript based on a manuscript compiled starting in the 1840s. 1914. Knight Memorial Library, Providence.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: New Hampshire. Washington, D.C., 1907.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Connecticut. Washington, D.C., 1908.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Maine. Washington, D.C., 1908; repr. Baltimore, 1966.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Massachusetts. Washington, D.C., 1908; repr. Baltimore, 1973.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: New York. Washington, D.C., 1908; repr. Baltimore, 1976.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Rhode Island. Washington, D.C., 1908.

Heads of Families at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790: Vermont. Washington, D.C., 1907.

History of Addison County, Vermont. Syracuse, N.Y., 1886.

History of Cattaragus County, N.Y. Philadelphia, 1879.

History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York. Philadelphia, 1880.

History of Ontario County, New York. 2 vols. Syracuse, N.Y., 1893.

History of Washington County, Ohio. Cleveland, 1881.

Holbrook, Jay Mack. *Rhode Island 1782 Census.* Oxford, Mass., 1979.

Holden, Frederic A. *Genealogy of the Descendants of Banfield Capron.* Boston, 1859.

Hotten John Camden. *The Original Lists of Persons of Quality Who Went from Great Britain to the American Plantations, 1600–1700.* London, 1874.

Hurlbut, Henry H. *The Hurlbut Genealogy.* Albany, N.Y., 1888.

Hurst, Judith A. *Sayles Country.* Baltimore, 1986.

Hurst, Judith A. *Sayles Country II.* Baltimore, 1990.

Jillson, David. *Genealogy of the Gillson and Jillson Family.* Central Falls, R.I., 1876.

"Johnston Wills." *Rhode Island Genealogical Register* 5 (1982).

Joslyn, Roger D. "The Benchley-Bensley Family" *Register* 142 (1988).

Livsey, Karen E. *Western New York Land Transactions, 1804–1825.* Baltimore, 1991.

MacGunnigle, Bruce C. *Rhode Island Freemen, 1747–1755.* Baltimore, 1977.

Mackenzie, George Norbury. *Colonial Families of the United States.* 7 vols. New York, 1907.

Mann, George Sumner. *Mann Memorial.* Boston, 1884.

Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War: A Compilation from the Archives. 17 vols. Boston, 1896–1908.

Mathew, Linda L. *Gleanings from Rhode Island Town Records: Providence Town Council Records, 1770–1788.* No place, 2006.

McCullough, David. *John Adams.* New York, 2001.

Metcalf, John G. *Annals of the Town of Mendon, from 1659 to 1880.* Providence, 1880.

Mowry, William A. *A Family History: Richard Mowry of Uxbridge, Mass.* Providence, 1878.

Newman, S. C. *Dexter Genealogy.* Providence, 1859.

"One Line of the Arnold Family." *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* 33 (1879).

Old Providence: A Collection of Facts and Traditions Relating to Various Buildings and Sites of Historic Interest in Providence. Providence, 1918.

Parkhurst, Peter G. *George Parkhurst Increasings.* Los Altos Hills, Calif., 1995.

Pennsylvania Archives. 2nd Series. Vol. 7. Philadelphia, 1854.

Perkins, Owen A. *Buffum Family. Vol. II.* Smithtown, N.Y., 1983.

Perry, Elizabeth A. *A Brief History of Glocester.* Providence, 1886.

Phetteplace, Edward G. *Genealogies of the Phetteplace Family.* Norwich, N.Y., 1983.

Pitman, H. Minot. "Some Arnolds of Smithfield, R.I." *Rhode Island History* 13 (1954). Reprinted in *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families from Rhode Island Periodicals,* Vol. 1. Baltimore, 1983.

The Proprietors' Records of the Town of Mendon, Massachusetts. Boston, 1899.

Pruitt, Bettye Hobbs. *The Massachusetts Tax Valuation List of 1771.* Boston, 1978; repr. Camden, Maine, 1998.

Pulsifer, David. *Records of the County of Middlesex, County Court Records 1649–1663.* 1851 manuscript transcription. FHL microfilm #892250.

Rappleye, Charles. *Sons of Providence: The Brown Brothers, the Slave Trade and the American Revolution.* New York, 2006.

Ray, Judith Jencks. *Founders and Patriots of the Town of Cumberland, Rhode Island.* Baltimore, 1990.

Raymond, Samuel Edward. *Raymond Genealogy, Vol. II.* Seattle, 1972.

Records of the Court of Assistants of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay. 3 vols. Boston, 1901–1928.

Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island. 3 vols. Chicago, 1908.

Reynolds, Cutler. *Hudson-Mohawk Genealogical and Family Memoirs.* 4 vols. New York, 1911.

Rhode Island Colonial Records. See Bartlett, John Russell.

Rhode Island General Assembly. *Census of the Inhabitants of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, 1774.* Arr. by John R. Bartlett. Providence, 1858; repr. Baltimore, 1969.

Rhode Island Historical Cemetery Database Index. Online database, *www.NewEnglandAncestors.org*.

Richardson, E. *History of Woonsocket.* Woonsocket, R.I., 1876.

Roosevelt, Franklin D. *Records of Crum Elbow Precinct.* Collections of the Dutchess County Historical Society, Vol. 7. No place, 1940.

Root, James Pierce. *Steere Genealogy.* Cambridge, Mass., 1890.

Rounds, H. L. Peter. *Abstracts of Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate Records. Book 1: 1687–1745.* Baltimore, 1987.

Rounds, H. L. Peter. *Vital Records of Swansea, Massachusetts, to 1850.* Boston, 1992.

Sanborn, Melinde Lutz. "Smithfield, Rhode Island, Death Records." *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* 146 (1992).

Sargent, Aaron. *Sargent Genealogy.* Somerville, Mass., 1895.

Sarle Family Papers. William L. Clements Library, University of Michigan. Summarized at *www.clements.umich.edu/Webguides/S/SmSarle.html.*

Saxbe, William B., Jr. "Historical 'Truth' Clothed and Naked: The 'Peculiar Ways' of Judith (Bowen) Freeman Arnold." *National Genealogical Society Quarterly* 90 (2002).

Scott, Kenneth. *Counterfeiting in Colonial Rhode Island.* Providence, 1960.

Sherman, Anna Clough. Unpublished, untitled manuscript. Ca. 1900; present location unknown.

Smith, James H. *History of Chenango and Madison Counties, New York.* Syracuse, N.Y., 1880.

Smith, Joseph Jencks. *Civil and Military Lists of Rhode Island.* 2 vols. (Vol. 1: 1647–1800; Vol. 2: 1800–1850). Providence, 1900, 1901; repr. Salem, Mass., 1997, 1999.

"Smithfield 1778 Tax List." *Rhode Island Roots* 21–23 (1995–1997).

"Smithfield Wills." *Rhode Island Genealogical Register,* various issues.

Sprague, Waldo Chamberlain. *Genealogies of the Families of Braintree, Mass.* CD-ROM. Boston, 2001.

Staples, William R. *Annals of the Town of Providence.* Providence, 1843.

Staples, William R. *Rhode Island in the Continental Congress, 1765–1790.* Providence, 1870.

Steere, Thomas. *History of the Town of Smithfield.* Providence, 1881.

Storke, Elliot G. *History of Cayuga County, 1789–1879.* Syracuse, N.Y., 1879.

Sweetland, Doug. *A Partial Genealogy of the Swetland/Sweetland/Sweatland Family in America.* No place, 2003.

Sylvester, Nathaniel Bartlett. *History of Saratoga County.* Philadelphia, 1878.

Taylor, Maureen Alice. *Runaways, Deserters, and Notorious Villains from Rhode Island Newspapers. Volume 1: The Providence Gazette, 1762–1800.* Camden, Maine, 2001.

Teel Bible Record. Printed in 1815. R. Stanton Avery Special Collections, New England Historic Genealogical Society, Boston, manuscript A 5053.

Thompson, Roger. *Divided We Stand: Watertown, Massachusetts, 1630–1680* . Amherst, Mass., 2001.

Venn, John, and J. A. Venn. *Alumni Catabrigienses.* 10 vols. Cambridge, England, 1922–1954.

Vital Records of Attleborough, Massachusetts, to the end of the Year 1849. Salem, Mass., 1934.

Vital Records of Dartmouth, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. 3 vols. Boston, 1929.

Vital Records of Leicester, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849. Worcester, Mass., 1903.

Vital Records of Mendon, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. Boston, 1920.

Vital Records of Northbridge, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. Boston, 1916.

Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849. 2 vols. Salem, Mass., 1925.

Vital Records of Upton, Massachusett,s to the End of the Year 1849. Worcester, Mass., 1904.

Vital Records of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. Boston, 1916.

Vital Records of Warren (Formerly Western), Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849. Worcester, Mass., 1910.

Vital Records of Wrentham, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850. 2 vols. Boston, 1910.

Watertown Records. 8 vols. Watertown, Mass., 1894–1899).

Wessler, Edith S. *The Jocelyn-Joslin-Joslyn-Josselyn Family.* Tokyo, 1962.

White, Dorothy Higson. *Descendants of Roger Williams. Book III – The Sayles Line.* East Greenwich, R.I., 2002.

White, Virgil D. *Genealogical Abstracts of Revolutionary War Pension Files.* 4 vols. Waynesboro, Tenn., 1990–1992.

Whitman, Roscoe L. *History and Genealogy of the Ancestors and Some Descendants of Stukely Westcott.* 2 vols. Oneonta, N.Y., 1932–1939; repr. Salem, Mass., 2001.

Wilkinson, Israel. *Memoirs of the Wilkinson Family in America.* Jacksonville, Ill., 1869.

Williams, J. C. *History and Map of Danby, Vermont.* Rutland, Vt., 1869.

Worcester County, Massachusetts, Warnings, 1737–1788. Worcester, Mass., 1899; repr. Camden, Maine, 1992.

INDEX

ABEL
Alma (Walker), 528, 529
Ralph, 529
ADAM, 129
ALANSON
P., 572
ALDRICH, 237
Aaron, 314
Amey, 169
Amy, 326
Anna, 317, 318
Anna (Man), 216
Anthony, 314
Arnold, 240, 241
Asa, 313
Augustus, 240
Barach, 317
Bathsheba[6] (Arnold), 237, 238
Caleb, 238, 239, 240, 241
Dexter, 240
Dianna[6] (Arnold), 237, 238
Dorothy (Smith), 411
Elisha, 313, 314
Elizabeth, 314
Elizabeth (_____), 313
George, 238
Hannah, 112, 113, 116, 240, 311, 313, 315, 317, 320, 431
Hannah (_____), 112
Hannah (Aldrich), 275, 276
Hannah[5] (Arnold), 116, 313, 314
Hannah (White), 239
Huldah, 88
Isabella, 317, 318, 319
Israel, 216, 255, 314
James, 102, 103
Jane (Puffer), 77
Joah, 276
Joanna[6] (Arnold), 237, 238
Joel, 240, 285
John, 80, 233, 236, 317
Laben, 169
Lydia, 240, 241
Mahab, 313, 314
Marcy/Mary, 313, 314
Margery, 240
Martha (Aldrich), 275, 276
Martha (Jenks) (Arnold), 102, 288, 290, 293
Mary, 240, 241, 314, 411, 412
Mary[5] (Arnold), 82, 83, 239, 240
Mary (Hill), 317
Mary/Mercy[6] (Arnold), 237, 238
Moses, 231, 239, 240, 241
Naaman, 240, 397
Nathan, 276
Oliver, 238
Patience (Man), 317
Philadelphia (Williams), 230, 231
Rachel[6] (Arnold), 237, 238
Robert, 317
Ruth, 77, 78, 79, 80, 232, 235, 236
Samuel, 77, 112, 122, 313, 314
Sarah, 26, 112
Sarah (Comstock), 316
Simeon, 116, 313, 314
Stephen, 238
Susannah, 240
Sylvanus, 411
Thomas, 240
Waite, 314
Welcome, 240
William, 240
ALDRIDGE
Thomas, 334
ALEXANDER
John, 572
John H., 573
Pamela (Comstock), 572, 573
Patience[6] (Arnold), 474, 475
ALLEN
Capt. Thomas, 501
Ezra, 216
Hart, 400, 401
Jedediah, 306
Lucy (Man), 216
Miriam, 155, 156
Walter, 250

American Revolution, 144, 148, 173, 177, 186, 198, 205, 207, 255, 260, 270, 279, 306, 330, 353, 358, 371, 373, 379, 395, 399, 408, 422, 449, 458, 464, 467, 471, 473, 480, 483, 488, 501, 505, 507, 515, 541, 577
AMHERST
Gen. Jeffrey, 284
AMIDISON
Nabby (Capron), 261
ANDERSON
Jerome, xiv, xvii
ANDOVER
Mercy/Mary (Stafford), 57, 58, 59, 163, 165, 168, 172, 177, 181, 183, 184, 186, 188
ANDREWS
Esther, 111
Julia, 424
Orrin W., 424
ANDROS
Edmund, 17
ANGELL
Alice (Ashton), 14
Anphillis, 53
Benjamin, 179
Daniel, 408
Ethan, 408
Freelove, 408
John, 408
Lydia (Benchley), 179, 180
Lydia (Winsor), 408
Mary, 14, 19, 37, 41, 43, 48
Mary (Brayton), 401
Mercy, 131
Mercy (Medbury), 408
Naomi (Smith), 63, 64
Phebe Ann[5] (Arnold), 50, 138, 139, 408
Ruth, 202
Thomas, 14, 408
Zerviah, 286
ANTHONY
Mary, 467, 492
APPLEBY
John, 155
Phebe, 54
ARNOLD, 327, 394
_____, xii, 11, 143
_____[5], 170
_____ (Fenner), 585
_____ (Lamphere), 486, 487
Aaron, 256
Aaron[5], 103
Aaron[6], 243, 294, 295
Abby Eliza[6], 555
Abel Hunt[6], 555
Abigail[3], 34, 35, 70, 71
Abigail[4], 45, 46, 47, 56, 124, 125
Abigail[5], 116, 131, 133, 134, 189, 190, 315, 316, 387, 388, 393, 394
Abigail[6], 292, 465, 466
Abigail[7], 99, 278
Abigail (Baxter/Barrett), 464, 465, 466
Abigail (Randall), 551, 552, 553
Abigail (Smith), 131, 132, 133, 134, 375, 377, 385, 388, 389, 393, 541, 542, 543
Abigail B.[6], 274
Abraham[5], 128, 130, 146, 212, 357, 358, 359, 365, 366, 371, 372, 415, 416
Abraham[6], 415, 416, 417
Abram W.[6], 498
Acsah[5], 174, 176, 467, 492, 493
Ada[5], 111
Ada Harris[6], 502, 503
Ahab[5], 169, 170, 452, 454, 459, 460, 461
Ahab[6], 221
Aimy[6], 502, 504
Alanson Brown[6], 570
Albert[6], 427
Alden[6], 534, 535, 536, 537
Alexander[6], 415, 416
Alfred[6], 334, 335, 463, 465, 466, 555
Alice, xii, xiii, 1
Alice[4], 52, 148, 149
Alice[5], 50, 120, 138, 139, 206, 409, 410
Alice[6], 278, 578
Alice (_____), xi, xii
Alice (Brown), 467, 468, 469
Alice (Crawford), 268, 269, 272, 274
Alice (Smith), 157, 158, 204
Alice Alsey[5], 205, 580, 581
Alise[6], 347
Almon C.[6], 531, 532
Alpha, 251, 254
Alpha[6], 237, 238
Alpha (Arnold), 251, 254
Amarilla[5], 197, 576
Amasa[6], 406, 407
Amaziah[5], 95
Amaziah[6], 273
Amey[5], 182, 499, 510
Amey[6], 166, 278, 299, 300, 444, 446
Amey (Phillips), 93, 94, 95, 232, 233, 234, 268
Amie[5], 50, 138, 139, 399, 400, 401

Amie (Eddy), 256
Amos, 299
Amos[4], 58, 59, 168, 169, 170, 171, 447, 448, 449, 451, 454, 457, 459, 462, 463
Amos[5], 169, 171, 452, 462, 463
Amy[6], 105, 247, 248, 273, 406, 407, 469, 485, 579
Amy (Aldrich), 326
Amy (Bucklin), 163, 164, 181, 182, 499, 501, 505, 507, 510
Amy (Bucklin) (Arnold), 163, 164, 181, 182, 499, 501, 505, 507, 510
Amy (Eddy), 243
Amy (Smith), 137, 138, 139, 395, 397, 399, 402, 405, 408, 409
Amy Aldrich[6], 398
Ana, 566
Ann[6], 295, 496, 503
Ann F.[6], 555
Ann M.[6], 203
Anna[4], 47, 122, 123
Anna[5], 105, 189, 190, 540, 543, 553
Anna[6], 166, 319, 362, 390, 391, 392, 442, 465, 466, 517, 584
Anna[7], 278, 406
Anna (Aldrich), 317, 318
Anna (Bowen), 568, 569
Anna (Dexter), 165, 167, 360, 440, 441, 443
Anna E.[6], 191
Anna Elizabeth[6], 547
Anna Maria[6], 502, 503
Anne[5], 101, 106, 154, 172, 173, 174, 176, 495, 497
Anne[5] (Arnold), 106, 172, 173, 174, 176, 495, 497
Anne (Holroyd), 577, 578
Anne (Hopkins), 146, 415, 418, 420
Anson[6], 324, 325
Anstis[5], 154
Anstis[6], 434
Anstis (Thornton), 152, 153, 154, 431, 433, 435, 437
Anthony[4], 45, 46, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 305, 309, 327
Anthony[5], 111, 117, 323, 326, 329
Anthony[6], 308, 418, 419, 469
Arba[5], 176, 495, 496, 497
Arnold[5], 170, 395
Arnold[6], 289, 318, 320, 362, 474, 478
Arthur[6], 487
Asa[5], 83, 131
Asa[6], 82, 190, 243, 538, 539, 540
Asa[7], 278
Asabel[6], 362
Aza[5], 132, 133, 134, 378, 385, 387, 388
Azabah (Davis), 486
Bailey[6], 517
Barbara (Westcott), 497, 498
Barberry[6], 353, 354
Barton[6], 460, 461
Barzillai[6], 374
Bathsheba[6], 237, 238
Bathsheba (Ballou), 104, 105, 172, 192, 236, 296, 297, 299, 301, 303
Belina[6], 478, 479
Belinda (Lynda)[5], 197, 530, 531, 569
Belinda (Lynda)[5] (Arnold), 197, 530, 531, 569
Benedict, ix, 295
Benedict[5], 101, 119, 120, 121, 228, 229, 342, 348, 349, 350, 351
Benjamin, 196, 360, 361
Benjamin[4], 57, 58, 59, 60, 128, 165, 166, 167, 168, 205, 440, 441, 443, 444
Benjamin[5], 131, 134, 189, 190, 538, 539, 540, 542
Benjamin[6], 299, 442, 444, 445, 477, 478, 569, 570, 576, 584
Benjamin[6] W., 427
Bertha/Bethia (Man), 288, 289, 296
Betsey[5], 145, 153, 154, 435, 436
Betsey[6], 455
Caleb, 486
Caleb[4], 58, 59, 106, 168, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 464, 467, 470, 473, 476, 477, 480, 483, 486, 488, 492, 495, 497
Caleb[5], 74, 75, 76, 84, 161, 173, 175, 223, 225, 226, 227, 320, 474, 478, 480, 481, 483, 497
Caleb[6], 222, 474, 475, 526
Carolin Elizabeth[6], 430
Caroline Pearce[6], 430
Catherine, 438
Catherine[5], 82, 83, 153, 154, 244, 245, 437, 438
Catherine[6], 243, 248, 432
Catherine (Jenks), 501, 502, 504
Catherine Francis[6], 430
Charill[6], 567
Charity (Shippee), 433, 434
Charles, xvi, 212

ARNOLD *cont.*
Charles[4], 69, 212
Charles[5], 154, 373
Charles[6], 498, 578
Charlotte/Abby (Troop), 541, 542, 543
Chloe, 197
Chloe (_____), 574, 575
Christopher, 202
Christopher[4], 60, 61, 195, 198, 199, 202, 203
Christopher[6], 553
Christopher Bentley[6], 414
Clarissa[6], 298
Clarissa (Case), 533, 536
Comfort, 166
Comfort[4], 60, 61, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 202, 530, 568, 571, 572, 574, 576
Comfort[5], 162, 197, 569, 572, 574, 575, 576
Comfort[6], 570
Cordelia[6], 431
Cornelia[6], 383
Cynthia[6], 456, 531, 532
Cynthia (Hastings), 268, 269, 274
Cyrus, 278
Cyrus[6], 237, 238
Daniel[3], 192
Daniel[4], 44, 45, 46, 82, 104, 105, 172, 236, 237, 296, 299, 301, 303
Capt. Daniel[4], 86, 105, 113
Daniel[5], 103, 200
Daniel[6], 292, 297, 298, 406, 407, 469, 536, 537
Daniel[7], 406
Darius[6], 362, 526
Daughter[5], 206
Daughter[6], 347, 540
David, 307
David[4], 34, 52, 56, 144, 155, 157, 158, 204, 413
David[5], xvii, 45, 102, 103, 111, 206, 289, 290, 291, 292, 305, 306, 307, 308, 447, 577, 578
David[6], 105, 205, 222, 224, 247, 248, 289, 291, 292, 308, 309, 444, 445, 474, 475, 485, 539
Deborah, 56
Deborah[3], 35
Deborah[4], 56, 58, 59, 177, 179
Deborah[5], 166, 167
Deborah[6], 416
Deborah (Comstock) (Arnold), 168, 169, 170, 299, 454, 457, 459, 462
Deborah[5] (Hopkins), 203
Deborah (Olney), 501, 503
Delilah[6] S., 418, 419
Dexter[6], 373, 374, 442, 516
Diana[6], 559
Dianna[6], 237, 238
Dianna[7], 259
Dinah[5], 40, 95, 96, 97
Dinah (Jenks) (Read), 257, 258, 259
Dinah (Thornton), 37, 39, 96
Dorcas[5], 105, 106, 303, 304
Dorcas[6], 289, 296, 298, 350, 351
Dorcas (Sarle), 582, 583, 584
Ebenezer[5], 111
Eddy[6], 477, 478, 479
Edmund[4], 38, 39, 87, 91, 92, 264
Edward[5], 175, 476, 483, 484, 485
Edward[6], 485
Edward S.[6], 398
Edwin Pearce[6], 430
Eleanor[3], 34, 35
Eleanor (Smith), 31, 35, 53, 55, 56, 57, 60, 62, 65, 67, 70
Eleazer Jr., 33
Eleazer[2], 8, 10, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 53, 55, 56, 57, 60, 62, 65, 67, 70, 155, 157, 192, 209
Eleazer[3], 34, 35, 53, 55, 56, 57, 62, 155, 157, 159, 161
Eleazer[4], 34, 52, 56, 57, 58, 59, 69, 155, 156, 205
Eleazer[5], 143, 169, 170, 411, 412, 447, 448
Eleazer[6], 205, 292, 451, 452, 454
Elethan (Harris), 365, 366
Elijah[5], 106
Elijah[6], 237, 238, 257, 258, 259, 531, 532
Elijah[7], 238, 258, 259
Elisha, 318
Elisha[5], 100, 111, 119, 120, 121, 187, 277, 278, 282, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 515, 519, 520, 523, 525, 530
Elisha[6], 292, 312, 347, 442, 474, 475, 526
Elisha[7], 278
Elisha J.[6], 584
Eliza[6], 384, 426, 427, 487, 540
Eliza Harriet[6], 379, 384
Elizabeth, xi, xii, xiii, 188, 189, 190, 426, 538, 541, 544, 548, 550, 551
Elizabeth[2], 9, 10, 24, 26, 27

Elizabeth[3], 34, 35, 55, 62, 63, 64
Elizabeth[4], 50, 59, 69, 213
Elizabeth[5], 50, 133, 134, 151, 186, 187, 189, 190, 191, 324, 387, 388, 422, 423, 424, 511, 512, 548, 549
Elizabeth[6], 298, 324, 325, 421, 553
Elizabeth (_____), 204
Elizabeth (_____) (_____), 582, 585
Elizabeth (Arnold), 188, 189, 190, 538, 541, 544, 548, 550, 551
Elizabeth[5] (Arnold), 50, 133, 134, 387, 388
Elizabeth (Brown), 332, 333, 334, 335
Elizabeth (Burlingame), 48, 49, 50, 127, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140
Elizabeth (Clemence), 411
Elizabeth (Cobb), 420, 421
Elizabeth (Grimes), 558, 559
Elizabeth (Hadwen), 322, 323, 324, 325
Elizabeth (Mathews) (Mathewson), 51, 52, 143, 144, 146, 147, 148, 150, 152
Elizabeth (Pearce), 150, 151, 422, 425, 428
Elizabeth (Peck) (Smith), 296, 298
Elizabeth (Smith), 405, 407
Elizabeth Lucinda[6], 559, 560
Elizabeth Mary[6], 398
Ellen/Elenor (Whipple), 293, 295
Emer[6], 406, 407
Emily[6], 559, 560
Emily Beulah[6], 517
Emmeline[6], 421
Enoch[4], 60, 61, 169, 192, 193, 554, 556, 558, 561, 562, 564, 566
Enoch[5], 105, 106, 168, 169, 170, 193, 299, 452, 454, 455, 457, 518, 557, 561, 564, 566
Enoch[6], 555, 559
Ephraim[6], 319, 426, 427, 444, 445
Esek[6], 485
Esek (Ezekiel)[5], 173, 175
Esekiel (Esek)[5], 464, 465, 466
Esick[6], 222
Esther (Andrews) (Turner), 111
Esther (Darling), 260, 261
Eunice[6], 579
Ezekiel[6], 278
Faithful (Howard), 186
Fatima[6], 298
Fenner[6], 585
Franklin[6], 487
Freelove, 94, 127, 128, 129, 130, 232, 357, 360, 363, 365, 368, 371
Freelove[4], 67, 69
Freelove[5], 129, 130, 368, 369, 370
Freelove[6], 166, 269, 274, 359, 362, 374
Freelove (_____), 59, 67, 68, 69, 204, 207, 209, 210, 212, 213
Freelove (Arnold), 127, 128, 129, 130, 357, 360, 363, 365, 368, 371
Freelove[4] (Arnold), 67, 69
Freelove (Olney), 441, 442
Freelove C.[6], 274
Freelove Sophia (Barnes), 544, 547
George[5], 115, 116, 117, 152, 153, 154, 182, 187, 193, 200, 322, 323, 324, 325, 329, 516, 533, 534, 535, 536, 554, 556, 558, 559, 561, 562, 564, 567
George[6], 306, 307, 308, 324, 325, 412, 434, 455, 469, 498, 502, 503, 559, 567, 584
George W.[5], 431, 433
George W.[6], 431
George Washington[6], 384
Gideon[5], 101, 284, 285
Guy[6], 487
Hadwen[6], 323, 324, 325
Hannah[4], 40
Hannah[5], 82, 84, 100, 101, 116, 257, 258, 286, 287, 313, 314
Hannah[6], 285, 320, 321, 398, 418, 419, 487
Hannah (_____), 28, 30, 51, 305, 306, 307, 308
Hannah (Aldrich), 112, 113, 116, 311, 313, 315, 317, 320
Hannah[5] (Arnold), 82, 84, 257, 258
Hannah (Baxter) (Hayward), 98, 101
Hannah (Buffum), 250
Hannah (Dexter), 371, 372, 373, 374, 516
Hannah (Haviland), 111
Hannah (Haywood), 43, 46
Hannah (Whipple), 98, 100, 255, 275, 277, 279
Hannah (Whipple) (Eddy), 99, 100, 101, 286
Hannah Greene[6], 538, 539
Harriet[6], 351, 383, 463
Henriette F.[6], 555
Henry[6], 321, 525, 526
Henry Steere[6], 427
Henry Tucker, 467
Hiram[6], 418, 419, 487
Horatio, 570
Horatio[6], 570

ARNOLD *cont.*
Huldah[5], 50, 138, 139, 402, 403, 404
Huldah[6], 346, 347
Ichabod[2], 10
Ichabod[5], 206, 582, 583, 584, 585
Irene[6], 517
Irene (Hathaway), 515, 516, 517
Isaac, 362
Isaac[5], 128, 130, 166, 167, 357, 359, 360, 361, 362, 365, 371
Isaac[6], 318, 362, 366, 469
Isaac A.[6], 416
Isaac Newton[6], 432
Isabel (Greene), 538, 539
Isabella[6], 539, 540
Isabella (Aldrich), 317, 318, 319
Isabella (Davis), 495, 496
Iscah (Malavery), 473, 474, 475
Ismael[5], 87
Israel, 507
Israel[4], 45, 46, 47, 118, 119, 120, 121, 330, 332, 336, 337, 341, 343, 344, 345, 348
Israel[5], 120, 175, 181, 182, 186, 501, 502
Israel[6], 345, 346, 347, 502, 503
Israel[7], 278
Jabez[5], 173, 175, 474, 476, 477, 478, 479, 493, 497
Jabez[6], 477, 478, 479
Jacob, 92
Jacob[5], 74, 75, 76, 160, 220, 221, 223, 263
Jacob[6], 222, 362
James, 278, 397
James[3], 327
James[4], 52, 69, 147, 209
James[5], 111, 113, 115, 116, 117, 164, 323, 326, 327, 328, 329
James[6], 325, 327, 328, 390, 392, 418, 419, 430, 468, 469, 478, 479, 482, 552, 553
James A.[6], 555
James M.[6], 190
James N., xv, xvi
Jane[5], 80, 235
Jemima (Ballou), 159, 160, 220, 223, 224
Jenks[6], 502, 504
Jeremiah, 16
Jeremiah[3], 34, 35, 59, 67, 68, 69, 127, 128, 157, 204, 207, 209, 210, 212, 213
Jeremiah[4], 60, 68, 69, 141, 168, 204, 205, 577, 580, 582, 585
Jeremiah[5], 206, 582, 585
Jeremiah[6], 584
Jeremiah O.[6], 502, 503
Jerusha[5], 187, 518, 523
Jesse[6], 221, 442
Jireh[5], 156
Joana[7], 406
Joane, xi, xii, xiii
Joanna[6], 237, 238, 258
Joanna[7], 258
Job[3], 19
Job[4], 49, 50, 67, 69, 127, 128, 129, 130, 137, 165, 236, 352, 355, 357, 359, 360, 363, 365, 366, 368, 371, 395
Job[5], 128, 130, 359, 371, 372, 373, 374, 516
Joel[7], 278
John, xi, xii, 16, 45, 247
John[2], 8, 9, 10, 28, 29, 30, 34, 51
John[3], 19, 34, 35, 37, 38, 41, 43, 44, 45, 48, 60, 61, 67, 86, 98, 99, 100, 102, 104, 107, 109, 112, 113, 118, 122, 124, 126, 192, 194, 198, 201, 202, 288, 312
John[4], 46, 52, 102, 143, 168, 248, 288, 290, 293, 411
John[5], 82, 83, 100, 189, 190, 194, 246, 247, 248, 539, 541, 542, 543, 546, 551, 552, 556, 561, 564
John[6], 274, 288, 289, 482, 487, 579
John Arnold[6], 543
John B.[5], 192, 193, 554, 555, 558, 564, 566
John Barton Jr., 438
John H.[6], 555
John R.[6], 552, 553
John Wesley[6], 415, 416, 417
Jonathan, 51, 388, 393
Jonathan[3], 30, 51, 52, 143, 144, 146, 147, 148, 150, 152, 190
Jonathan[4], 49, 50, 52, 128, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 137, 139, 140, 141, 150, 151, 375, 377, 378, 385, 388, 389, 393, 422, 424, 425, 428, 429
Jonathan[5], xv, xvi, 95, 131, 132, 133, 134, 146, 150, 151, 189, 190, 191, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 378, 381, 385, 386, 387, 388, 390, 418, 419, 542, 545, 546, 548, 551, 552, 553
Jonathan[6], 307, 308, 412
Joseph, 16, 33, 318, 497
Joseph[3], 34, 35, 53, 55, 57, 58, 59, 67, 157, 163, 165, 168, 172, 177, 181, 183, 184, 186, 188

Joseph[4], xvi, 38, 39, 58, 59, 73, 74, 75, 77, 85, 87, 88, 163, 164, 177, 181, 215, 217, 219, 220, 223, 225, 226, 228, 230
Joseph[5], 76, 111, 150, 151, 156, 164, 176, 187, 197, 425, 426, 427, 428, 497, 498, 519, 523, 525, 526, 530, 568, 569, 574, 576
Joseph[6], 105, 169, 222, 289, 299, 362, 444, 446, 448, 465, 466, 502, 504, 570, 584
Joseph Lafayette[6], 430
Joseph P.[6], 570
Joseph Washburn[6], 421
Joshua, 507
Joshua[4], 58, 59, 164, 181, 182, 186, 499, 501, 502, 505, 507, 510
Joshua[6], 170, 502, 503, 526
Josiah, 94
Josiah[4], 38, 39, 86, 93, 94, 95, 232, 268
Josiah[5], 95
Josiah Lyndon[6], 273
Judeth, 196
Judith, 572
Judith (Bowen) (Freeman), 194, 195
Julia[6], 319, 487
Julia[7], 353
Julia Ann[7], 259
Katherine, xii, 1
Katherine (_____), xii
Kesiah (Hawkins), 127, 129, 352, 355
Kesiah[5], 49, 128, 130, 363
Keziah[6], 374
Lauren Briggs[6], 559, 560, 567
Lavina, 360, 361, 362
Lavina[4], 69, 207, 208
Lavina[5], 166, 167
Lavina[5] (Arnold), 166, 167
Lavina[6], 243, 485
Lavina (Arnold), 360, 361, 362
Lemuel H., 546
Lemuel Hastings[6], 274
Levi[5], 115, 116, 117, 165, 166, 167, 317, 318, 319, 441, 443, 444, 445, 539
Lewis, 455
Lewis[6], 319, 455
Lorene (Sipperly), 415, 416
Lorene[6], 416, 417
Louisa[6], 553
Louisa Mary[6], 190, 542, 543
Lucinda (Hunter), 476, 478
Lucinda[5] (Lucretia?), 170, 171
Lucretia[6], 477, 478, 479
Lucy[5], 121, 175, 337, 338, 339, 340, 470, 471, 472
Lucy[6], 243, 455, 465, 466, 477, 479, 485
Lucy[7], 99
Lucy (Cargill), 261, 311, 312
Lucy (Hunt), 554, 555
Lucy Maria[6], 555
Luke[5], 116, 117, 138, 139, 329, 395, 396, 397, 398, 405, 406
Lydia, 363
Lydia[4], 56
Lydia[5], 49, 82, 83, 87, 128, 129, 145, 157, 158, 166, 167, 170, 187, 193, 200, 204, 205, 249, 250, 355, 356, 521, 522, 564, 565, 577, 580
Lydia[6], 166, 224, 321, 442, 444, 448, 456, 474, 475, 495, 496, 517, 526, 535, 536, 537, 578
Lydia[7], 278
Lydia[5] (Arnold), 157, 158, 204, 205, 206, 577, 580
Lydia (Burlingame), 186
Lydia (Edmunds), 186, 187, 511, 513, 515, 518, 519, 521, 523, 525, 527, 530, 533
Lydia (Harris), 443, 444, 445
Lydia (Hill), 523, 524
Lydia (Sweetland), 454, 455, 457
Lydia (Whipple), 198, 199, 200
Lydia Ann[6], 503
Lydia H.[6], 445, 446
Lydia T.[6], 579
Lynda[6], 531, 532
Lynda[7], 531
Mahala[6], 319
Marcy/Mary (Aldrich), 313, 314
Marcy[5], 50, 120, 133, 134, 182, 330, 331, 375, 376, 386, 387, 388, 505, 506, 507, 510
Marcy[6], 474, 498
Margaret, xii, xiii
Margaret[6], 285, 324, 325
Margaret (_____), xi
Margaret (Capron), 98, 101, 282, 284
Margaret (Sargent), 420, 421
Margaret Louisa (Lyman), 544
Maria[6], 191, 325, 434, 487, 553
Martha, 320
Martha[5], 82, 84, 100, 120, 167, 279, 280, 281, 336
Martha[6], 289, 292, 398
Martha (Arnold), 320

ARNOLD *cont.*
Martha[5] (Arnold), 82, 84
Martha[5] (Arnold) (Arnold), 82, 84, 225, 226, 227
Martha (Bucklin), 246, 247, 248
Martha (Jenks), 102, 288, 290, 293
Martha (Wilkinson), 202, 203
Martin Brown[6], 429, 430
Martin[6], 367
Mary, xi, xii, 351, 359, 480, 481
Mary[3], 19, 34, 35, 41, 42, 65, 89
Mary[4], xvii, 39, 49, 50, 61, 73, 85, 88, 89, 135, 136, 201
Mary[5], 82, 83, 105, 106, 111, 121, 144, 145, 156, 167, 186, 187, 239, 240, 301, 302, 341, 342, 350, 440, 513, 514, 571, 572, 573
Mary[5] "Polly," 197
Mary[6], 105, 166, 238, 278, 289, 300, 308, 318, 327, 328, 334, 335, 350, 351, 362, 379, 382, 383, 398, 407, 412, 418, 419, 421, 442, 453, 469, 474, 475, 496, 502, 503, 526, 531, 532
Mary/Mercy[6], 237, 238
Mary/Mercy[6], 238
Mary (_____), 418, 419
Mary (_____) (Hurd), 582
Mary (Aldrich), 411, 412
Mary (Angell), 14, 19, 37, 41, 43, 48
Mary (Arnold), 480, 481
Mary (Barrow), 357, 359
Mary (Briggs), 192, 193, 209, 554, 556, 558, 561, 562, 564, 566
Mary (Brown), 161, 162, 194, 195, 197, 389, 390, 391, 392, 538, 571, 572, 574, 576
Mary (Cargill), 112, 115, 117, 303, 311, 322, 326, 329, 395
Mary (Cruff), 284, 285
Mary (Greene), 352, 353, 354
Mary (Griffin), 519, 520
Mary (Knight) (Eaton), 558
Mary (Man), 81, 83, 246
Mary (Mann), 81
Mary (Mowry), 43, 46, 86, 98, 102, 104, 107, 109, 112, 118, 122, 124, 126
Mary (Newell), 462, 463
Mary (Peirce), 413, 414
Mary (Phillips), 405, 406, 407
Mary (Staples), 91, 92
Mary (Steere), 151, 425, 426, 427
Mary (Woodward), 37, 39, 73, 77, 81, 85, 88, 91
Mary A.[6], 559, 560
Mary Ann[6], 416, 427, 430, 431, 517, 555
Mary Brown[6], 574, 575
Mary Elizabeth[6], 413, 414
Mary Jane[6], 430
Mary Polly (Brown), 428, 429, 430
Matilda[6], 187, 524
Mercy[4], 45, 46, 58, 59, 107, 108, 184, 185
Mercy[5], 74, 76, 111, 187, 189, 190, 191, 215, 216, 527, 528, 548, 550
Mercy[6], 475, 485, 502, 503, 517, 535, 536, 537, 553
Mercy (Phetteplace), 483, 484, 485
Mercy (Westcott) (Luet), 144, 413
Mercy/Mary (Whipple), 290, 292
Meribah (Russell), 212
Miriam (Allen), 155, 156
Molly[6], 485
Molly (Burr), 268, 273
Moses[4], 459
Moses[5], xvii, 45, 102, 103, 154, 288, 289, 291, 296, 433, 434
Nabby (Dunbar), 345
Nancy[6], 353, 354, 456, 485, 531, 578, 584
Nancy (Gladding) (Liscomb), 451, 452, 453
Naomi[4], 38, 40
Naomi[5], 82, 84, 87, 255, 256, 265, 266, 267
Naomi (Doyle), 451, 452
Nathan, 129, 152, 183, 261, 316, 520
Nathan Jr., 316
Nathan[4], 58, 59, 183
Nathan[5], 116, 186, 187, 311, 312, 373, 515, 516, 517, 519, 521, 533, 562
Nathan[6], 116, 311, 312, 374, 444, 445, 475, 517, 524, 526, 531, 532
Nathan Merritt[7], 531
Nathaniel[5], 138, 139, 405, 406, 407
Nehemiah[4], 470, 471
Nehemiah[5], 173, 175, 467, 468, 469, 486
Nicholas, xiii, xiv
Noah[5], 45, 102, 103, 111, 293, 294, 295
Noah[6], 294, 295
Obadiah[6], 487
Olive[6], 465, 466
Olive (Carpenter), 447, 448
Olive C.[6], 559, 560
Oliver, 486
Oliver[4], 69

Oliver[5], xvi, 120, 128, 130, 175, 212, 332, 333, 334, 335, 358, 365, 366, 467, 486, 487
Oliver[6], 324, 325, 345, 346, 347, 367, 373, 374, 465, 466
Olney[6], 502, 503
Othniel[5], 175, 473, 476
Othniel[6], 477, 478
Owen[6], 487
Parley[6], 516, 517
Patience, 172, 566
Patience[4], 56, 161, 172, 194
Patience[5], 74, 76, 82, 84, 120, 176, 193, 228, 229, 263, 488, 489, 490, 491, 556, 557
Patience[6], 318, 346, 347, 474, 475
Patience[7], 353
Patience (Brown), 161, 172, 175, 464, 467, 470, 473, 476, 480, 483, 486, 488, 492
Patience (Carpenter) (Peck), 296
Patience (Cook), 81, 82, 83, 225, 249, 251, 255, 257, 260, 263, 320
Patience (Greene), 377, 379, 382, 383
Patience (Stafford), 352, 354
Patience (Wilkinson), 73, 74, 75, 85, 87, 88, 215, 217, 219, 220, 223, 225, 228, 230
Paul[6], 559, 560
Pearce, 423
Pearce[5], 151, 425, 428, 429, 430
Peleg[5], xvi, 82, 83, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254
Peleg[6], 481, 482
Perles[6], 487
Phebe, 324, 325, 329, 395, 396, 397, 398, 536
Phebe[3], 34, 35, 53, 54
Phebe[5], 74, 75, 76, 116, 117, 193, 217, 218, 219, 562, 563
Phebe[6], 166, 221, 263, 308, 351, 374, 398, 442, 466, 469
Phebe (Arnold), 329, 395, 396, 397, 398
Phebe[5] (Arnold), 116, 117
Phebe[6] (Arnold), 221, 263
Phebe (Jackson), 544, 546, 547
Phebe (Mowry), 277, 278
Phebe (Parkhurst) (Cane), xiii, xiv, 1, 2, 5, 7, 8, 10, 14, 20, 24, 28, 29, 31
Phebe Ann[5], 50, 138, 139, 408
Philadelphia[5], 74, 75, 76, 230, 231
Philadelphia[6], 242, 243
Philip, 430
Philip[5], 87, 92, 264
Philip[6], 536, 537
Polly[7], 259
Polly Burr[6], 273
Preserved[6], 367
Preserved Whipple, 32
Priscilla[5], 105
Provided[6], 289
Rachel, 251
Rachel[5], 105, 106, 236, 237, 238, 257, 485
Rachel[6], 237, 238, 478, 479, 539, 540
Rachel (Arnold), 251
Rachel[5] (Arnold), 105, 106, 236, 237, 238, 257, 485
Rachel (Harris), 538, 539, 540
Rachel (Irish), 525, 526
Rachel (Phetteplace), 476, 478, 479, 483, 493
Rachel (Smith), 242, 243
Rebecca[6], 353, 354
Reuben M.[6], 431
Rhobe[6], 465, 466
Rhoda[6], 584
Rholey[6], 222
Richard, x, xi, xii, xiii, xiv, 1
Richard[2], 8, 10, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 25, 26, 37, 41, 43, 44, 48, 312
Richard[3], 19, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 43, 48, 73, 74, 77, 78, 81, 82, 85, 86, 88, 91, 96
Richard[4], xvii, 38, 39, 73, 77, 78, 79, 80, 232, 235, 236, 352
Richard[5], 78, 79, 80, 134, 189, 191, 236
Richard[6], 258
Richard[7], 259
Richard James[6], 379, 384
Robe[6], 221
Roxey, 566
Rufus[5], 169, 170, 451, 452, 453, 454
Rufus[6], 278, 452
Russell[6], 442
Ruth, 38, 278, 344, 346, 347
Ruth[5], 78, 80, 182, 232, 234, 505, 507, 510
Ruth[6], 258
Ruth[7], 259
Ruth (Aldrich), 77, 78, 79, 80, 232, 235, 236
Ruth (Arnold), 275, 276
Ruth (Howard), 459, 460, 461
Ruth (Sayles), 147
Ruth (Wilkinson), 73, 85, 86, 87, 88, 264, 265

ARNOLD *cont.*
Sabra[6], 367, 555
Sabrina[6], 485
Sally, 144
Sally[5], 145, 154, 200
Sally[6], 258, 259, 274, 416, 517, 578
Sally[7], 259
Sally (Campbell), 462, 463
Sally James[6], 414
Samuel, 129, 388
Samuel[4], 58, 59, 183, 188, 189, 190, 538, 539, 541, 544, 545, 548, 550, 551
Samuel[5], 80, 133, 134, 189, 190, 191, 447, 539, 542, 544, 545, 546, 547, 551, 552
Samuel[6], 116, 311, 312, 452, 477, 478, 479, 485, 487, 534, 535, 536, 552, 553
Samuel[6] Greene, 379, 382, 383
Sarah, 34
Sarah[4], xvii, 49, 50, 69, 131, 137, 140, 141, 142, 210, 211
Sarah[5], 49, 82, 84, 100, 110, 111, 128, 130, 169, 170, 182, 260, 261, 275, 276, 307, 309, 310, 454, 457, 458, 507, 508
Sarah[6], 166, 289, 295, 359, 441, 442, 452, 474, 475
Sarah (Sally?)[6], 465, 466
Sarah[7], 250
Sarah (____) (Philips?), 60, 61, 192, 194, 198, 201, 202
Sarah (_____), 428, 430
Sarah (Brown), 183
Sarah (Dexter), 357
Sarah (Fish), 109, 110, 111, 305, 309
Sarah (Hawkins), 55, 56, 62, 155, 157, 159, 161
Sarah (Smith), 14, 18
Sarah (Southwick), 121, 348, 349, 350, 351
Sarah (Wilkinson), 168, 170, 447, 449, 451
Sarah H.[6], 324, 325
Seth[4], xvii, 45, 46, 47, 109, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 119, 303, 311, 312, 313, 315, 317, 318, 320, 322, 323, 326, 327, 329, 395, 397
Seth[5], 116, 117, 225, 320
Seth[6], 321, 398
Seth[7], 312
Shubal[6] F., 398
Sidney[6], 525, 526
Silas, 388
Silas[5], 187, 197, 530, 531, 532, 569
Silas[6], 221, 222, 353, 354, 516, 520, 524, 530
Silas Jr.[6], 532
Silas Edmonds[6], 516, 517
Silas R.[6], 555
Silence[6], 461
Simeon[5], 165, 166, 167, 441, 442, 443
Simeon[6], 248, 444, 446
Smith[6], 406, 407
Son[5], 101, 190
Sophia[6], 432, 434, 485
Sophia (Mason), 431
Sophia (Walker), 486
Stafford[5], 169, 170, 171
Stephen, 251, 480
Stephen[5], 75, 78, 79, 80, 106, 128, 129, 236, 237, 238, 257, 352, 353, 354
Stephen[6], 258, 292, 469, 481, 482
Stephen[7], 238, 258
Stephen G.[6], 353, 354
Stuckeley[4], 58, 59
Stukely[4], 181, 186, 187, 502, 511, 513, 515, 518, 519, 521, 523, 525, 527, 530, 533
Stukely[5], 187, 518, 519, 523, 524, 525, 527, 530
Stukely[6], 526
Susan, 196, 570, 576
Susan[5], 154
Susan[6], 517
Susan (Smyton), 1
Susan F.[6], 203
Susan G.[6], 547
Susanna, 1
Susanna[2], 1, 5, 10, 11, 12, 13
Susanna[4], 45, 47, 56, 126, 159
Susanna[5], 169, 170, 449, 450
Susanna[6], 289
Susanna[7], 406
Susannah, 220, 223
Susannah[5], 83, 101, 282, 283
Susannah[6], 169, 448
Susannah (Ballou), 159, 160, 220, 221, 223, 263
Susannah (Comstock), 81, 83, 239, 242, 244
Sybil (Burt), 574
Sylvia[6], 222
Tabitha (Luther), 486
Thankful[6], 465
Thanna (Thankful?)[6], 465, 466
Theodate (Mussey), 343, 344, 345, 346, 347

Thomas, 1, 2, 92, 242, 385
Thomas Jr., 33
Thomas[1], ix, x, xi, xii, xiii, xiv, xv, xvi, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15, 20, 22, 24, 28, 31, 312
Thomas[2], 8, 9, 10, 15, 20, 21, 22, 23, 25, 28, 29, 31
Thomas[3], 19, 37, 38, 41, 48, 49, 127, 131, 135, 137, 140, 368
Thomas[4], 38, 39, 49, 50, 52, 74, 81, 82, 83, 86, 94, 128, 131, 137, 138, 139, 140, 152, 153, 154, 225, 239, 242, 243, 244, 246, 249, 251, 255, 257, 260, 263, 320, 389, 390, 395, 397, 399, 402, 405, 406, 408, 409, 431, 433, 435, 437
Thomas[5], 82, 83, 100, 131, 133, 134, 242, 243, 373, 378, 381, 385, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 538, 551, 552
Thomas[6], 190, 248, 285, 383, 384, 397, 398, 463, 466, 477, 478, 539, 540, 584
Thomas Jenckes[7], 259
Thomas R.[6], 445, 446
Tryphena[6], 485
Turpin Holroyd[6], 578
Uriah[5], 104, 105, 296, 297, 298
Uriah[6], 289
Ursula Matilda[6], 554, 555
Wait[5], 111
Waite[5], 120
Waite[6], 318, 334, 335
Waite (Mowry), 118, 120, 121, 330, 332, 336, 337, 341, 343, 345, 348
Waity, 344, 346, 347
Waity[6], 533, 534, 535, 536, 537
Waity (Handy), 326, 327, 328
Waity (Smith), 533, 534, 535, 536
Welcome[5], xvi, 132, 133, 134, 145, 154, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 385, 387, 388, 389, 413, 414
Welcome[6], 383, 384, 412, 414, 430, 453, 476, 477, 479
Whipple[5], 200
Willard[6], 461
William, ix, x, xi, xii, xiii, xiv, 1, 91
William[4], 44, 45, 46, 52, 98, 99, 100, 101, 146, 255, 275, 277, 279, 282, 283, 284, 286, 288, 415, 418, 420
William[5], 74, 75, 76, 87, 92, 121, 144, 146, 158, 160, 175, 193, 220, 221, 223, 224, 225, 226, 420, 421, 473, 474, 475, 561, 562, 566, 567
William[6], 222, 273, 285, 349, 350, 351, 353, 354, 421, 427, 453, 460, 461, 479, 481, 482, 531, 532, 578
William G.[6], 559, 560
William H.[6], 429, 430
William[6] Peirce, 414
Willis[6], 319
Woodward[4], xvii, 37, 38, 39, 73, 82, 85, 86, 87, 88, 92, 264, 265
Zebedee[4], 60, 61, 195, 198, 199, 200, 202, 203
ASA
Simeon, 314
ASHCRAFT
Chester, 537
Lydia[6] (Arnold), 535, 536, 537
Waity[6] (Arnold), 533, 534, 535, 536, 537
ASHCROFT
A., 536
Chester, 536
ASHTON
Alice, 14
AUSTEN
Mary, 554
AUSTIN
John Osborne, x

BACON
Ephraim, 338, 339
BAILEY
Phebe, 515
BAKER
Samuel, 520
BALCOM
John, 103
Katherine, 102
Martha, 336
BALDWIN
Cynthia[6] (Arnold), 531, 532
James, 531, 532
BALLARD
Abigail (Man), 71
BALLOU
Aaron, 159, 160
Albert, 316
Alfred, 316
Bathsheba, 104, 105, 172, 192, 236, 296, 297, 299, 301, 303
Cyrus, 316
David, 159, 160
Duty, 276

BALLOU *cont.*
Eleazer, 160
Hannah, 302
James, 104, 159
Jemima, 159, 160, 220, 223, 224
Jonathan, 159
Lorinda Arnold, 316
Lucina (Comstock), 316
Lydia, 55, 62, 159
Mary (_____) (Smith), 159
Maturin, 56, 158, 204
Moses, 159, 160
Patience, 159, 160
Peter, 161
Phebe, 159
Capt. Reuben, 260
Samuel, 56, 159, 160, 220, 223
Sarah (Hawkins) (Arnold), 55, 56, 62, 155, 157, 159, 161
Susanna, 158
Susanna[4] (Arnold), 56, 159
Susannah, 159, 160, 220, 221, 223, 263
Susannah (Arnold), 220, 223
Susannah (Whitman), 104, 159
Waite (Jillson), 275, 276
BARBER
_____, 274
BARNES
Freelove Sophia, 544, 547
Joanna (Jenks) (Russell), 544
BARNEY
Elizabeth, 322
William, 386
BARNS
Col. Asa, 515
BARON
Caleb, 105
BARRETT
Abigail, 464
BARROW
Abigail (Streeter), 357
Abraham, 357
Mary, 357, 359
BART
Alphonso, 484
BARTLET/BARTLETT
Abigail[4] (Arnold), 45, 46, 47, 124, 125
Abner, 46, 124, 125
Alpha, 237, 263
Anna, 125
Caleb, 125
Daniel, 263
Deborah (Phillips), 263
Elisha, 125, 237
Ester, 125
Jacob, 124
James, 263
Joanna, 125
John, 263
Mary, 237
Patience, 237
Patience[5] (Arnold), 82, 84, 263
Rufus, 125
Ruth[6], 237, 238
Ruth[6] (Arnold), 237, 238
Sally, 263
Wait (Buffum), 250
BARTON
Ann (Williams), 437
Anna Eliza, 438
Catharine, 438, 439
Catherine Arnold, 438
Catherine[5] (Arnold), 153, 154, 437, 438
David, 438
Emily L., 439
George, 439
John, 437, 438
John Jr., 153, 437, 438
Persis (Eddy), 437
William, 439
Battle of Bunker Hill, 175, 457, 476
Battle of Butt's Hill, 371
Battle of Lexington, 449
Battle of Monmouth, 483
Battle of Princeton, 477
Battle of Red Bank, 483
Battle of Rhode Island, 311, 423, 483
BAXTER
Abigail, 464
Hannah, 98, 101
Huldah (_____), 98
John, 98
BAXTER/BARRETT
Abigail, 464, 465, 466
BEADLE
Thomas, 88
BELCHER
Elizabeth, 122
BENCHLEY, *see also* BENSLEY/BENCHLEY
Arnold, 179, 180
Benjamin, 180
David, 179, 180
Isaac, 179, 180

Joseph, 179, 180
Lydia, 179, 180
Mercy, 180
Nathan, 180
Samuel, 179, 180
Stafford Stuckely, 179, 180
William, 178, 179
BENELY
William, 178
BENNETT
Hannah, 352
BENSLEY/BENCHLEY
Deborah[4] (Arnold), 177, 179, 180
Elizabeth (Ellison), 177
William, 177, 178, 179, 180
BENSON
Isaac, 49, 114
Job, 119, 332
John, 114, 119
Joseph, 523
Lydia (Hill) (Arnold), 523, 524
Richard H., 114
BENTLEY
Christopher, 145
Elizabeth, 145
Lucy, 413
Lydia[5] (Arnold), 145
Mary (_____), 145
William, 145, 177
BISHOP
Belina[6] (Arnold), 478, 479
Eleazer, 478, 479
BLACKMAR
Adonijah, 235
Cain, 235
Henry, 235
Jane[5] (Arnold), 80, 235
Jemima, 235
John, 235
Levi, 235
Lucretia, 235
Stephen, 235
BODDINGTON
Jacob, 416
Sally[6] (Arnold), 416
BOSWORTH
Emily[6] (Arnold), 559, 560
Josiah, 559, 560
BOURNE, 254
BOWEN
Anna, 568, 569
Hezekiah, 568
Col. Jabez, 501
John, 194
Judith, 194, 195
Martin, 568
Sarah (Briggs), 194
Susanna (Edwards), 568
BOYCE
Ruth, 275
BRADFORD
Hopestill, 517
Lydia[6] (Arnold), 517
BRAYTON
Amie, 401
Amie[5] (Arnold), 50, 138, 139, 399, 400, 401
Arnold, 401
Daniel, 400, 401
Elizabeth, 401
Hannah, 336
Hart (Allen), 400, 401
Isaac, 399, 401
Jesse, 401
John, 401
Joseph, 401
Mary, 401
Mary (Sanford), 399
Mercy, 401
Nancy, 401
Phebe, 401
Stephen, 399, 400, 401
Thomas, 401
William, 401
BRIGGS, 510
Caroline, 510
James, 209
Mary, 192, 193, 209, 554, 556, 558, 561, 562, 564, 566
Rebeckah (Davis), 209
Samuel A., 439
Sarah, 194
BRIGHT
Henry, 6
BROWN/BROWNE
Abiah, 539
Abigail, 548, 549
Acsah, 175
Acsah[5] (Arnold), 174, 176, 467, 492, 493
Alice, 363, 467, 468, 469, 493
Alice Almira, 494
Amey, 450
Amie, 161, 162

BROWN/BROWNE *cont.*
Amos, 219
Andrew, 402, 403, 404
Ann (_____), 161
Anna, 391, 404
Anna (Brown), 391
Arnold, 403, 404, 493
Benjamin, 450
Charles S., 559
Col. Charles, 473
Christopher, 548, 549
Capt. Christopher, 177
Cynthia, 450, 493
Daniel, 332
David, 162
Deborah, 244, 299, 315, 337
Eleazer, 161, 162, 450
Elisha, 402, 403, 404
Elizabeth, 332, 333, 334, 335
Elizabeth[5] (Arnold), 189, 190, 191, 548, 549
Erasmus, 531
Esek A., 494
Europa (Comstock) (Hunt), 218, 219
George, 96
Hannah G., 539
Hopestill (Whipple), 449
Huldah[5] (Arnold), 50, 138, 139, 402, 403, 404
Isabella[6] (Arnold), 539, 540
Jabez, 161, 450
James, 467, 492
James A., 494
Jeremiah, 161, 162
Capt. Jeremiah, 400
Jerusha, 161, 162
Jesse, 403
John, 377, 389, 390, 391, 428, 548, 549
Col. John, 332
John C., 450
Jonathan, 174, 175, 467, 468, 470, 492, 493
Jonathan A., 493
Joseph, 315
Lavina (Comstock), 218, 219
Capt. Levi, 515
Lucy, 450, 493
Lydia, 450
Lydia (Jenks), 548
Mary, 161, 162, 165, 194, 195, 197, 357, 389, 390, 391, 392, 404, 538, 571, 572, 574, 576
Mary (_____), 389
Mary (Anthony), 467, 492
Mary[6] (Arnold), 531, 532
Mary (Knowlton), 402
Mary A.[6] (Arnold), 559, 560
Mary Polly, 428, 429, 430
Mehitable (Sanford), 332
Moses, 178, 386, 389, 390, 391, 541
Nathan, 183, 548, 549
Nathan A., 190
Nicholas, 377, 382, 449, 450
Obadiah, 296, 389, 390, 403, 428
Patience, 161, 172, 175, 464, 467, 470, 473, 476, 480, 483, 486, 488, 492, 493
Patience (Arnold), 172
Patience[4] (Arnold), 56, 161, 172, 194
Phebe, 161, 162, 404
Phebe (Brayton), 401
Rhoby, 404
Richard, 5, 548, 549
Richard A., 190
Sabra (Waterman), 428
Samuel, 548, 549
Sarah, 161, 162, 183, 404, 428
Sarah (Brown), 183
Susanna, 162
Susanna[5] (Arnold), 169, 170, 449, 450
Thomas, 404
William, 161, 172, 194, 493
BUCKLIN
_____, 500
Amey, 499
Amey[5] (Arnold), 182, 499, 510
Amy, 163, 164, 181, 182, 499, 501, 505, 507, 510
Ann, 246
Beriah (Read), 213
David, 59, 213
Dorcas (Waterman), 213
Elizabeth, 59
Elizabeth[4] (Arnold), 59, 69, 213
George, 213
Isaac, 163, 246
James, 499
Joanna, 246
John, 499, 500, 510
Joseph, 499, 510
Martha, 246, 247, 248
Mary, 246, 499, 510
Mary (Peck), 499
Minerva, 500
Nancy, 500

Nathaniel, 246
Nehemiah, 213
Ruth, 500
Sarah, 213, 499
Sarah (Whipple), 163, 246
Sylvanus, 246
BUDLONG
Robe, 582
BUFFUM
Ann Vernon, 250
Arnold, 250
David, 250
Hannah, 250
Joseph, 249
Lucy, 250
Lydia, 250
Lydia[5] (Arnold), 82, 83, 249, 250
Mary, 258, 259
Patience, 250
Thomas, 250
Wait, 250
William, 71, 249, 250, 350
BULL
Benjamin, 155
Comfort, 155
BURLINGAME
Catherine, 151, 424
Elizabeth, 48, 49, 50, 127, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140
James A., 424
James C., 424
James Congdon, 151, 424
Lydia, 186
Mary, 57
Mary (_____), 48
Phebe, 424
Rhoby (Brown), 404
Roger, 48
BURLINGHAM
Catherine, 429
BURR
David, 268
Ezekiel, 268
Molly, 268, 273
Sally (Turner), 268
BURROUGHS
Rhobe[6] (Arnold), 466
BURROWES
William, 20
BURROWS
William, 7
BURT
Sybil, 574
BUTTERWORTH
Elizabeth, 447
BUTTON
Joseph, 511

CALENDAR
Elizabeth, 98
CAMPBELL
Hannah (Richardson), 462
John, 462
Sally, 462, 463
CANADA, 38, 48, 247, 284, 520
Montreal, 284
CANE
Daniel, 2
Phebe (Parkhurst), 1, 2, 5, 7, 8, 10, 14, 20, 24, 28, 29, 31
CAPRON
Asa, 261
Banfield, 98
Betsey, 261, 262
Betsey (Arnold), 261, 262
Charles, 260
Elisha, 261, 262
Elizabeth (Calendar), 98
Esther (Darling) (Arnold), 260, 261
Fanny, 261, 262
Joseph, 260, 261, 262
Lucy, 262
Margaret, 98, 101, 282, 284
Mary (Scott), 260
Nabby, 261
Otis, 262
Patty, 261, 262
Ruth, 261
Sabra, 261, 262
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 82, 84, 260, 261
Sylvia, 261
Thomas, 262
CARGILL
Daniel, 304
David, 304
Dorcas[5] (Arnold), 105, 106, 303, 304
George, 304
James, 112, 303, 304, 311
John, 304
Lucy, 261, 311, 312
Mary, 112, 115, 117, 303, 311, 322, 326, 329, 395

CARGILL *cont.*
Nathan, 304
Phebe (Smith), 112, 303, 311
Rhoda, 304
Sarah (Aldrich), 112
CARPENTER
Diana (Williams), 490, 491
Elizabeth (Butterworth), 447
Nathaniel, 447
Olive, 447, 448
Patience, 296
Dr. Thomas O. H., 491
CARR
Caleb, 155
CASE
Clarissa, 533, 536
CASS
Alice (Brown), 363
David, 363, 364
John, 363
Kesiah[5] (Arnold), 49, 128, 130, 363
CHANNING
William, 334
CHAPIN
Capt. Joseph, 330
William Waterman, xv
CHARLES II, KING, 28, 31
CHEEVER
Mary (_____), 454
CHENEY
Elizabeth, 341
CHILD
Christopher C., xvii
CHINA
Canton, 145
CLARK
Alanson M., 572
George, 572
Sarah (Comstock), 572, 573
CLEERE
Katherine (Arnold), xii
CLEMENCE
Elizabeth, 411
Wright, 411
CLEMENS
Olney (Wright), 411
Richard, 411
CLINTON
George, 309
COATHER
Katharine, 151
Katherine, 424
COBB
Elizabeth, 420, 421
COGGESHALL
Hannah, 127
COLBY
Elizabeth[5] (Arnold), 151, 422, 423, 424
James, 422, 424
Julia, 424
Katherine, 151, 424
COLE
Anna[6] (Arnold), 584
Joseph, 584
COLLIN
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 110, 111
COLLIN/COLLINS
Anthony, 310
Diadama (Morse) (Davidson), 309, 310
Hannah, 310
Hannah (Merwin), 309
Hugh, 386
John, 309, 310
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 307, 309, 310
COLVIN
Philey, 488
COLWELL
Abigail, 472
Amy, 471, 472
Anna, 471, 472
Arnold, 471, 472
Asha, 471, 472
Christopher, 470
Esther, 472
John, 470
Lovina, 472
Lucy[5] (Arnold), 175, 470, 471, 472
Margaret, 472
Margaret (Sprague), 470
Patience, 472
William, 467, 468, 470, 471, 472
COMSTOCK, 338
Abigail, 316, 338, 388
Abigail (Dexter), 375, 376
Abigail[5] (Arnold), 116, 315, 316
Adam, 234
Alpha, 234
Amey (Phillips) (Arnold), 93, 94, 95, 232, 233, 234, 268
Amy (_____), 94, 232
Andrew, 97
Ann (_____), 24
Aricoh, 301
Arnold, 301

Asel, 302
Avioch, 302
Azariah, 114
Brown, 245
C. B., 338
Caleb, 302
Catherine[5] (Arnold), 82, 83, 244, 245
Catherine (Pray), 81, 96, 232, 301
Chloe, 573
Clarissa[6] (Arnold), 298
Cyrus, 315, 316
Daniel, 24, 26, 27, 340, 571, 573
Daniel Jr., 114
David, xvii, 26, 218, 219, 244, 299, 315, 337, 338, 339, 340
Deborah, 168, 169, 170, 299, 454, 457, 459, 462
Deborah (Brown), 244, 299, 315, 337
Diana, 245
Dinah[5] (Arnold), 40, 96, 97
Dr. Ichabod, 209
Elenathan, 96, 97
Eliza, 573
Elizabeth, 26, 27, 126, 473
Elizabeth[2] (Arnold), 9, 10, 24, 26, 27
Ephraim, 376
Esek, 218, 219
Europa, 218, 219
Ezekiel, 91, 336
Freelove, 234
George, 92, 244, 245, 264, 302
Gideon, 78, 79, 94, 140, 141, 232, 233, 234
Hannah, 336
Hazadiah, 26, 27
Hazediah, 232, 301, 336
Hazediah Jr., 301, 302
Henry, 298, 336
Hezediah, 81, 96
Ichabod, 26, 27, 361
James, 97
Jeremiah, 217, 218, 219
Jerusha, 338, 340
Joanna, 302
Job, 26, 27, 58
John, 26, 27, 217
Jonas, 97
Katherine, 440
Lavina, 218, 219
Lucina, 316
Lucy[5] (Arnold), 121, 337, 338, 339, 340
Lyman, 572
Martha, 336, 340
Martha[5] (Arnold), 120, 336
Martha (Balcom), 336
Mary A, 573
Mary A.[5], 569
Mary[5] (Arnold), 105, 106, 301, 302, 571, 572, 573
Mary[5] "Polly" (Arnold), 197
Naomi, 245
Nathan, 116, 302, 315, 316, 338, 340
Pamela, 572, 573
Patience, 340
Patience (Jenckes), 571
Patricia, 340
Patricia [Patience], 340
Penelope, 96, 97
Phebe/Phoebe, 336
Phebe[5] (Arnold), 74, 75, 76, 217, 218, 219
Rowena, 245
Ruth, 140, 234
Ruth[5] (Arnold), 78, 80, 232, 234
Samuel, 18, 22, 24, 25, 26, 27, 337, 338, 339, 340
Samuel Jr., 33
Sarah, 316, 572, 573
Seth, 196, 197, 571, 572, 573
Silas, xvii, 338, 340
Stephen, 301, 302
Susanna, 245
Susannah, 81, 83, 239, 242, 244
Thomas, 26, 27
True, 234
Wait, 336
William, 75, 96, 97, 302, 571
CONGDON
Elizabeth, 278
Jonathan, 278
CONNECTICUT, 99, 172, 382
Hartford, 166
New Milford, 109, 110, 113, 305, 309
Plainfield, 467
Pomfret, 464
Roxbury, 513
Woodbury, 513
Woodstock, 145, 413, 414
CONVER
Col. James, 266
COOGAN
Mary, 520

COOK
Abigail, 316
Davis, 316
Ebenezer, 105
Martha (Jencks), 81
Patience, 81, 82, 83, 225, 249, 251, 255, 257, 260, 263, 320
Peleg, 81
COOKE
Col. John, 501
Patience, 377
COOKS
Elizabeth, 191
COPP
David Sr., 12
CORNELL
Amy (Colwell), 471, 472
Daniel, 471
COSA, 138
CRAPO
William D., 575
CRARY
Col. Archibald, 488
CRAWFORD
Alice, 268, 269, 272, 274
Gideon, 268
Capt. John, 266
CRONCH
Mary (Wilkinson), 89
CROW
John, 552
CRUFF
Mary, 284, 285
Sarah, 282
Thomas, 284
CUBA
Havana, 191
CUTLER
Sarah[6] (Arnold), 474, 475
Thomas, 474

DALTON
Ruth (Leete), 2
Rev. Timothy, 2
DANIELS/DANNIELS
Azer, 341
Darius, 341, 342
David, 341
Huldah (Taft), 341
Mary[5] (Arnold) (Taft), 121, 341, 342, 350
Respe[...], 316
Ruth, 341
DARLING
Esther, 260, 261
Deacon Samuel, 261
DAVIDSON
Diadama (Morse), 309, 310
DAVIS
Azabah, 486
Benjamin, 438
Benjamin H., 438
Catherine (Barton), 438
Catherine A., 438
Freelove C., 274
Isabella, 495, 496
James, 581
Joseph, 495
Lydia (_____), 495
Nancy (Peck), 580, 581
Noah, 274
Rebeckah, 209
DAY
Abigail, 316
Lydia, 454, 457
Mary, 316
Nancy Blake, 316
Capt. Samuel, 371, 501
DEARBORN
David, xvii
DEXTER
Abigail, 375, 376
Anna, 165, 167, 360, 440, 441, 443
Edward, 375, 376, 387
Hannah, 371, 372, 373, 374, 516
Isaac, 556, 557
John, 128, 165, 357
Joseph, 396
Marcy[5] (Arnold), 50, 133, 134, 375, 376, 386, 387, 388
Mary (Brown), 165
Mary (Browne), 357
Patience[5] (Arnold), 193, 556, 557
Phebe, 96
Phebe (Warner), 371
Sabra, 557
Sarah, 357
Stephen, 375, 376, 387
Susanna (Whipple), 375
Susannah, 376
William, 371
William A., 556, 557
DOW
Lynda[6] (Arnold), 531, 532
Stephen, 531

DOYLE
Mary, 451
Naomi, 451, 452
DUNBAR
Nabby, 345
DUNSTER
Henry, 6
DUTICOTT
Barbara, 497

EARL
Capt. John, 381
EARLE
Patience (Buffum), 250
EATON
Eleanor, 558
Leonard, 517
Mary (Knight), 558
Susan[6] (Arnold), 517
Wyman, 558
EDDY
Alexander, 404
Amie, 256
Amy, 243
David, 255, 256
George, 256
Hannah (Whipple), 99, 100, 101, 286
Hannah (Whipple) (Arnold), 255
James, 256
Naomi[5] (Arnold), 82, 84, 255, 256
Nathaniel, 99, 255
Olney, 425
Peleg Arnold, 256
Persis, 437
Stephen, 255
Thomas, 425
Wate, 256
Welcome, 256
EDMUNDS
Lydia, 186, 187, 511, 513, 515, 518, 519, 521, 523, 525, 527, 530, 533
EDWARDS
Susanna, 568
ELLIE, 26
ELLIOT
Robert, 173
ELLISON
Elizabeth, 177
EMERSON
Elizabeth, 330
Luke, 333
ENGLAND, 11
Cheslbourne, Dorset, x
Gillingham, Kent, xii, xiii
Hollesley, Suffolk, xii, xiii, 1
Hunningham, Warwickshire, xi
Ilchester, Somerset, xiii
Ipswich, Suffolk, xii, 1
Isle of Thanet, Kent, xii, xiii
Kelsale, Suffolk, xi, xii, xiii
Kenilworth, Warwickshire, xi
London, 1
Lowestoft, Suffolk, 1
Offchurch, Warwickshire, xi, xii, xiii, xiv, 1
Radford, Warwickshire, xii, xiii
Woolverstone, Suffolk, 2
ESTON
Jemima, 122
EVANS
Mary (_____), 41
Mehitable, 41
Richard, 41

FARMER
Mercy, 484
FARNUM
Abigail, 443, 538
David, 12, 13
Elizabeth, 11, 13
Elizabeth (_____), 11
John, 5, 8, 11, 12, 13
Jonathan, 12, 13
Joseph, 11
Moses, 346
Susanna[2] (Arnold), 1, 5, 10, 11, 12, 13
Thomas, 13
FENNER
_____, 585
Amy, 521, 522
Anna (Brown), 404
Daniel, 187, 515, 521, 522, 561, 562
Drusilla, 522
George, 521, 522
Lydia[5] (Arnold), 187, 521, 522
Lydia A., 521, 522
Nathan, 521, 522
Phebe (Hayes), 521
Thomas, 521, 522
FERGUSON
Amos, 247
Amy[6] (Arnold), 247, 248
Stephen, 247, 248

FISH
John, 109
Sarah, 109, 110, 111, 305, 309
FISHER
James, 315
FRANCE, 380, 545, 551
Paris, 545, 551
FRAYER
Phillip, 310
FREEMAN
Judith (Bowen), 194, 195
Warren, 194, 195
French and Indian War, 172, 205, 264, 282, 290, 293
FULLER
Obediah, 135
Stephen, 136

GARDINER
Lydia, 157
Lydia (Ballou), 55, 62
GARFIELD
Edward, 5
Samuel, 5
GASKILL
Huldah, 343, 344
Gaspee, 378, 381
GEORGIA, 382
Savannah, 435
GENT
Jeanette, xv
GERMANY, 380
GILBERT
Lucy[6] (Arnold), 465, 466
GLADDING
Daniel, 451
Nancy, 451, 452, 453
Susannah (Wardwell), 451
GLEASON
Joyce, 135
GORHAM
Jabez, 322
GRAY
Isaac N., 565
Lydia[5] (Arnold), 193, 564, 565
William D., 564, 565
GREEN/GREENE, 394
(_____), 353
Abigail[5] (Arnold), 131, 133, 134, 387, 388, 393, 394
Caleb, 378, 393
Caleb Arnold, 393, 394
Deborah[6] (Arnold), 416
Edmund, 416
Elisha Jr., 355
Hannah, 393
Hannah (Greene), 393
Howard, xv
Isabel, 538, 539
Louisa, 191
Mary, 352, 353, 354, 393
Mary (Greene), 393
Mary Ann[6] (Arnold), 416
Nathaniel, 377
Nathaniel/Nathan, 393, 394
Gen. Nathaniel, 480
Patience, 377, 379, 382, 383
Patience (Cooke), 377
Paul, 538
Richard, 416
Samuel, 377
Sarah (Hall), 538
Welcome Arnold, xiv, xv
William, 270, 271, 377
GREER
Henry, 523
GRIFFIN
Elizabeth (Potter), 519
Lemuel, 519
Mary, 519, 520
GRIFFIS
Amy (Fenner), 521, 522
GRIMES
Elizabeth, 558, 559
William, 558
GROESBECK
Hannah (Arnold), 419
Hannah[6] (Arnold), 418
John I., 418
GROUT
Sophy, 269
GULLEY
Alice, 410
Alice[5] (Arnold), 50, 138, 139, 409, 410
Arnold, 410
Hannah (_____), 409
Martha, 410
Mary, 410
William, 409, 410
GURNEY
Henry H., 539
Isabella[6] (Arnold), 540
Rachel, 190
Rachel[6] (Arnold), 539, 540

HADWEN
Barney, 324
Elizabeth, 322, 323, 324, 325
Elizabeth (Barney), 322
James, 322
John, 322
William, 322
HALL
Sarah, 538
HAMMOND
Mercy or Aimy (Mann), 149
Nebediah, 149
HANDY
Ebenezer, 340
Patricia (Comstock), 340
Phebe, 326
Waity, 326, 327, 328
Waty, 326
HARDENDORF
Abraham, 559, 560, 567
Elizabeth Lucinda[6] (Arnold), 559, 560
HARRIS
Abigail (Farnum), 443, 538
Amy, 369, 370
Anna, 185
Benjamin, 185
Damaris, 370
Damaris (Westcott), 368
David, 297, 443, 538
Dexter, 370
Elethan, 365, 366
Freelove[5] (Arnold), 129, 130, 368, 369, 370
Gideon, 368, 369, 370
Harding, 152
Jabez, 184, 185
John, 353, 369
Jonathan, 184
Joseph, 185
Lydia, 443, 444, 445
Martha (Mowry), 365
Mary, 185, 370
Mercy, 185
Mercy[4] (Arnold), 58, 59, 184, 185
Nancy[6] (Arnold), 353, 354
Phebe, 370
Preserved, 365
Rachel, 538, 539, 540
Sarah, 370
Stephen, 185
Thomas, 368, 369, 370
Waity, 368, 369
HARVEY
James, 346
Ruth (Arnold), 344, 346, 347
HASKINS
Amarilla[5] (Arnold), 197, 576
John, 196, 197, 570, 576
Polly M., 197, 576
HASTINGS
Cynthia, 268, 269, 274
Lemuel, 268
HATHAWAY
Irene, 515, 516, 517
Isaac Jr., 515
John, 516
Phebe (Bailey), 515
HAVILAND
Hannah, 111
HAWKINS
Benjamin, 422, 423, 424
Deborah, 63
Elijah, 62, 63
Elizabeth, 63
Elizabeth (_____), 422
Elizabeth[3] (Arnold), 34, 35, 55, 62, 63, 64
Elizabeth[5] (Arnold) (Colby), 151, 422, 423, 424
Hannah (Coggeshall), 127
John, 53
Joseph, 62, 63
Kesiah, 127, 129, 352, 355
Lydia, 441
Lydia (Ballou) (Gardiner), 55, 62
Mary (Smith), 53, 54
Nathaniel, 130
Oliver Hazard Perry, 424
Ruth, 63
Sarah, 55, 56, 62, 155, 157, 159, 161, 505, 507
Stephen, 127, 128
Uriah, 63
William, 55, 62, 63
William, Jr., 62, 63
HAYES
Phebe, 521
HAYWARD
Hannah (Baxter), 98, 101
John, 98
HAYWOOD
Hannah, 43, 46
HEADLY
Lucy (Brown), 450

HENDERSON
Henriette F.[6] (Arnold), 555
HENDRICK
Ruth (Capron), 261
HENRY
Anna[6] (Arnold), 517
HERENDEEN
Dorcas (Man), 71
HICKS
Mary, 136
HILL
James, 12
Lydia, 523, 524
Mary, 317
Sarah, 332
HILLIARD
John, 217, 218
Miner, 218
Phebe[5] (Arnold) (Comstock), 74, 75, 76, 217, 218, 219
HINMAN
Gideon, 195
HITCHCOCK
Col. Daniel, 473, 477, 577
HOFFMAN
Herman, 307
HOLLAND, 380
HOLLEY
Capt. Joseph, 507
HOLROID
Patience (Taft), 330, 331
William, 330
HOLROYD
Amey (Potter), 577
Anne, 577, 578
John, 577
HOPKINS
Anne, 146, 415, 418, 420
Deborah[5], 203
Joel, 422
Marcy, 422
Marcy[6] (Arnold), 474
Ruth (Hawkins), 63
Stephen, 390
Susan, 203
Thomas, 32
William, 18, 25
HOSKINS
Sarah, 207
HOW
Edward, 5
HOWARD
Faithful, 186
James, 489
Ruth, 459, 460, 461
Samuel, 459
Waitstill (Whipple), 459
HOWE
Elisha, 461
Hezekiah, 460
Silence[6] (Arnold), 461
HUNT
Adam, 554
Elizabeth, 284
Elizabeth (_____), 284
Europa (Comstock), 218, 219
John, 219
Lucy, 554, 555
Mary (Austen), 554
Samuel, 284
HUNTER
Lucinda, 476, 478
HURD
Mary (_____), 582
HURLBUT/HURLBURT
Cornelius, 187, 513, 514
Cynthia, 514
David, 513
Elias A., 514
Hannah (Sanford), 513
Lydia, 514
Mary[5] (Arnold), 186, 187, 513, 514
Nathan C., 514
Phebe N., 514

IDE
John, 135
ILLINOIS
Rio, 536
INDIANA
Laporte, 555
INGERSOLL
John, 363
INMAN
Patience, 264
Susanna (Ballou), 158
INMANN
Johannah, 43
IRISH
Deborah (Wilbor), 525
Jonathan, 525
Rachel, 525, 526

IRWIN
Robert, 307
IVES
Miles, 5

JACKSON
Capt. Richard, 544, 545, 546
Phebe, 544, 546, 547
Susan (Waterman), 544
JAMES
Mary[5] (Arnold), 144, 145
Samuel, 144
JAMES II, KING, 17
JENCKE
Capt. _____, 230
JENCKES
Catharine, 140
John, 396
Nathaniel, 140
Patience, 571
Stephen, 182
JENCKS
Martha, 81
JENKS
Alfred, 509
Alvin, 506
Amy, 508
Amy[6] (Arnold), 406, 407
Arnold, 506
Barton, 509
Benjamin, 507, 508
Catherine, 501, 502, 504
Charlotte, 508
Daniel, 102
David, 506
Dinah, 257, 258, 259
Edwin, 509
George, 506
Ira, 509
Jerahmel, 506
Joanna, 544
Joseph, 22, 501
Katherine (Balcom), 102
Louisa, 509
Lucina, 508
Lydia, 506, 548
Lydia (Walker), 528
Lyndon, 506
Marcy[5] (Arnold), 182, 505, 506, 507, 510
Martha, 102, 288, 290, 293
Nathan, 506
Nathan Comstock, 316
Patience (Smith), 257
Rufus, 406
Ruth[5] (Arnold), 182, 505, 507, 510
Sabra, 506
Sarah, 506, 508
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 182, 507, 508
Sarah (Hawkins), 505, 507
Sarah (Tinley), 501
Stephen, 505, 506, 507, 510
Thomas, 257
Welcome, 509
William, 509
JENNY, 138
JILLSON
Abner, 276
Elizabeth (_____), 275
Hannah, 275, 276
Jonathan, 275
Luke, 275, 276
Martha, 275, 276
Mary, 275
Nathan, 275, 276
Nathaniel, 275, 276, 282
Rhodia, 275, 276
Ruth, 275, 276
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 100, 275, 276
Stephen, 275
Susannah, 147
Uriah, 275
Waite, 275, 276
JOSLIN
Abraham, 265, 266, 267
Anna, 267
Esech, 265, 266, 267
Mary, 265, 267
Mary (_____), 265
Naomi[5] (Arnold), 87, 265, 266, 267
Patience, 265, 267
Thankful, 265, 267
Thomas, 265
JULLSON
Sylvia (Capron), 261

KEESE
Richard, 514
KEICH
Laban, 149
Rebecca (Mann), 149

KELLY
Daniel, 218
Dorcas[6] (Arnold), 350, 351
KENTUCKY, 386
KENYON
Isabella, 190
KILTON
Arnold, 96
Dinah[5] (Arnold) (Comstock), 40, 96, 97
Joseph, 96
Joseph Jr., 96
Phebe (Dexter), 96
Thomas, 96
KIMBALL
Capt. Stephen, 473, 477
KING
James Jr., 172
King George's War, 163
King Philip's War, 15, 20, 24, 29, 31
King William's War, 17
KINGMAN
Sabra (Capron), 261, 262
KINSLEY
Mary, 580
KNIGHT
Elizabeth, 204
George, 583
Col. Joseph, 488
Mary, 558
Rhobe (Sarle), 583
KNOLLS
John, 4
KNOWLES
Amey (Peck), 580, 581
KNOWLTON
Mary, 402

LAKE
Denisson, 418
Harriet, 418
LAMPHERE
_____, 486, 487
LAPHAM
Abigail, 107, 108
Anson, 512
Arnold, 107, 108
Cynthia, 512
Daniel, 512
David, 512
Elisha, 512
Elizabeth[5] (Arnold), 186, 187, 324, 511, 512
Hannah, 512
Hannah (Sherman), 511
Jesse, 512
John, 107
Joseph, 512
Joshua, 511
Lydia, 512
Mary, 159
Mary (Man), 71
Mary (Mann), 107
Mercy[4] (Arnold), 45, 46, 107, 108
Nathan, 186, 324, 511, 512
Nicholas, 45, 107, 108
Paulina, 512
Rebecca, 108
Solomon, 107, 108
LEAVENWORTH
Nathan, 513
LECLERC
Michael J., xvii
LEETE
Phebe, 1
Ruth, 2
LEONARD
David, 544
LINCOLN
Abraham, 432
Levi, 333
LISCOMB
Nancy (Gladding), 451, 452, 453
Nathaniel, 451
LOBDEL
Capt. _____, 230
LOOMIS
Chester, 416
LOVIT
Woodward, 85
LUET
Mercy (Westcott), 144, 413
Peter, 144
LUSET
John, 340
Martha (Comstock), 340
LUTHER
Ann, 470
Tabitha, 486
LYMAN
Col. Daniel, 544
Margaret Louisa, 544
Mary (Wanton), 544

MALAVERY
Amy, 126
Deliverance, 51
Elizabeth (Comstock), 126, 473
Experience (Mowry), 126
Iscah, 473, 474, 475
John, 126, 473
John Nathaniel, 126
Mary, 126
Nathaniel, 126
Susanna[4] (Arnold), 45, 47, 126
MAN/MANN
_____ (_____), 288
Abigail, 71
Abigail[4] (Andover), 56
Abigail[3] (Arnold), 34, 35, 70, 71
Alfred, 92, 216
Alice[4] (Arnold), 52, 148, 149
Amie (Brayton), 401
Amos, 148, 149
Andrew, 82
Anna, 216
Anthony, 282
Arnold, 148, 149
Asa, 149
Benedict, 283
Bertha/Bethia, 288, 289, 296
Daniel, 70, 81, 82, 118, 282, 288
David, 71
Dorcas, 71
Elijah, 283
Elizabeth (Smith), 63, 64
Jerusha, 340
Jerusha (Comstock), 338, 340
Jesse, 148, 149
Joab, 71
John, 56, 70, 71, 79
Joseph, 216, 338
Levi, 283
Lucy, 216
Mary, 71, 81, 83, 107, 246
Mary (Wheaton), 70, 78
Mary (Whiting), 78, 81, 215
Mercy or Aimy, 149
Mercy[5] (Arnold), 74, 76, 215, 216
Oliver, 75, 215, 216
Patience, 317
Rebecca, 149
Rebecca (_____), 148
Richard, 282, 283, 284
Ruth (Aldrich) (Arnold), 77, 78, 79, 80, 232, 235, 236
Sarah, 71
Sophia, 216
Susannah[5] (Arnold), 101, 282, 283
Thomas, 70, 71, 78, 79, 81, 148,149, 215, 232
MANNING
Mr., 389
MANTON
Shadrach, 22
MARSH, 89
David Wilkinson, 89
Jonathan, 89
MARTINDALE
Isaac, 155
Mercy, 155
MARTON
John W., 513
MARYLAND, 541
Baltimore, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 551, 552
MASON
Hannah (Aldrich), 431
Reuben, 431
Sophia, 431
MASSACHUSETTS, 6, 7, 18, 25, 86, 148, 170
Adams, 146, 161, 166, 181, 186, 187, 195, 196, 197, 211, 212, 361, 365, 406, 502, 511, 515, 518, 521, 523, 527, 530, 533, 568, 571, 574, 576
Attleborough, 85, 98, 135, 136, 275, 303, 451, 454, 457, 458, 462
Bellingham, 68, 91, 124, 320
Belmont, 4
Boston, 4, 5, 11, 12, 164, 473, 477
Braintree, 77, 98
Brookfield, 464
Brookline, 5
Brookline, 12
Cambridge, 4, 477
Charlton, 409, 410
Cheshire, 194, 195, 400, 527, 568
Concord, 4, 449
Dartmouth, 107, 109, 212, 511
Dorchester, 11
Douglas, 148, 198, 199, 266
Dudley, 186
East Hoosick, 161, 186, 365, 511
East Hoosuck, 195, 212
Franklin, 315, 412
Hingham, ix
Hoosick, 146, 397

MASSACHUSETTS *cont.*
Hoosuck, 349
Lanesboro, 515
Leicester, 244, 245, 341, 342, 344, 345, 347, 350
Lexington, 4, 449
Lincoln, 4
Mendon, 22, 23, 26, 32, 44, 45, 53, 55, 57, 98, 99, 105, 113, 114, 121, 239, 245, 258, 265, 266, 275, 282, 283, 284, 326, 332, 341, 342, 346, 348, 349
Middleborough, 207, 208
Muddy River, 12
New Bedford, 390, 391, 392, 459
North Attleborough, 458
Plymouth, 207
Prospect Hill, 473, 477, 480
Rehoboth, 70, 78, 136, 150, 163, 213, 268, 296, 336, 462, 499
Roxbury, 5, 135, 396, 457, 473
Sandisfield, 332
Seekonk, 462
South Warren, 465
Spencer, 505, 506
Swansea, 166, 467, 486, 492
Upton, 317
Uxbridge, 118, 119, 120, 210, 228, 265, 293, 317, 330, 331, 332, 333, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 443
Waltham, 4
Warren, 464
Watertown, ix, xi, xiii, xiv, 1, 3, 4, 5, 6, 8, 14
Wayland, 4
Western, 464, 465
Weston, 4
Weymouth, 438
Wrentham, 148, 215, 315, 316, 338
MATHEWS/MATHEWSON
Deliverance (Malavery), 51
Elizabeth, 51, 52, 143, 144, 146, 147, 148, 150, 152
James, 51
John, 51
Phebe (Steere), 42
MEDBURY
Charles, 478
Lucretia[6] (Arnold), 477, 478, 479
Mercy, 408
Sarah (Brown), 404
MERRITT
Daniel, 221
MERWIN
Hannah, 309
METCALF
John, 68
MICHIGAN
Ann Arbor, 418
Ionia, 373
Sault Ste. Marie, 555
Unadilla, 531
MILLER
Jerusha[5] (Arnold), 187, 518, 523
Jonathan, 187, 518, 523
MILLS
Edwin, 478, 479
Rachel[6] (Arnold), 478, 479
MISSOURI, 434, 584
MORIARTY
G. Andrews, xiv
MORSE
Diadama, 309, 310
MOWREY
Capt. Joseph, 42
Mary (Steere), 42
Richard, 282
MOWRY
Alice (Whipple), 118
Am (Smith) (Arnold), 137, 138, 139, 395, 397, 399, 402, 405, 408, 409
Ananias, 286
Angell, 287
Annie, 122
Arnold, 287
Candace, 287
Daniel Jr., 138
Darius, 287
David, 287
Experience, 126
Gideon, 255
Hannah[5] (Arnold), 101, 286, 287
Hannah (Whipple) (Eddy) (Arnold), 99, 100, 101, 286
Henry, 277
Jeremiah, 133
Johannah (Inmann), 43
John, 122
Joseph, 118
Lucina, 278
Martha, 365
Mary, 43, 46, 86, 98, 102, 104, 107, 109, 112, 118, 122, 124, 126

Mercy, 137, 551, 553
Nathaniel, 43, 44, 203
Phebe, 277, 278
Philip, 287
Richard, 286, 287
Susannah (Aldrich), 240
Urania, 287
Uriah, 100
Waite, 118, 120, 121, 330, 332, 336, 337, 341, 343, 345, 348
Welcome, 287
William, 287
Zerviah (Angell), 286
MUSSEY
Huldah (Gaskill), 343, 344
Theodate, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347
Thomas, 343, 344

NELSON
Francis, 306
NEW HAMPSHIRE, 382, 415
Charlestown, 269
Hampton, 2
Haverhill, 274
Keene, 146, 420
Richmond, 275, 357, 359, 363, 364
Westmoreland, 420
NEW JERSEY
Morristown, 477
Red Bank, 483
NEW YORK, 146, 147, 322
Albion, 274
Amenia, 207
Arcade, 535, 537
Aurelius, 194, 196, 516, 533, 537, 568, 571, 572, 576
Barton, 486
Bloomfield, 420
Brutus, 194, 195, 196, 197, 530, 531, 533, 568, 569, 572, 576
Buffalo, 247
Canadice, 195
Charlotte, 111
Chautauqua, 247
China, 536
Cincinnatus, 198, 556
Crum Elbow, 110, 111, 305, 306, 307
DeCalb, 582
Dunham, 247
Eaton, 517, 562
Eatonville, 400, 554
Ellery, 247
Fairfield, 193, 199, 372, 373, 400, 515, 516, 517, 518, 521, 522, 533, 554, 555, 556, 558, 559, 561, 562, 564, 566
Fleming, 194, 196, 571, 572, 574
Freetown, 556, 557
Gainesville, 508
Gorham, 415, 416, 418
Greenfield, 148, 149
Guilford, 495
Hartford, 493, 559
Hartwick, 431, 433
Herkimer, 433, 483, 484, 523, 558, 559
High Rock Spring, 246
Hillsdale, 307, 309, 310
Hoosick, 111
Howard, 572
Hudson, 516
Keeseville, 518, 520
Kingston, 555
Lisle, 572
Little Falls, 433, 483, 484, 485, 515, 519, 556, 562, 564
Machias, 534, 535, 536
Manheim, 555
Milo, 555
Minden, 415
Mount Morris, 531, 534
New Berlin, 476, 477, 478
New York City, 149, 221, 230, 477, 520
Nine Partners, 110, 539, 542
North Norwich, 481
Norway, 515, 518, 519
Norwich, 477, 478, 481, 495, 497
Oblong, 221, 444
Ogdensburg, 582, 583
Olean, 486
Oswegatchie, 582
Oswego, 445
Otsego, 153
Oxford, 369, 497
Pawling, 221
Peru, 512, 518, 519, 520, 523, 525, 530
Plattsburgh, 520
Poughkeepsie, 445, 539
Rhinebeck, 111
Richmond, 195
Rochester, 362, 559
Saratoga, 247, 515
Saratoga Springs, 246
Schaghticoke, 248
Schroeppel, 531

NEW YORK *cont.*
Seneca Hills, 572
Sennett, 530, 531, 568, 569, 570, 574
Sherburne, 369, 370
Smithville, 497
Stanford, 539
Stillwater, 248
Troy, 324
Truxton, 497
Union, 559
West Bloomfield, 420, 421
Yorkshire, 536
NEWELL
Benjamin, 136
Elizabeth, 50, 136
Jacob, 135, 136
Jason, 136, 462
Jonathan, 136
Joseph, xvii, 135, 136
Joyce (Gleason), 135
Mary, 462, 463
Mary[4] (Arnold), xvii, 49, 50, 135, 136
Sarah (Spalding), 462
Sibelah (Sybil?), 50, 136
Thomas, 136
NEWFIELDS SAM, 16
NEWFIELDS TOM, 16
NICHOLAS
Brown, 449
NORTHRUP
Stephen, 20, 22, 28, 31
NORTON
Phebe, 513
NOVA SCOTIA
Cape Breton, 58, 59

OHIO, 382, 433, 571
Domestick, 536
Goshen, 195
Saybrook, 528
Washington, 425, 426
Wooster, 425, 426
OLNEY
Deborah, 501, 503
Elisha, 178, 179
Freelove, 441, 442
Jeremiah, 501
Lydia (Hawkins), 441
Obediah, 441
ONCE (OWENS?)
Charill[6] (Arnold), 567
William, 567
ONTARIO, 582
OWEN
Elizabeth, 122

PAGE
Jason, 531
Jesse, 531
Nancy[6] (Arnold), 531
PAGET
Henry, 378, 385, 388
PAIN
Arnold, 45, 75
John, 425
PAINE
Anna, 123
Anna[4] (Arnold), 47, 122, 123
Annie (Mowry), 122
Arnold, 123, 226, 227, 278, 285
Benjamin, 122, 123
Elizabeth (Belcher), 122
Elizabeth (Owen), 122
Jemima (Eston), 122
John, 122
Lydia (Aldrich), 240, 241
Mary (Aldrich), 240, 241
PALMER
Isabella (David) (Arnold), 495, 496
William, 495
PARKHURST, 5
George, 1, 5, 6, 7
Phebe, xiii, xiv, 1, 2, 5, 7, 8, 10, 14, 20, 24, 28, 29, 31
Phebe (Leete), 1
Susanna, 7
PEARCE
Elizabeth, 150, 151, 422, 425, 428
Susanna, 152, 153
PEARSON
Louisa M., 190
Louisa Mary[6] (Arnold), 542, 543
PECK
Aaron, 580, 581
Alice Alsey[5] (Arnold), 205, 580, 581
Amey, 580, 581
Amey (Spencer), 580
Ann, 581
Condace, 581
David, 581
Elizabeth, 296, 298
Capt. George, 452
Joanna, 203
Josephene, 581

Lydia, 580, 581
Mary, 499
Mary (Kinsley), 580
Nancy, 580, 581
Nathan, 296
Patience (Carpenter), 296
Rachel W. (_____), 580
Rebeckah, 135
Thomas, 580
William E., 581
Zephaniah, 127
PEIRCE
Daniel, 413
Lucy (Bentley), 413
Mary, 413, 414
PENN
William, 166, 444
PENNSYLVANIA, 382
Philadelphia, 78, 270, 272, 577
Sergeant, 496
PHELPS
Patience (Williams), 490, 491
PHETEPLACE
Walter, 107
PHETTEPLACE
David, 485
Mercy, 483, 484, 485
Rachel, 476, 478, 479, 483, 493
Ruth (Phillips), 476, 483
Samuel, 476, 483
PHILIPS/PHILLIPS, 60
_____, 130
Amey, 93, 94, 95, 232, 233, 234
Barberry[6] (Arnold), 353, 354
Daniel, 240
Deborah, 263
George, 5
Gideon, 353
Hannah, 240
Isaac, 240
Mary, 405, 406, 407
Ruth, 476, 483
Sarah, 60, 61, 192, 194, 198, 201, 202
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 49, 128, 130
Zephaniah, 60
PLACE
Sarah, 210
PLUMMER
Mehitable (Evans), 41
Samuel, 41
POTTER
Amey, 577
Arnold, 356
Barbara, 355, 356
Elizabeth, 519
Lydia, 355, 356
Lydia[5] (Arnold), 49, 128, 129, 355, 356
Mary (Snell), 356
Pardon, 356
William, 355, 356
PRATT
Thomas, xi
PRAY
Catherine, 81, 96, 232, 301
Mary, 37
PREY
Richard, 14
PRICE, 129
PRIOR
Edmund, 221
PRUDENCE, 129
PUFFER
Jane, 77

RAFT
Huldah, 341
RANDALL
Abigail, 551, 552, 553
John, 551, 553
Mercy (Mowry), 551, 553
RAY
Lydia (Brown), 450
RAYMOND
Caleb, 207, 208
Edward T., 553
Lavina[4] (Arnold), 69, 207, 208
Lemuel, 207
Marcy, 191
Mercy[6] (Arnold), 553
Phebe, 208
Raymond, 208
Sarah (Hoskins), 207
Stephen, 207, 208
Thomas, 207
RAZEE
Aaron, 243
Asa, 243
Joseph III, 243
READ
Ahab, 257
Beriah, 213
Dinah (Jenks), 257, 258, 259
Oliver, 257
Patience, 257

Rebecca, 191
REECE
Ann F.[6] (Arnold), 555
Isaac, 555
REED
Abby Eliza[6] (Arnold), 555
Alanson, 536, 537
Horace, 555
John, 324, 325
Mercy[6] (Arnold), 535, 536, 537
Phebe (Arnold), 324, 325
REESE
Lydia (Hurlbut), 514
Reprisal, 163, 164, 177
Revolutionary War, *see* American Revolution
RHODE ISLAND, 4, 7, 12, 88, 99, 129, 132, 141, 163, 173, 197, 211, 253
Absolute Swamp, 17
Aquidneck Island, 260
Arnold's Hill, 172
Bellingham, 44
Blackplain, 83
Bristol, 380, 489
Burrillville, 118, 338, 339, 340
Chapachet, 404
Cranston, 205, 233, 356, 582, 584
Cumberland, 44, 45, 68, 82, 83, 100, 105, 113, 115, 116, 141, 168, 169, 170, 198, 199, 240, 242, 243, 246, 260, 261, 263, 265, 275, 276, 277, 282, 284, 288, 289, 297, 299, 303, 304, 311, 312, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 326, 327, 341, 357, 363, 377, 410, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 454, 455, 457, 458, 459, 462, 499
Cumberland Hill, 251
Dartmouth, 53
East Greenwich, 145, 345, 377, 393, 394
Foster, 355, 356, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 486, 489, 490, 491, 492
Glocester, 9, 25, 28, 39, 45, 63, 71, 82, 93, 94, 99, 104, 107, 113, 118, 119, 120, 124, 125, 128, 137, 140, 148, 149, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 186, 201, 217, 218, 219, 228, 229, 233, 235, 284, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 330, 332, 333, 336, 337, 338, 339, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 348, 349, 350, 351, 402, 403, 404, 411, 422, 423, 440, 464, 467, 470, 473, 474, 476, 477, 480, 481, 483, 486, 488, 492, 495, 497
Granville, 493
Greenwich, 44, 48, 53, 55, 57
India Point, 585
Johnston, 51, 52, 143, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 242, 411, 422, 423, 424, 425, 428, 429, 430, 431, 433, 434, 488
Lincoln, 32, 70, 395, 397, 548, 550, 553
Narragansett, 48, 57, 65, 98, 102, 104, 107, 109, 538
Naspatuckett, 41
New Shoreham, 452
Newport, 7, 15, 21, 29, 31, 65, 74, 79, 114, 155, 156, 260, 279, 311, 322, 371, 380, 422, 501, 542, 555, 559
Nonplus Hill, 17
North Hillsdale, 307
North Kingstown, 205, 580, 581
North Providence, 154, 182, 203, 280, 375, 376, 378, 391, 392, 396, 433, 435, 505, 506, 507, 510, 538, 539, 542, 544, 551
North Smithfield, 238, 258
Pawtucket, 29, 390, 391, 505, 508, 510
Pawtucket Falls, 538, 539
Pawtuxet, 247
Portsmouth, 15, 20, 29, 31, 65, 306, 399, 401, 450
Sayles Hill, 161
Saylesville, 32, 161
Scituate, 165, 166, 183, 356, 368, 369, 423, 441, 442, 467, 470, 471, 488, 489
Scott's Pond, 361
South Kingstown, 112, 334
South Providence, 585
Tiverton, 457, 525
Union Village, 254
Upper Smithfield, 251
Wainesocatt Hill, 17
Wansocket Falls, 83
Wansocket Hole, 83
Wansoket Falls, 99
Wansokutt Hill, 25
Warren, 389
Warwick, 14, 57, 170, 352, 355, 356, 377, 489, 501, 538
West Providence, 183
Westquadomset Hill, 161
White Oak Island, 83
Woonsocket, 15, 19, 28, 43, 44, 86, 91, 113, 226, 252, 254, 295, 313, 329
Woonsocket Crossroads, 74

Woonsocket Falls, 44, 45, 99, 113, 323, 326, 327, 329
Woonsocket Hill, 73, 77, 85, 93
World's End, 28, 31
RHODES
Joseph, 496
Lydia[6] (Arnold), 495, 496
RICHARDSON
E., x, xv
Hannah, 462
Ira, 571
Isaac, 105, 293
Jonathan Jr., 195
Joseph, 293
Timothy, 315
RIK, 138
ROBERTS
Dutee, 259
Gary Boyd, xvii
Sally[6] (Arnold), 258, 259
Sally[7] (Arnold), 259
ROBINSON
Daniel, 555
Ursula Matilda[6] (Arnold), 554, 555
ROGERS
Timothy, 513
ROLEN
Grace, 435
ROOD
A. H., 486
ROUNDS
Reuben, 480
RUNDALL
Stephen, 166
RUSEL
William, 128
RUSSELL
Elizabeth (Wilbar), 212
Hannah (Brayton), 336
Joanna (Jenks), 544
Mary, 336
Meribah, 212
Stephen, 336
William, 212

Sallie, 541
Sally, 385
SAM INDIAN, 16
SANFORD
Hannah, 513
Mary, 399
Mehitable, 332
SARGENT
Margaret, 420, 421
Mary (Washburn), 420
Samuel, 420
SARLE
Dorcas, 582, 583, 584
Joseph, 582, 583
Rhobe, 583
Robe (Budlong), 582
SAVAGE
James, x
SAYLES
_____, 281
Alice (Smith) (Arnold), 157, 158, 204
Daniel, 147
Elizabeth (Comstock), 26, 27
Esek, 280, 281
Esther, 281
Esther (Sayles), 279
Hannah, 281
Ishmale, 281
John, 73, 279, 280, 281
John Jr., 280, 282
Martha, 281
Martha[5] (Arnold), 100, 279, 280, 281
Patience (Ballou), 159, 160
Rhoda, 281
Richard, 233
Capt. Richard, 158
Ruth, 147
Susanna (Ballou) (Inman), 158
Susannah (Jillson), 147
Thomas, 99, 100, 279, 281
Zerviah, 275
Zilpha, 281
SCHOUTEN
Dirick, 246
SCOTT
Esther, 279
John, 15
Lydia, 169
Lydia[6] (Arnold), 448
Mary, 260
Nathaniel, 448
SHAW
Henry, 555
Sabra[6] (Arnold), 555
SHERLOCK
Charles, 23
Rebecca (Thayer), 23

SHERMAN
Anna Clough, 175
Hannah, 511
Sampson, 65
Sarah (Thomas), 65
SHIPPEE, 433
Charity, 433, 434
Keziah, 211
Mary (_____), 210
Mary (White), 210
Nathan, 210, 211
Sarah[4] (Arnold), 69, 210, 211
Sarah (Place), 210
Thomas, 210
SHORT
_____, xii
SHROVE
Lydia (Buffum), 250
SIBLEY
Thankful, 342
SIPPERLY
Lorene, 415, 416
SMITH, 56
Abigail, 131, 132, 133, 134, 375, 377, 385, 388, 389, 393, 488, 541, 542, 543
Alice, 157, 158, 204
Amie (Brown), 161, 162
Amy, 137, 138, 139, 395, 397, 399, 402, 405, 408, 409
Anphillis (Angell), 53
Capt. Arnold, 351
Benjamin, 25, 28, 31, 131, 550
Charles, 296
Charles Philip, 296
Capt. Coomer, 488
Daniel, 53, 54, 571
Deborah, 34
Deborah[4] (Arnold), 56
Dorothy, 411
Edward, 48, 53, 137
Eleanor, 31, 35, 53, 55, 56, 57, 60, 62, 65, 67, 70
Elias, 159
Elisha, 38
Elizabeth, 63, 64, 393, 405, 407
Elizabeth (_____), 31, 32
Elizabeth[3] (Arnold) (Hawkins), 34, 35, 55, 62, 63, 64
Elizabeth (Peck), 296, 298
George, 189, 245, 550
Hannah, 54
Israel, 62, 63, 64
John, 14, 31, 32, 53, 54, 393
Jonathan, 53
Joseph, 62, 63, 157, 158
Joseph Jr., 33
Lydia (____), 62
Lydia (Gardiner), 157
Martha, 63
Mary, 53, 54, 351
Mary (_____), 159, 550
Mercy (Angell), 131
Mercy[5] (Arnold), 189, 190, 191, 548, 550
Mercy (Mowry), 137
Naomi, 63, 64
Patience, 257
Phebe, 53, 54, 112, 303, 311
Phebe[3] (Arnold), 34, 35, 53, 54
Phebe (Smith), 53, 54
Rachel, 242, 243
Rowena (Comstock), 245
Ruth, 53, 54
Sarah, 14, 18, 550
Stephen, 63, 64
Susanna, 245
Thomas, 33, 53, 54, 55, 57, 242
Waity, 533, 534, 535, 536
Willard, 245
Zadoc, 245
SMYTON
Susan, 1
SNELL
Mary, 356
SNOW
Rev. Mr., 339
SOUTH CAROLINA
Charleston, 459, 542, 552
SOUTHMAYD
John, 520
SOUTHWICK
Dorcas (_____), 348
Elizabeth, 360
Enoch, 346
Lawrence Jr., 348
Sarah, 121, 348, 349, 350, 351
Waity (Arnold), 344, 346, 347
SPAIN, 163, 380, 542
Bilbao, 542
SPALDING
Sarah, 462
SPENCER, 255
Amey, 580

Elizabeth (Burlingame) (Arnold), 48, 49, 50, 138
Gen. Joseph, 279, 501
William, 49
SPRAGUE
Jonathan, 18, 25
Margaret, 470
SPREAGUES
Jonathan, 67
STAFFORD
Amos, 57, 169, 170
Hannah (Bennett), 352
Mary (Burlingame), 57
Mercy/Mary, 57, 58, 59, 163, 165, 168, 172, 177, 181, 183, 184, 186, 188
Patience, 352, 354
Samuel, 352
STAPLES
Mary, 91, 92
Rose, 91
Samuel, 91
STARK
Gen. John, 515
STATFORD
Amos, 168
STEER
Anne, 26
STEERE
Anna, 440
Arnold, 224
Daughter, 440
David, 440
Dinah, 37
Elisha, 42, 440
Elmira, 224
Franklin, 224
George William, 224
Hannah (Wickenden), 41
Jemima, 224
John, 41
Julian, 224
Katherine (Comstock), 440
Lydia, 224
Lydia[6] (Arnold), 224
Mary, 42, 151, 425, 426, 427
Mary[3] (Arnold), 19, 41, 42
Mary[5] (Arnold), 167, 440
Mehitable (Evans) (Plummer), 41
Naomi, 485
Nathan, 440
Phebe, 42
Phebe (Wright), 425
Rachel, 440
Reuben, 425, 426
Richard, 42, 224, 292, 423
Samuel, 41
Thomas, 37, 41, 42, 440
STEERER
Mary (Brown), 404
STEVENS
Enos, 269
STICKNEY
Eliphalet, 520
STONE
Lydia[6] (Arnold), 474, 475
William, 474
STREETER
Abigail, 357
SULLIVAN
Gen. John, 371, 473, 483, 501
SWEDEN, 542
Gothenburg, 380
SWEET
Richard, 425
SWEETLAND
Arnold, 458
Bowen, 458
Charles, 458
Cynthia (Brown), 450
Deborah, 458
John Jr., 454, 457
Lucetta, 458
Lydia, 454, 455, 457
Lydia (Day), 454, 457
Oliver, 450
Phile, 458
Sarah, 458
Sarah[5] (Arnold), 169, 170, 454, 457, 458
William, 454, 457, 458

TAFT
Aaron, 330, 331, 342
Arnold, 331
Elizabeth (Cheney), 341
Elizabeth (Emerson), 330
Gershom, 342
Henry, 342
Lieut. Joseph, 330
Marcy[5] (Arnold), 120, 330, 331
Mary[5] (Arnold), 121, 341, 342, 350
Parn, 330, 331

TAFT *cont.*
Patience, 330, 331
Peter, 341, 342, 344, 350
Rhoda, 331
Thaddeus, 330, 331
Willis, 330, 331
Zadock, 330, 331
TALLMAN
William Jr., 459
TEEL
Anstis, 436
Benjamin Gustavus, 153, 435, 436
Betsey[5] (Arnold), 153, 154, 435, 436
Nathan Rolen, 435, 436
TELL
Caleb, 435
Grace (Rolen), 435
TENNESSEE, 386
THAYER
Josiah, 22, 23
Nancy, 341
Rebecca, 23
THELE
Nicholas, 5
THOMAS
Abigail, 65, 66
Abraham, 65, 66
Arnold, 65, 66
Benjamin, 65
George, 65
Mary, 65, 66
Mary[3] (Arnold), 34, 35, 65
Richard, 65
Sarah, 65
THORNTON
Anstis, 152, 153, 154, 242, 431, 433, 435, 437
Daniel, 152, 153
Dinah, 37, 39, 96
Dinah (Steere), 37
Ebenezer, 53
John, 37
Ruth (Smith), 53, 54
Susanna (Pearce), 152, 153
THURBER
Patience (Wilkinson), 89, 90
Samuel, 270
William, 89, 90
TINLEY
Sarah, 501
TOBY, 18
TOM INDIAN, 16
TOPHAM
Col. John, 486, 507
TORRY
Mary (Jillson), 275
TORTOLA, 164
TROOP
Charlotte/Abby, 541, 542, 543
TRUESDALE
Hannah (Collin), 310
TRUMBULL
Jonathan, 380
TRYON
William, 309
TUCKER
Benjamin, 201
John, 201
Joseph, 201
Loami, 201
Lydia, 201
Mary, 201
Mary[4] (Arnold), 61, 201
Samuel, 201
TURNER
Elijah, 111
Esther (Andrews), 111
Sally, 268
TURPIN
Benjamin, 142
Catharine, 142
Catharine (Jenckes), 140
Elizabeth, 50, 142
John, xvii, 137, 140, 141, 142
Joseph, 140
Sarah, 142
Sarah[4] (Arnold), xvii, 49, 50, 131, 137, 140, 141, 142
William, 140, 141

UPTON
Samuel, 307

VARNUM
Col. James M., 507
VERMONT, 268, 355, 382
Addison, 409
Barnet, 269
Danby, 186, 217, 218, 219, 323, 324, 511, 512, 519, 523, 525
Ferrisburgh, 513, 514
Hinesburgh, 513, 514

Leicester, 420
Middleburg, 513
Middleton, 218
Putney, 420
St. Johnsbury, xv, 268, 269, 272, 273
Wallingford, 324
VIRGIN ISLANDS, 164
VIRGINIA, 2, 541

WADE
Nathaniel, 473
WAL
Deborah (Hawkins), 63
WALCOTT
Halsey, 455
Lewis, 455
Lucy[6] (Arnold), 455
WALKER
Alden, 528, 529
Alma, 528, 529
Charles, 527, 528
Charles Jr., 527, 528
Charles Sr., 187
David, 529
Elisha, 528
George, 529
Lucy, 471
Lucy[5] (Arnold) (Colwell), 175, 470, 471, 472
Lydia, 528
Mary, 529
Mercy[5] (Arnold), 187, 527, 528
Ora A., 528
Philip, 470, 471
Ruth, 529
Smith, 528
Sophia, 486
WALL
Caleb, 226, 228, 229
Daniel, 229
Patience, 229
Patience[5] (Arnold), 74, 76, 228, 229
Phebe, 229
Thomas, 228, 229
WALTON
_____, xii
Elizabeth, xii
Hannah, xii
Margaret (Arnold), xii, xiii
Mary, xii
Susan, xii
William, xii
WANTON
Mary, 544
War of 1812, 247, 583
WARDWELL
Susannah, 451
WARE
Michael, 315
WARNER
Phebe, 371
WARREN
John, 6
WASHBURN
Mary, 420
WASHINGTON
Gen. George, 480
WATERMAN
Dorcas, 213
Capt. Elisha, 452
Nathaniel Jr., 107
Sabra, 428
Susan, 544
WATERS
Henry, x
WEBB
Rev. Nathan, 332
WEEDEN
Susan J., 191
WELCH
Peter, 306
WEST
Mrs. Squire, 269
WEST INDIES, 468, 486, 543
WESTCOTT
Barbara, 497, 498
Damaris, 368
Mercy, 144, 413
WHEATON
Calom, 572
David, 572
Mary, 70, 78
WHEELER
Dan B., 552
WHIPPLE
Alice, 118
David, 198, 199
Eleazer, 98
Elizabeth (_____), 290
Ellen/Elenor, 293, 295
Hannah, 99, 100, 101, 255, 275, 277, 279, 286
Hopestill, 449
Job, 99

WHIPPLE *cont.*
Joseph, 18, 22, 25
Lydia, 198, 199, 200
Martha, 199
Martha (_____), 198
Mercy/Mary, 290, 292
Patty (Capron), 261, 262
Phebe, 159
Samuel, 199
Sarah, 163, 246
Stephen, 159
Capt. Stephen, 255
Susanna, 375
Waitstill, 459
WHITE
Hannah, 239
Hannah (Aldrich), 240
Mary, 210
WHITING
Col., 284
Mary, 78, 81, 215
WHITMAN
Susannah, 104, 159
WHITNEY
John, 6
WICKENDEN
Hannah, 41
WIGHT
Mary Ann[6] (Arnold), 517
Samuel C., 517
WILBAR
Elizabeth, 212
WILBOR
Deborah, 525
WILKINSON
Anne (Arnold) (Arnold), 106, 172, 173, 174, 176, 495, 497
Benjamin, 174
Betsey, 90
Daniel, 90
David, 73, 85, 88, 89, 90
Hannah, 34
Huldah (Aldrich), 88
Ichabod, 90
Israel, 75
John, 168, 202
Josiah, 34
Martha, 202, 203
Mary, 89
Mary[4] (Arnold), 39, 73, 85, 88, 89
Nancy, 90
Patience, 73, 74, 75, 85, 87, 88, 90, 215, 217, 219, 220, 223, 225, 228, 230
Rebecca, 168
Ruth, 73, 85, 86, 87, 88, 264, 265
Ruth (Angell), 202
Samuel, 89
Samuel Jr., 33, 73, 85, 88
Sarah, 89, 168, 170, 447, 449, 451
Susannah, 89
Thomas, 22
William, 89
WILLCOX
Mary (Thomas), 65, 66
Stephen, 65
WILLIAM
William, 290
WILLIAMS
Abigail (Smith), 488
Ann, 437
Benoni, 488, 489, 491
Caleb, 437, 490, 491
Daniel, 488
Diana, 490, 491
Ephraim, 488, 489, 490, 491
Joseph, 488
Patience, 490, 491
Patience[5] (Arnold), 176, 488, 489, 490, 491
Phila, 490
Philadelphia, 230, 231
Philadelphia[5] (Arnold), 74, 75, 76, 230, 231
Philey (Colvin), 488
Robert, 488
Roger, 7, 15, 21, 29, 31, 488
Thomas, 228, 230, 231
WINCOLL
Thomas, 5
WINSOR
Phebe (Brown), 404
WINTERS
Judge, 520
WISCONSIN
Lake Geneva, 570
WITMARTH
Emily Beulah[6] (Arnold), 517
Joseph, 517
WOLCOTT
William A., 455
WOOD
Alice, xii, xiii
Arnold, 563

George, 563
John, 562, 563
John W., 562
Mary Ann[6] (Arnold), 555
Olive C.[6] (Arnold), 559, 560
Phebe[5] (Arnold), 193, 562, 563
Rachel, 562
William C., 559
William W., 559, 560
WOODWARD
Daniel, 360
Joseph, 37, 73, 85
Mary, 37, 39, 73, 77, 81, 85, 88, 91
Mary (Pray), 37
WORDEN
Benjamin, 306, 307
WREN
Matthew, Bishop of Norwich, 2
WRIGHT
Ann, xii
Benedict, xii
Edwarad, xi, xii
Joane (Arnold), xi, xii, xiii
Katheryn, xii
Olney, 411
Phebe, 425

YACKLEY
Josiah L., 418, 419
Mary[6] (Arnold), 418, 419
YOUNG
Hugh, 451
Mary, 451
Mary (Doyle), 451
Reuben, 557
Sabra (Dexter), 557

UNKNOWN SURNAME
_____, 143, 288, 585
Amy, 94, 232
Ann, 24, 161
Caleb, 231
Chloe, 574, 575
Dorcas, 348
Elizabeth, 11, 31, 32, 204, 275, 284, 290, 313, 422
Freelove, 59, 67, 68, 69, 204, 207, 209, 210, 212, 213
Hannah, 28, 30, 51, 112, 305, 306, 307, 308, 409
Huldah, 98
Lydia, 62, 495
Martha, 198
Mary, 41, 48, 145, 159, 210, 265, 389, 418, 419, 454, 550, 582
Philadelphia, 231
Rachel W., 580
Rebecca, 148
Sarah, 60, 61, 192, 194, 198, 201, 202, 428, 430

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Richard H. Benson is a retired partner of Arthur Anderson & Co. He has pursued genealogical research since the age of twelve. He has been active as a trustee, former treasurer, and council member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society. He is also a member of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, the National Genealogical Society, and the Society of Genealogists.

Benson is the author of *The Nash Family of Wemouth, Massachusetts, The Barent Jacobsen Cool Family, The Benson Family of Colonial Massachusetts, The Reed Family of Sheridan, New York, and The Civil War Diaries of Charles E. Benson.* His current project is *The Nicholas Wade Family.*